



NSW POLICE FORCE

P190B

Version 4.2 (07/05)

STATEMENT OF POLICE

In the matter of:	Death of Scott Johnson
Place:	State Crime Command, Parramatta
Date:	20 November 2013

Name:	Pamela Young	Tel. No:	██████████
Rank:	Detective Chief Inspector		
Station/Unit:	Homicide Squad – Unsolved Homicide Team		

STATES:

1. This statement made by me accurately sets out the evidence that I would be prepared, if necessary, to give in court as a witness. The statement is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in evidence, I will be liable to prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it anything that I know to be false or do not believe to be true.
2. I am 49 years of age.
3. I am the investigation supervisor for New South Wales Police Force (NSWPF) Strike Force Macnamir which re-investigated the death of Mr Scott Russell Johnson, born on 27 November 1961, whose body was found at North Head, Manly, on 10 December 1988.
4. **Overview**
5. About 11am on 10 December 1988 Manly Police responded to a report that a body had been found by fishermen on rocks at the base of North Head. Police located the naked and deceased body of a male who was later formally visually identified as Mr Scott Russell Johnson (Scott), 27 years old.
6. A search of the area on the cliff top adjacent to the location of the body located personal items, including folded clothes, and identification in his name at the tree

Witness: _____

Signature: _____

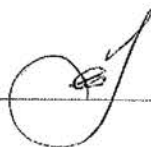
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

line and approximately ten (10) metres back from the edge of the cliff. The elevation in that area is approximately sixty (60) metres.

7. Scott was an American citizen in Australia on a student visa undertaking a Doctorate of Philosophy in the field of mathematics at the Australian National University in Canberra and the Macquarie University in Sydney.
8. He was a homosexual and he was located in the vicinity of what police now know to be a gay beat. He had been in a homosexual relationship with [REDACTED] [REDACTED] ([REDACTED]) for approximately five years. His living arrangements were primarily in Canberra with his partner, [REDACTED]. When he was studying in Sydney he would live at Lane Cove in the parental home of [REDACTED].
9. Scott's parents are both now deceased and his siblings reside in the United States of America (USA) being, his oldest sister, Terry, then older brother, Stephen (Mr Johnson), and younger step-siblings; sister, Rebecca (Ms Johnson), and brother, Sloane.
10. **Context of the Current Reinvestigation**
11. **First Inquest 1989**
12. The original investigation was conducted by Manly Police. It was commenced by Constable Troy Hardie and continued by Detective Sergeant Doreen Cruickshank who compiled the coronial brief of evidence.
13. On 16 March 1989 an inquest into the death of Scott was held before Deputy State Coroner Derrick Hand. Appearing before the Coroner were a Sergeant Redfern, assisting the Coroner, and separate legal counsel for both Mr Johnson (a Mr King) and [REDACTED] (Mr Marion).
14. The 1989 inquest considered statements, court evidence and documents provided by; Detective Sergeant Cruickshank, Constable Troy Hardie, Constable Sylvia Roux, Constable Robert Ludlow, Crime Scene Officer Senior Constable Philip Flogel, [REDACTED] (who located the body), [REDACTED] (from Macquarie University), [REDACTED], [REDACTED].

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

and the last known person to see Scott alive), [REDACTED] (the last known person to speak with Scott), Mr Bret Carruthers (an official with the Public Trustee), and Forensic Pathologist Doctor Johan Duflou. Also available to the inquest were a toxicology certificate, life pronounced extinct certificate, and photographs of the scene taken by Senior Constable Fogel.

15. I PRODUCE A COPY OF THAT 1989 BRIEF OF EVIDENCE AND CORONIAL FILE.

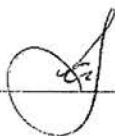
16. A statement by Mr Johnson dated 1 January 1989 was also admitted into evidence and appears in summary later in this statement along with other documents under the heading '*Suspicious held by the Johnson Family*'. At the conclusion of Inquest evidence the Coroner inquired of counsel representing Mr Johnson if he wished to call his client, which he did not.

17. I PRODUCE A COPY OF THAT STATEMENT

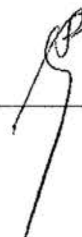
18. The hearing of evidence was closed and the Coroner read his findings and reasons to the court. The inquest transcription records that, in the Coroners' view, no other persons were involved in the death of Scott. In forming that view, matters considered by the Coroner were: the absence of evidence of a struggle; the absence of evidence that others' were present; the absence of damage to Scott's clothing; the fact that Scott's clothing was neatly placed together and that Scott was found naked under that part of the cliff; an absence of broader evidence implicating another person in the death.

19. The inquest transcription records the following words of the Coroners, "*There is no evidence implicating anybody at all in the death of the deceased, and there is no real evidence as to why the deceased would take his own life except this...*" The Coroner then deliberates upon: an earlier attempted suicide based on an unfounded fear of HIV/AIDS; that suicides occur frequently without any apparent reason being identified by friends and family; that the majority of suicide victims do not leave notes; that an inclination towards suicide may be drawn from descriptions of Scott as mathematically brilliant, reserved, introverted, not incline

Witness:



Signature:



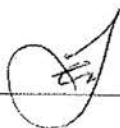
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

to engage in conversation, unable to make friends easily, and averse to speaking about feelings even with his closest relations.

20. The Coroner acknowledges that Scott's family would naturally find a suggestion of suicide upsetting and unsatisfactory but that no other conclusion was able to be drawn on the material before him. He described the investigation as full and proper.
21. The Coroner found - *"The deceased, between the 8th and 10th day of December 1988, at North Head, Manly, north of Blue Fish Point in the State of New South Wales died of the effects of multiple injuries sustained then and there when he jumped from the top to the rocks below with the intention of taking his own life"*.
22. I PRODUCE COPIES OF THOSE FINDINGS AND TRANSCRIPTIONS
23. The family of Scott found the investigation and coronial findings unsatisfactory. The family commenced private inquiries led by Mr Daniel Glick (Mr Glick), an American investigative journalist.
24. Review of Original Investigation by Manly Police 2006
25. In March 2006 in response to correspondence and meeting with the Johnson family, Manly Police, by way of Detective Senior Constable Richard Doherty, reviewed the 1989 coronial brief and inquest transcription. No new lines of inquiry were identified.
26. I PRODUCE THE RELATED COPS CASE
27. Review by the Homicide Squad - Unsolved Homicide Team 2007
28. After petitioning by the Johnson family of State Coroner Jerram (correspondence referred to later in *'Suspicious Held by the Johnson Family'*) the matter was referred to Deputy State Coroner Milledge who, in 2003, had presided over the suspected gay-hate deaths of Mr Russell and Mr Warren in the eastern beaches in 1989. Coroner Milledge wrote to the Unsolved Homicide Team and requested a review-by-exception be conducted of Scott's death. A review was carried out and relied upon the original investigation material, a number of cases of gay-hate

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

violence in the 1980's (including those by Strike Force Taradale and referred to later in this statement), and information and suspicions expressed by the Johnson family. The review did not include active investigations. That review concluded, inter alia, that 'there is no evidence to support anything other than suicide'. The review was reduced to writing in a Case Screening Form.

29. Later the Case Screening Form become part of the brief of evidence provided to the Coroner by Manly Police for the second inquest in 2012. For completeness I include here that it appears the Johnson family gained access to an un-redacted copy of that form at the time of the second inquest in 2012. The Johnson family have objected to the content of that form in part or whole and an excerpt of it has recently been shown by Mr Johnson on American television.

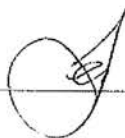
30. I PRODUCE THE UNSOLVED HOMICIDE TEAM CASE SCREENING FORM

31. Investigations by Strike Force Clutha by Manly Police 2011

32. In 2011 Detective Senior Constable Timothy Wilson of Manly Police conducted investigations via Strike Force Clutha of (i) an alleged confession about murdering Scott that was identified via the social media site 'Facebook', and (ii) five matters identified in correspondence sent to police by the Johnson family. The result of inquiries was reported by Detective Wilson to Coroner Carmel Forbes in 2012. The investigation of the alleged confession on 'Facebook' led Coroner Forbes to dismiss the confession as false. Details of this appear later in this statement.

33. The additional five issues reported by police to Coroner Forbes are summarised as: Was Scott the victim of a gay-hate crime like that of Mr Ross Warren and Mr John Russell at Bondi?; Was there a climate of anti-gay sentiment on the northern beaches that led to a culture of anti-gay violence and if so who committed this violence?; Was the area of North Head where Scott was found a gay beat and/or a place used to sunbake naked?; What was Scott's state of mind?; Is there new information that disputes the original brief or the 2007 Unsolved Homicide Squad review?

Witness:



Signature:

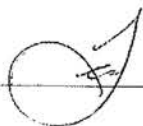


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

34. All of the information provided by Manly Police to the Coroner on each of these five propositions was limited to what was provided to them by the Johnson family. All of the information is in support of each proposition. Detective Wilson provided a written report of these matters.
35. In relation to the last of the five propositions, there is an entry by police in the 2012 brief that may be misleading as to [REDACTED]'s position relative to his report to police of a prior suicide attempt by Scott. That entry is on page 16 and records, [REDACTED] *in recent times has isolated himself from assisting the family with their enquiries. Due to time constraints [REDACTED], who now resides in the United States, was not contacted. It is believed that if pressed on the alleged suicide attempt reported by him, [REDACTED] may recount his version differently to that which was subject to inquest and review*. This notation should not be interpreted as meaning that [REDACTED] may rescind the report, as that is not the case.
36. The holdings of Manly Police and the material provided to them by the Johnson family are incorporated into this reinvestigation.
37. I PRODUCE THE STRIKE FORCE CLUTHA REPORT
38. Second Inquest 2012
39. A second inquest by way of written submissions was held on 26 July 2012. On that day Deputy State Coroner Carmel Forbes made an open finding saying -
40. *"I find that Scott Russell Johnson died between the 8th and 10th of December 1988 at North Head Manly, north of Blue Fish Point, from the effects of multiple injuries he sustained as a result of falling from a cliff. The evidence does not allow me to make a finding as to how he fell"*.
41. Coroner Forbes's reason for her findings encapsulate many issues central to this ongoing case and are reproduced here in part -
42. *"...At the inquest in 1989 a finding was also made that Mr Johnson jumped from the cliff at North Head with the intention of taking his own life. This finding of suicide was made because there was no evidence of a struggle at the top of the*

Witness:



Signature:



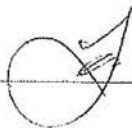
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

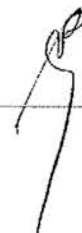
cliff, no evidence of anyone else being present, no injuries found at autopsy other than those that could be explained by the fall, Mr Johnson's clothes, watch, cash card, student travel pass, money, pen, comb and key were neatly placed together some 10 metres back from the edge of the cliff. Mr Johnson was found at the bottom of the cliff undressed and there was evidence that Mr Johnson had previously attempted suicide."

43. *"Since that inquest further information has come to light about a culture of violence against the gay community in Sydney in the late 1980's. In 2005 a police operation named 'Taradale' uncovered that the deaths of three homosexual men in Bondi in 1989 were as a result of them being forced to their deaths from cliffs at a 'gay beat.'"*
44. *"Mr Johnson was homosexual. It is now known that the North Head of Manly near Blue Fish Point where Mr Johnson's body was found was a 'gay beat'."*
45. *"As a result of further information it was considered appropriate to re-open the Coroner's file and further investigate Mr Johnson's death. That investigation has not taken the case any further. The information about the deaths in Bondi has, however, sown a seed of doubt as to the positive finding of suicide. Suicide cannot be presumed and there must be 'clear, cogent, and exact' evidence to support such a finding [Briganshaw v Briganshaw (1938) 60 CLR 336]. Mr Johnson did not leave a suicide note, the evidence that he had previously attempted suicide is uncorroborated, there is evidence that he was in a happy relationship and certainly he had just received positive news about finalising his doctorate in mathematics."*
46. *"In this case, the possibility that Mr Johnson was the victim of a 'gay hate' crime similar to those that occurred in Bondi or that he fell are also available explanations to the circumstances that surrounded his death."*
47. *"Accordingly, I find that the evidence adduced in Mr Johnson's death does not enable me to make a finding as to how he fell off the cliff and I make an open*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

finding and refer his file to 'Cold Cases' for further investigation in accordance with police procedures and protocols".

48. I PRODUCE A COPY OF THE 2012 INQUEST FINDINGS

49. Referral to the Homicide Squad - Unsolved Homicide Team 2012

50. The NSW Police Homicide Squad - Unsolved Homicide Team, has protocols to manage and prioritise over 700 cases of murder, suspicious deaths and suspicious disappearances which have been referred by a Coroner or identified since the 1970's. The protocols exist to balance the equity of all deceased persons and the likely solvability of the case. When applied to the death of Scott, the re-investigation was deferred in preference to other cases. The Johnson family were dissatisfied with this decision.

51. On 20 November 2012, the Unsolved Homicide Team did however apply for a \$100,000 government reward for information concerning the death of Scott.

52. I PRODUCE THE GOVERNMENT REWARD NOTICE

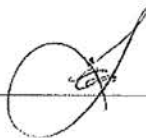
53. Reinvestigation by the Homicide Squad - Unsolved Homicide Team 2013

54. Early in 2013 the Johnson family informed police of a pending broadcast of their concerns via ABC television *Australian Story*. That program appeared on 11 February 2013.

55. On 12 February 2013 the office of the Police and Emergency Services Minister contacted Detective Superintendent Michael Willing, the Commander of the Homicide Squad. Commander Willing was informed that the Minister had agreed to meet with the Johnson family later that day and Commander Willing was asked to provide the position of the Homicide Squad in the matter. A decision was made based on that call to have the Unsolved Homicide Team commence a re-investigation and Strike Force *Macnamir* was formed for this purpose.

56. Strike Force Macnamir is a reinvestigation of the death and related prior inquiries as a whole, inclusive of suspicions held by the Johnson family. Matters relied upon can be categorised as Victimology, scene assessment, events linked by

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

location or type, historic passive data searches, interviews and strategic operations.

57. The material relied upon is presented in this statement in complete or summary form to assist proceedings. Where a person has provided more than one statement, for instance one to the original investigation and one to the current investigation, then those statements are presented in sequence. The identification of individuals and issues of public interest immunity as appear in this statement and brief of evidence will require legal protection prior to the provision of any material to an interested party.

58. Finding the Body

59. [REDACTED], an Army Sergeant from the North Head Barracks, provided a written statement to police on 10 December 1988 in which he states that about 11am on Saturday 10 December 1988 he was in the company of a friend, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]'s son, [REDACTED]. They walked in a south south-east direction along the water edge of North Head with the intention of spear fishing off Blue Fish Point. About 200 metres north of Blue Fish Point [REDACTED] said, "Look, there's a dead person". [REDACTED] was close enough to see that the person was naked, deceased, and that fragments of the body had been scattered. [REDACTED] stayed with the body and did not touch anything while [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] went to get the police

60. [REDACTED] believes that the police arrived about thirty minutes later and, as he was more familiar with the area due to residing and walking his dog there, it was he who showed the police to the cliff top area directly above the body. In that area he saw clothing, shoes and a pen. He and the police did not touch anything so that the crime scene officer could examine it. He and the police looked in the area for a note or other items that may have blown away in a storm which had occurred on the previous night. Nothing was found. He saw a police helicopter arrive and then headed home about 1pm.

61. A map of North Head accompanies his statement.

Witness:



Signature:

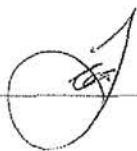


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

62. [REDACTED] is overseas sailing and contact between him and the strike force has been via email. In two emails with [REDACTED] in 2013, he recalls the following matters. He remembers walking on the Manly foreshore with his wife on the previous evening (Friday 9 December 1988) and getting caught in a storm with heavy rain and westerly wind. The next day when he and the police observed the clothes he found them to be stacked "meticulously" and arranged with a pen on the top. On viewing the position of the pen he remembers thinking that a note written by Scott may have been blown out to sea in the westerly winds that accompanied the storm. [REDACTED] was unaware that the area of North Head was a gay beat until he was told by a private inquiry agent employed by the Johnson family. After [REDACTED] and his son had returned to North Head with the police, they stayed with uniformed police and the body while he showed other police to the cliff-top area; he made his statement immediately after leaving the police at North Head.
63. In his statement to the Johnson family private inquiry agent (Mr John Macnamara and referred to later), [REDACTED] includes that he thought the police were thorough.
64. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT AND EMAILS.
65. [REDACTED] provided his first written statement to police on 22 October 2013. He states that on Saturday 10 December 1988, he was in the company of his son, [REDACTED], and his supervisor from the School of Artillery, North Head, [REDACTED]. As they walked on cliff-side rocks towards Blue Fish Point of North Head with the intention of spear-fishing together, his attention was drawn to a naked human body on a flat rock. He remembers seeing the back and shoulders of the body and describes its overall appearance as "disjointed". He remembers concluding that the body had come from the top of the cliff, as opposed to coming from the water, as the position of the body was a distance from the water's edge. He remembers feeling shocked at what he saw.
66. [REDACTED] remained with the body whilst [REDACTED] and his son walked back to their car and drove to Manly Police Station. He is unable to suggest how long it

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

was before he and the police returned to North Head. This was the first and last occasion that [REDACTED] has been to the Blue Fish Point area of North Head. He was unable to recollect any details about clothing or other items found at the top of the cliff or the actions of himself or the police.

67. [REDACTED] could not recall who suggested going spear fishing at North Head, and assumes that it was [REDACTED] as he was living in the Army Quarters at North Head. He cannot remember how he got to North Head and assumes he drove his car to the Shelly Beach car park and walked around the base of the headland. He remembers it was his son [REDACTED] who alerted them to the body.
68. He remembers it being very hot. He remembers walking back to where his car was parked to go to the police and feeling exhausted. He stated he has never worn a watch and could not recall how long it took or what the time was when they discovered the body.
69. He could not find a parking spot at the front or near the Police Station, so he sent his son [REDACTED] into the Police Station and double parked. He recalls going into the Police Station as it was taking some time and he spoke to a police officer about the location of the body. [REDACTED] remembers driving back to the area where he parked the car originally but cannot recall taking the police to the location of the body. He cannot recall ever giving police a statement or detailed notes being taken from him about the discovery of the body. [REDACTED] could not recall or describe in detail the area where the body was. He stated the body appeared to be face down on an angle on a flat rock with a disjointed arm behind and a shoulder popped out. The body was naked. [REDACTED] was not aware that there was a gay beat at North Head.
70. His statement appears in the Official Notebook of Detective Sergeant Penelope Brown No: F487763 pages 14 to 26 inclusive.
71. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
72. [REDACTED] provided a written statement on 16 October 2013. He states in 1988 he was in Year 7 at high school. After walking south for about forty

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

minutes along the coastline from Fairy Bower with his father, [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] that he saw a naked human body and told the others. He saw that a part of the skull and other body parts were detached and describes dried, brown blood. He described leaving with his father to get the police. Back at the scene with the police he thinks he recalls a conversation about the wind possibly blowing a note away from the deceased's property. He describes his memory of this as being good due to this being the first dead body that he had seen. Also being the son of a soldier and a nurse helped him not to worry about what he had seen. He made a drawing of the scene with his statement.

73. He could see the back of the body and a large flap of skin where the stomach had opened up. He could also see that the limbs were contorted and what could have been dried blood on his head. There was a large hole in the head. The skin was not motley or decomposed. He went into the police station as his father was parking the car. He told the Manly police about the dead body and at first they did not believe him until his father spoke to them. The police then followed them back to the body.

74. The statement including a drawing appears in the Official Notebook of Detective Sergeant Penelope Brown F487763 pages 5 to 13 inclusive.

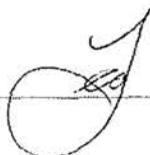
75. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

76. **The Post Mortem**

77. Doctor Johan Dufflou (now Professor) performed the post mortem on Scott on 14 December 1988, prepared a post mortem report, and was called as a witness to the 1989 Inquest. In the post mortem report he opined that the direct cause of death was "multiple injuries" with no antecedent or other significant conditions listed.

78. Toxicology analysis of specimens collected during the post mortem on 15 December 1988 was undertaken at the government laboratory at Lidcombe. The sample taken from Scott was found to have 0.005g per 100ml of blood and an expert certificate is dated 6 January 1989.

Witness:



Signature:

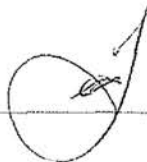


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

79. Inquest transcriptions indicate that Doctor Duflou amended his post mortem report in evidence in chief citing that in his opinion Scott died between 8 and 10 December 1988 and more likely between the 8 and 9 December 1988. This is due to his body being located on 10 December 1988. He observed no rectal injury and no HIV/AIDS or Hepatitis anti-bodies. He was cross examined by counsel representing Mr Johnson about injuries. It appears that an anal swab is not available from the post mortem.
80. Doctor Duflou concludes that he did not find any injuries that were inconsistent with a fall from the cliff.
81. I PRODUCE THE POST MORTEM AND TOXICOLOGY CERTIFICATES.
82. I PRODUCE THE 1989 INQUEST TRANSCRIPTION.
83. In 2014 Forensic Pathologist, Doctor Cala, was consulted in this matter regarding the positioning of Scott's body in situ. Doctor Cala's experience of the affects on the body of falls at The Gap and North Head was relied upon at the 2003 Taradale inquest into the death of Mr John Russell. With reference to the 12 scene photographs, the post mortem report, and the transcription of inquest evidence by Doctor Duflou, Doctor Cala writes;
84. *"It appears this man fell to his death from a height, with injuries identified at autopsy consistent with such a fall. I am of the opinion no conclusions can be drawn in relation to the circumstances of his death, based on his position in the photos 1-3. It would be unsafe to draw any conclusions he met with foul play based on his resting position at the bottom of the cliff, or by a comparison with other apparently "similar" cases where young men were found at the bottom of cliffs around Sydney in the same period of the 1980's and 1990's.*
85. *The large open head and chest wounds, with absent cranial contents and exposed thoracic organs indicate the deceased sustained massive head and chest injuries at other point/s during his descent, indicating multiple strike points to the body. The large amount of abrasions identified, together with their anatomical separation from each other indicate these to be other "strike points"*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

sustained during the fall. Massive head injuries sustained in this way are not unusual in cases of falls from heights. They are also seen at times of other severe trauma such as motor vehicle trauma, or plane crashes, when there has been massive impact to the head, resulting in splitting of the scalp and extrusion of the brain.

86. *Having struck protruding parts of rocks during descent, the deceased would then have altered direction, speed and position. That he came to be found in an unusual resting position can be explained by the dynamic changes occurring to the body being subjected to multiple hard impacts during descent."*

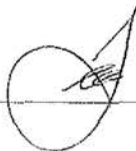
87. Police Response to the Scene & Related Inquiries

88. The Manly Police Occurrence Pad dated 10 December 1988 (ref.12/31) was made by Constable Troy Hardie at 6pm on 10 December 1988. It records that at 10.45am that date [REDACTED] attended the police station and reported the discovery of the body, later identified as Scott Russell Johnson. A police response to the scene by Hardie, Roux, Kehoe, Ludlow, Taplin, the Rescue Squad, the Police Air Wing, and scientific police is recorded. The location and seizure of clothing and personal items is recorded. The items are described as being immediately above the location of the body, folded neatly and under a tree. The body was conveyed to the cliff top about 2.30pm.

89. Attempts to confirm the identity of the body and to locate the next of kin are also recorded and include a request that Australian Capital Territory (ACT) police make inquiries at the address on the student identification card being, 21 Blacket Street, Downer in the ACT. The record includes information from the ACT police that neighbours of that address told them that Scott is a Californian and that Scott had not been seen by them at the ACT address for several months. Scott's university mathematics studies are also noted for further inquiry.

90. The occurrence entry at 12.50am 11 December 1988 is that ACT police confirm their contact with [REDACTED] and his arrangements to travel to Sydney and contact police. The occurrence entry at 11.15am on 11 December 1988 is that the body

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

of Scott had been identified at the morgue by [REDACTED], who is recorded as "a very good friend and flatmate" of Scott.

91. I PRODUCE THE OCCURRENCE PAD ENTRIES

92. Constable Troy Hardie provided written statements dated 11 December 1988 and 18 August 2011. He was called as a witness to the 1989 Inquest.

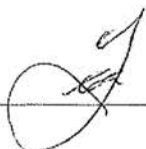
93. The statement dated 11 December 1988, includes that about 10.45am on Saturday 10 December 2013 he spoke to [REDACTED] when he came into Manly Police Station to report that a body had been found. Constable Hardie and his colleague Constable Roux went to the scene about 200 metre north of Blue Fish Point and saw a naked male body with massive injuries. A paramedic told him that the body had been in situ for up to two days. The Police Air Wing, Police Rescue Squad, and crime scene personnel arrived and took photographs of the body in situ before transporting it to the top of the headland about 1.50pm.

94. He and Constable Roux remained with the body while Constables Ludlow and Taplin went to the cliff top above the body. The body was conveyed to Manly District Hospital and life was pronounced extinct. He caused notification of next of kin, [REDACTED], in Canberra and on Sunday 11 December 1988 the body of Scott was identified by [REDACTED] at the Glebe Mortuary.

95. After the identification Constable Hardie took a written statement from [REDACTED], who was in the company of [REDACTED]. The statement included that Scott Johnson had been in a problem-free homosexual relationship with [REDACTED] for four to five years, that Scott Johnson had no known psychological problems. Constable Hardie compiled statements from [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED].

96. Inquest transcriptions indicate that Constable Troy Hardie gave evidence that he laid out the clothing for photographing and that it was soaked through (by rain). His observation of the bus ticket was that it was a one dollar ticket that he recognised as being issued by public buses and which he found in the top pocket of the shirt. In the transcription there is criticism by counsel representing Mr

Witness:



Signature:



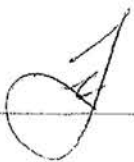
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Johnson that Constable Hardie had failed to look into the specific origin of the ticket.

97. Constable Hardie confirmed that he did not attend the area of the cliff above where the body was found. In his ten months working at Manly he did not receive jobs or hear of any jobs related to homosexual activity in that area of North Head. He describes the public car park and lookout to the city area as a 'lovers' lane' for men and women as well as an area frequently patrolled by police due to reports of stealing from cars.
98. In May 2011 Mr Hardie, who by then had retired from the NSWPF, was interviewed by Mr Glick. Mr Glick passed information onto Detective Wilson of Manly Police that suggested Mr Hardie had changed aspects of his 1989 evidence. Because of this, Manly Police obtained a second statement from Mr Hardie which became part of the 2012 Inquest brief of evidence.
99. The second statement is dated 18 August 2011 and includes that Mr Hardie left police employment in 1996 and at the time of making the statement was an investigations manager with HSBC Bank. He spent the years from 1964 to 1993 living on the Northern Beaches and the years 1984 to 1996 performing general duties policing in Manly, Dee Why and Frenchs Forrest. He also performed part time police rescue duties which required him to train at North Head several times each year.
100. Mr Hardie states that he never witnessed or was called to respond to sexual activity beyond that occurring in vehicles in the public car park area of North Head. The sexual activity was both heterosexual and homosexual. Mr Hardie does not include an estimation of the number of actual body recovery jobs he attended at North Head but states that no other body recovery response by him involved a naked body, neatly folded clothes, or the particular location where Scott Johnson was found.
101. In the statement Mr Hardie refers to statements purported to have been made by him to Mr Glick. He expresses having developed wariness towards Mr Glick in

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

telephone conversations with him before their May meeting. His wariness was that he may be misrepresented by Mr Glick. He described Mr Glick as being "infatuated" with Sydney gay-hate crimes and Mr Hardie told him that he had no knowledge of them and could not assist. Mr Hardie addressed his concerns about Mr Glick by having a bank work colleague and former police officer, Mr Wayne Plant, also attend a meeting with Mr Glick on 12 May 2011.

102. Mr Hardie denies telling Mr Glick that the suicide finding "was not informed by the evidence" as quoted by Mr Glick. Mr Hardie maintains that his comments to Mr Glick on 12 May 2011 were consistent with his earlier evidence in the matter.

103. The evidence of Mr Hardie in this matter which includes two written statements and witness evidence at the 1989 Inquest has not produced new information or evidence of the circumstances of Scott's death.

104. I PRODUCE THOSE TWO STATEMENTS

105. Constable Sylvia Roux provided a statement dated 26 December 1988. Her statement includes that she went to the scene of the body with Constable Hardie and saw severe injuries. She saw the arrival of Polair, Police Rescue Squad and crime scene personnel. Back at the Manly Police Station she entered each of the personal items of Scott Johnson's property into the Miscellaneous Property Book. She was not called as a witness to the Inquest.

106. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT.

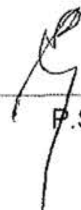
107. Detective Constable Robert Ludlow made a statement dated 29 December 1988 and was also called as a witness to the 1989 Inquest. The statement includes that he went to the scene of the body and then went with [REDACTED] and Constable Taplin to the top of the headland directly above where the body was found. He arrived there about 11.30am. At the location and about 10 metres back from the cliff edge he saw neatly folded clothes and personal items.

108. Searching the items from the top of the pile he found: one bone coloured long sleeve shirt, one pair of light blue trousers, one pair of green underpants, a pair of white socks, and a pair of white Adidas brand running shoes.

Witness:



Signature:

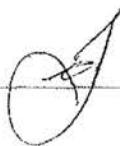


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

109. Inside the running shoes he found a black felt tip pen, one Mercury brand digital watch, one black comb, and one key.
110. In the top pocket of the shirt he found a plastic holder containing a \$10 note, a cash-card for the Canberra Building Society, and a student travel concession card in the name of Scott R. Johnson of 21 Blacket Street, Downer, in the Australian Capital Territory (ACT).
111. Crime scene officer, Senior Constable Flogel, arrived and photographed the clothing which was then secured by police.
112. Inquest transcriptions indicate that Detective Ludlow gave evidence at the 1989 Inquest that the state of the clothing he found at the scene were a combination of wet and damp. He did not remember finding a bus ticket when he looked at the items but acknowledged that a ticket appears in a photograph taken by the crime scene section who was assisted in laying out the property by Constable Hardie (Constable Hardie located the bus ticket – refer to his statement of 11 December 1988). He did not remember finding a notepad with or near the personal affects.
113. He observed no tears or blood on the items and the shoes were not covered in mud. He looked over the headland in the area above where the body was found and saw no sign of a struggle such as scuff marks or breakages to the cliff edge.
114. He describes an absence of identifiable tracks or clearings in the area around where the property was found.
115. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
116. Detective Constable 1st Class Philip Flogel (now Superintendent) of the Crime Scene Unit, Chatswood, attended the scene about 2pm on 10 December 1988 and made a statement dated 22 February 1989. His statement and photographs form part of the 1989 inquest brief of evidence. He was not called at inquest.
117. His statement includes that he had examined hundreds of scenes of suspicious deaths over a six year period. The body was airlifted to an area where

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

he could make closer examinations and he noted massive head, abdominal and chest injuries. He did not observe defensive wounds to the hands, or signs of neck compression. He examined the personal items and found no signs of rips, tears or scuffs. He formed the view that the injuries were consistent with a fall.

118. It is noted that he does not list a pen in the personal items as is recorded in the statement of Constable Ludlow, although a photograph taken by him records a pen.
119. On 11 June 2013 a re-visit to the North Head scene by Superintendent Phillip Fogel and strike force investigators did not result in new information.
120. The strike force reviewed the NSWPF Forensic Services file, reference FSG 88/1290, that was prepared by Superintendent Fogel in this matter. The file does not contain any previously undisclosed photographs or evidence.
121. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT AND TEN PHOTOGRAPHS.
122. Detective Sergeant Doreen Cruickshank (now Superintendent), formerly of Manly Police Station, provided a statement dated 7 March 1989 and was also called as a witness to the 1989 Inquest. In the statement she states that she was made the officer in charge of the matter on 19 January 1989 and subsequently received a copy of the brief of evidence thus far prepared by Constable Hardie, a thirty nine (39) page document and an eleven (11) page document prepared by Mr Johnson. (Both are referred to later under '*Suspicious held by Scott Johnson's Family*')
123. Inquest transcriptions indicate questioning and cross examination of Detective Cruickshank by all parties represented. There are questions put to Detective Cruickshank about her inquiries into the alibi provided by [REDACTED] relative to his movements on 8, 9 and 10 December 1988. Detective Cruickshank explains that the inquiries she made with airline records verified the account given by [REDACTED] which was -
124. On Thursday 8 December 1988 [REDACTED] travelled from Canberra to Melbourne on Ansett Airline flexi-fare booking flight 393 scheduled to depart

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

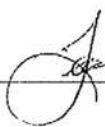
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Canberra at 9.55am arriving in Melbourne at 10.50am. He was booked in to depart Melbourne for Canberra on Saturday 10 December 1988 on Ansett Airline flight 207 departing at 7.45pm. However the scheduled flight was delayed and then cancelled. [REDACTED] was transferred to a later Ansett flight from Melbourne to Sydney for transfer to Canberra. On arrival at the Sydney terminal, the Canberra transfer was delayed due to storm activity. Passengers were confined to the terminal. [REDACTED]'s flight departed for Canberra after the 11pm curfew. The Canberra arrival time is not known.

125. Detective Cruickshank gives evidence in court that she checked if [REDACTED] had been a passenger with a domestic airline between Melbourne and Sydney on 8, 9, or 10 December 1988. Airlines found no passenger with the name [REDACTED].
126. Inquest transcriptions record that Detective Cruickshank was not aware that North Head was frequented by homosexuals. She explains that police become aware of gay beat areas when reports of assault or robbery are received and a link is then made to homosexual victims and activity. She cites two other areas in the Manly policing area known to police for homosexual activity as a result of reports to police by victims of serious assaults. One area was the Tourist Centre on the Manly beach waterfront and the second being public toilets at the Balgowlah Shopping Centre, also known as the Totem Shopping area.¹
127. Detective Cruickshank confirmed that the weather in Manly over the week preceding the finding of Scott Johnson's body alternated between cool, humid, temperatures in the low twenties, drizzle, rain and clear patches. On Friday 9 December 1988, that pattern continued with rain in the early afternoon and a particularly severe thunderstorm on the evening of Friday 9 December 1988 which resulted in electrical blackouts.
128. Detective Cruickshank concluded that Scott voluntarily jumped to his death. Her statement and evidence reflects a number of considerations before she came

¹ 1989 inquest transcription W485/K2/MR 16/03/89 p.3/4

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

to this conclusion, inclusive of the scene, Scott Johnson's temperament and a previous attempted suicide as told to her by [REDACTED].

129. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

130. Mr Wayne Plant provided a statement to police on 11 July 2011 which was part of the report to the Coroner in 2012. He was not part of the original investigation but is included here for chronology. He states that he was a police officer from 1981 to 1996. On 12 May 2011 he was asked to a meeting by his HSBC Bank colleague, Mr Troy Hardie, where he met Mr Glick. As a former member of Police Rescue Unit, Police Air wing observer, and general duties officer he was required to recover bodies across NSW including from the base of North Head. He also was involved in many police rescue training exercises on North Head and was a northern beaches resident for 43 years.

131. In response to Mr Glick telling him of Scott's death, Mr Plant states that in over one hundred body recoveries that he was involved in across NSW he did not have one that involved a totally naked body or clothes being folded nearby in the way Mr Glick described.

132. He had not been required to recover a body from the area described by Mr Glick but had from other sites around North Head but explains that in his experience some sites of suicides where one-offs, that is, a suicide incident could occur in isolation of other areas known for such events.

133. He never observed North Head to be a gay-beat but knew it had a 'lovers parking' area near the tourist locations.

134. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

135. **Personal Items at the Scene & Related Inquiries**

136. No suicide note was located at the scene, or subsequently by friends or family at any location.

137. Mr Brett Carruthers of the Public Trustees Office provided a statement dated 10 February 1989 which includes that in his review of a computer used by Scott

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

he did not identify any records indicating anything about Scott's emotional wellbeing.

138. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

139. The clothes at the scene were identified as belonging to Scott Johnson by [REDACTED] and consisted of a bone coloured long sleeve shirt, a pair of light blue trousers, a pair of green underpants, a pair of white socks, and a pair of white Adidas brand running shoes.

140. Inside the running shoes police found a black felt tip pen, a Mercury brand digital watch, a black hair comb, and a key. Regarding the key, it is not apparent in the police photographs. Is it mentioned in the statement of Constable Ludlow but with no identifying details.

141. In the top pocket of the shirt police found a clear plastic holder containing a ten dollar note, a cash-card for the Canberra Building Society, and a student concession card in the name of Scott Johnson, and a one dollar bus ticket. The bus ticket was photographed only showing its reverse side.

142. In relation to the pen, when re-interviewed in 2013 [REDACTED] recalled seeing a metal pen on top of the folded clothes at the scene. The finding of a black felt tip pen inside a shoe is recorded by police and what appears to be consistent with a black felt tip pen appears in the police photographs taken at the scene. There is no record of a metal pen also being located by police.

143. In relation to the bus ticket in 2013 the inquiries were made with the Powerhouse Museum in relation to the NSW Government bus ticket collection. Tickets of the type found in the pocket of Scott Johnson at the scene were produced at the government printing office until 1992 and were used by the former Urban Transit Authority between 1980 and 1989.

144. Mr Richard Peck, a former curator at the Powerhouse Museum has previously researched Sydney bus tickets between the period 1879 and 2013, and he provided written statements in 2013 after looking at the police photographs of the ticket. His statement includes - the bus ticket was a State Government issued

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

ticket between July 1988 to July 1989, it is a one way single trip ticket as it was issued prior to return tickets becoming available in later years.

145. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

146. In 2013 Mr Ray Gould from the Sydney Bus Museum provided additional information that when a passenger transferred between buses in 1988 as required on a bus trip from Lane Cove to Manly it would require two separate transport tickets. To his knowledge there was no system of student concession tickets in 1988.

147. In relation to the Canberra Building Society cash card located in the shirt pocket of Scott, it is established that the account was in Scott's name. Information may be gleaned about movements and lifestyle from banking records, however this is not available to the strike force due to a series of bank amalgamations since that time and likely record destruction orders, as describe here;

148. In 1990 the Canberra Building Society merged with the Advance Bank. At that time the computer systems changed along with account numbers. In 1997 there was a merge with the St George Building Society, and then finally with the Westpac Bank in 2008. Bank inquiries confirmed that the account number has now been transferred to an unrelated ANZ bank customer. Account records consisting of microfiche transactions and customer details were held for 7 years with destruction orders after this time. Records of Scott's account were due for destruction in 1996.

149. Inquiries confirm that the Canberra Building Society only had branches in Canberra, but that customers could use their cash cards at any other financial institution automatic teller machine in Australia.

150. Mr Johnson informed police in 1989² that he located an automatic teller machine receipt in Scott's bedroom at the Lane Cove house after his death. He also refers to the ATM details in an email to police dated 1 May 2013 but was unable to provide a copy of it. The details remembered by him are that the receipt

² Correspondence to Constable Hardie dated 12/01/1989

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

was for a withdrawal of fifty dollars at 121 King Street, Sydney at 3.55pm on Wednesday 7 December 1988.

151. That location is no longer a bank. A historic location search on COPS records an incident at The State Bank of New South Wales at 121 King Street, Sydney in 1987. There are no entries for 1988 or subsequent dates. The location is in the central business district of Sydney near the Pitt Street Mall.
152. Potential for Forensic Examination
153. COPS Case Report C27263728 by Detective Doherty of Manly Police for the 2006 review, states that exhibit books and miscellaneous property books for 1988 were destroyed in 1991 in compliance with local policy. These books were used as a centralised record for unrelated matters.
154. It is normal for police to return personal items of deceased persons to the next of kin in the circumstances of a suicide. Statements of [REDACTED] suggest that the personal items were returned to him by police in 1989 and that he passed them onto the Johnson family. I understand that the Johnson family dispute this; nonetheless no items are available to the strike force.
155. What forensic testing was available in 1988?
156. Forensic testing for fingerprints was available and on the identification of a latent fingerprint, a manual search was conducted against known suspects on record or if provided by a person voluntarily. The clear plastic cash-card cover may have yielded fingerprints as may have the cash card, but the circumstances in which they were found did not suggest a level of suspicion that an offender had held the items.
157. Government DNA legislation came into effect on 1 January 2001³. In 1988 forensic testing was unavailable and the future existence of such technologies were inconceivable to police and the general community. Items therefore were not held onto for future testing.

³ Police Service Weekly vol12 No 48 4/12/2000

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

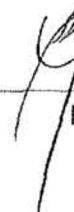
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

158. In case a party in this matter wonders of the missed opportunity because the property of Scott was not retained, let us consider the actual possibilities had this not been the case.
159. Some items of Scott's property found at the scene may have yielded forensic material for testing. In ideally preserved conditions, his pen may yield a DNA deposit, together with his watch and areas of clothing and shoes. DNA and fingerprints of Scott himself would probably be identified on these surfaces assuming normal close contact by him.
160. There are a number of variables that influence the ability of a person to deposit suitable forensic material. Regarding the DNA of a third party, such as an offender, transient contact with an item is a significant inhibitor to depositing forensic material. Water and wind also significantly impact the presence of DNA.
161. A scenario that may potentially allow for an offender to have deposited forensic material on Scott's property would have to involve tight holding and/or rubbing individual items of Scott's property. Knowing what we do of the scene, that third party would then have had to place the items back into Scott's pockets and shoes and leave the clothing piled in the resting place found by the police.
162. There was nothing about the scene that suggested any contact with or movement of Scott's property by an offender.
163. **Last Movements of Mr Scott Johnson**
164. We know the following facts about Scott's movement in the days leading up to his death;
165. Between the 27 November 1988 and 10 December 1988 the Lane Cove house was being shared by [REDACTED], his sister [REDACTED] and Scott.
166. On Saturday 3 December 1988, in the evening, at the Lane Cove house a birthday party was put on for Scott to celebrate his 27th birthday. This was the

Witness:



Signature:




P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

second of two parties put on for Scott by [REDACTED], with an earlier one having been held in Canberra.

167. On Sunday 4 December 1988 [REDACTED] and Scott spent the day together at the Lane Cove home and also at Obelisk Beach at Mosman.
168. On Monday 5 December 1988, about 9am, [REDACTED] left Lane Cove for Canberra via the city to pick up his birth certificate from the Government Registry as planned. Scott remained at the Lane Cove house. After [REDACTED] had been at the Registry for a number of hours, he doubled back to the Lane Cove to give Scott his wallet which Scott had left in the car the preceding day. [REDACTED] was annoyed about the delay in his trip to Canberra caused at the Registry and having to return to Lane Cove. This was in the afternoon and was the last time that [REDACTED] saw Scott.
169. On Tuesday 6 December 1988, about 2pm, [REDACTED] saw Scott at the Lane Cove house.
170. On Wednesday 7 December 1988, about 2pm, Scott is seen at Macquarie University by his [REDACTED].
171. On Wednesday 7 December 1988 at 3.55pm Scott's cash card was used to withdraw \$50 at 121 King Street, in the city.
172. On Wednesday 7 December 1988, about 11pm, [REDACTED] was in her Lane Cove bedroom when she heard a person let themselves into the house, go to the kitchen, then go into a bedroom. She assumed that the person was Scott due to him being the only other person staying in the house at that time, and the routine nature of the movements.
173. On Thursday 8 December 1988, about 6am, [REDACTED] saw Scott (being his feet or knees) in his bed at the Lane Cove house.
174. On Thursday 8 December 1988, about 10.30am, Scott telephoned [REDACTED] [REDACTED] at Macquarie University.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

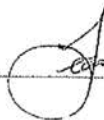


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

175. On Thursday 8 December 1988, between 12midday and 2pm, ██████████ telephoned the Lane Cove house looking for his friend ██████████, but the phone is answered by Scott who he knew to be ██████████'s partner and had met previously.
176. On Thursday 8 December 1988, ██████████ returned to the Lane Cove home and looked into Scott's bedroom which she found to be tidy.
177. On Friday 9 December 1988 no movements of Scott have been identified.
178. About 10am on Saturday 10 December 1988 about 10am the deceased body of Scott is found at Manly.
179. **The North Head Environment**
180. North Head in the late 1980's included a School of Artillery and residential quarters, St Patrick's Catholic Seminary, a sewer works, an inactive Quarantine Station, a public hospital, and a gay beat.
181. **Terrain**
182. Inquiries in 2013 have led to the production of a map which provides a visual location for relevant areas on North Head including the location of Scott's personal property, and gay beat areas indicated by two witnesses. GPS coordinates are available for each of these locations.
183. I PRODUCE THAT MAP
184. The Harbour Trust describes it as heath land, whose "*dramatic cliffs...form a memorable entry to Sydney Harbour*". Its surface consists mainly of dense coastal heath scrub and low trees on a base of uneven sandy loam. The scrub is intermittently dispersed with outcrops of sandstone rock. At the cliff-side jagged rock ledges project towards the Tasman Sea. The area is on the national heritage list due to a history of quarantine and military defence usage. Bandicoots, possums and feral foxes live on the headland.

Witness:



Signature:




P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

185. A single two lane road and footpath runs in a north-south direction across the headland from the Manly central business district (CBD). From the most southerly point one can view South Head in the eastern suburb of Watson's Bay. The western side of the headland has car parking areas that overlook a body of water called North Harbour to the Sydney city skyline.
186. The eastern side of North Head is where Scott's body was located. The area where Scott's clothes were located has an elevation just over sixty (60) metres with cliff side rocks projecting towards the Tasman Sea. The eastern side is not a built up area and there is pedestrian access only. The eastern side has developed as a public walking area with a permanent natural walking track that meanders in a general north-south direction.
187. The most common pedestrian access to the central walking path is by way of the Shelly Beach car park in the north and Bluefish Point Road in the south. Closer to the Shelly Beach end, the central track passes through an historic stone and concrete wall which is approximately three metres in height. At some point in history a rough hole has been made in the wall which is large enough to allow one person at a time to pass through.
188. On the eastern side of the headland, Bluefish Point is the name of the most easterly point. The base of that area of headland has sea level rock ledges that are exposed at low tide. If one walks south from Manly Beach to North Head one passes areas known as Fairy Bower and Shelly Beach.
189. Weather
190. [REDACTED] remembers walking on the Manly foreshore with his wife on the evening of Friday 9 December 1988 and getting caught in a storm with heavy rain and westerly winds.
191. Detective Cruickshank stated at inquest that the weather in Manly over the preceding week alternated between cool, humid, temperatures in the low twenties, drizzle, rain and clear patches. On Friday 9 December 1988 the pattern

Witness:



Signature:



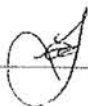
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

continued with rain in the early afternoon and a particularly severe thunderstorm that evening which resulted in electrical blackouts.

192. In 2013 Mr Aaron Coumts Smith of the Bureau of Meteorology provided a statement and certified extract and data of the weather assessment at North Head for the period from 8 to 10 December 1988. It includes data of the daily rainfall observations from the closest weather stations to the area of Manly and hourly rainfall observations for Sydney Observatory Hill.
193. The rainfall data was recorded from the weather stations located at HMAS Watson, Manly Vale, Manly Dam, Mosman and Seaforth. No rainfall is recorded between 10am on 8 December 1988 and 6pm on 9 December 1988. After 7pm on 9 December 1988 approximately 42mm of rain is recorded.
194. The cloud cover measured very cloudy and overcast. The maximum temperature on 8 December 1988 was 21 degrees. The maximum temperature on 9 December 1988 was 26.1 degrees.
195. I PRODUCE THAT CERTIFICATE / STATEMENT
196. Travel to North Head from Lane Cove
197. Travel from Lane Cove to North Head is possible by car, by bus, or by bus and ferry. Scott was a capable walker and runner, but I am reluctant to suggest that this was his mode of transport due to the type of clothing he wore on that day.
198. A 2013 search on the Sydney bus transport webpage and *Google* provides the following estimates –
199. Weekday vehicle travel from Lane Cove will take a minimum of thirty five minutes. (There is no evidence of Scott having his own access to a car in the week of his death)
200. Weekday bus travel from [REDACTED] Lane Cove to North Head will take a minimum of one hour and fifty minutes and involves three separate buses. The bus is recommended as the most efficient and direct route of travel.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

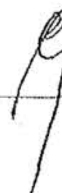
201. Weekday bus and ferry travel will take a minimum of two hours.
202. A walk from Lane Cove to North Head will take four hours.
203. In 2013 Mr Peck of the Powerhouse Museum located a 1998 State Transit Timetable of local bus route 135 from Manly Wharf. He states that the 1998 timetable shows a similar service to that previously operated by Manly Bus Service a privately owned company which he believes was operating in 1988.⁴
204. The private bus company transported passengers from Manly Wharf to North Head and stopped at the Manly Hospital and the Quarantine Station. The service operated on week days every half an hour from about 7am to 5pm and on Saturday from 9am to 5pm.
205. I PRODUCE THAT 1998 TIMETABLE
206. If Scott travelled to North Head on Thursday 8 December 1988, he did not leave Lane Cove until after the phone call from [REDACTED] between 12 midday and 2pm. For the purpose of this exercise, the estimated earliest time of departure from Lane Cove is 1pm on Thursday 8 December 1988, and no transport delays will be assumed.
207. If Scott travelled in a car, he would arrive at approximately 1.40pm.
208. There is no evidence that Scott borrowed a [REDACTED] family car as it would have been left at the scene due to his death and this was not the case. There is no evidence that he received a lift from someone else.
209. If Scott travelled by bus, he would arrive at approximately 3pm.
210. If Scott travelled by bus and ferry, he would arrive at approximately 3pm.
211. If Scott walked, he would arrive at approximately 5pm.
212. **Victimology**
213. **Family and Friends of Scott Johnson**

⁴ Statement of Peck dated 9/05/13

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

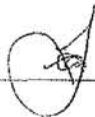


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

214. Mr Stephen Johnson
215. On 6 March 2013 Mr Johnson was electronically interviewed at the Manly Police Station. He had asked for his employee in this matter, Mr Glick, an investigative journalist to be present at the interview.
216. The interview was conducted from 10.10am and concluded at 3.12pm. The 122 page transcription is summarised here.
217. The three Johnson siblings were all born in Los Angeles, America. Their mother, Barbara, died in 2012, and their father, Grant, died in 2013. The first born was sister, Terry, then eighteen months later Mr Johnson was born and two and a half years later, Scott was born. Their parent separated in 1970 when Scott was about 9 years old. Their father started a new family in Colorado and they have half siblings, a sister Rebecca, and a brother, Sloane.
218. Mr Johnson initially says that the separation was not upsetting, distressing, or traumatic for him or his siblings. He describes it as confusing. He says that the father stayed "out of our lives" until he was in college.
219. The separation resulted in the mother and children moving to California where the mother got work as a doctor's assistant for a couple of years. When that work stopped they entered a very poor period. Their mother had no skills that secured her a job and they received welfare benefits which included receiving food stamps.
220. Mr Johnson started delivering papers and helped to support the family. He describes that the siblings 'banded together' and made the best of things. He says they wished their father was with them saying, "We were simply trying to make everything work and trying to help my mother make ends meet, and it was certainly a stressful time for my mother who, you know, was barely making it all work..."
221. They moved a lot and usually to progressively cheaper and cheaper places until his described living in a 'ghetto' with plenty of "violence" and "mayhem" in the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

area. He says, "I carried a squirt gun with ammonia in it for the dogs but I didn't have anything else for the hoodlums..."

222. He described getting 'lucky' by learning to play the clarinet and being invited to audition for a music scholarship at USC a university in California which was successful. He describes it as a 'freak accident'. He started to hope that his brother Scott who he describes as already 'very brilliant' would also go to college. Mr Johnson helped his brother with the application for Caltech which was the "best technical school in the world".
223. Scott got into Caltech and between them it was the first time anyone from their family had ever gone to college. The colleges were near each other and they would spend time together teaching themselves computer programming.
224. They spent a lot of time together until Scott moved to Australia.
225. The interview returns to matters about their father and the separation. Mr Johnson says that he did not see his parents argue and had not predicted the separation. Contact from their father had been 'a couple' of visits by him not long after the separation and then the father stopped visiting and stopped calling. Mr Johnson initiated contact in his first year at college by visiting the father in Denver. During the visit he learned that his father had remarried and that he had a half-sister, Rebecca, who was a few months old.
226. He says, "For some reason I didn't hold a grudge...", and it was great to see his father. He does not describe them as having a close relationship, but he remembers his father fondly because he is very smart, taught them things, and helped them make things like a pin hole camera and electronics.
227. He describes Scott's relationship with the natural father as similar to his own and not closer. He says that Scott was quiet and not as outgoing as himself including when he was with his father.
228. Regarding any difficulties faced by their single mother he says that she was not looked down upon. Describing her as "ravishingly beautiful so she didn't have any trouble finding dates..."

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

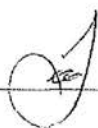


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

229. The main issue they faced was a lack of money in her efforts to support the family and this was the main cause of stress in her life saying, "I think it was hard for a woman without a college degree and with no work experience to find a job".
230. He explains that their mother was not working but was helping to fold newspapers for his paper run. Eventually she got an office job in a chemical company which was her "first real job" and was probably in 1973 or so. He says they were living in this ninety five dollar a month house in the ghetto. There were four of them and the house had two rooms.
231. She then had a regular boyfriend who was "sort of" working and he feels that they then started to move up in the world gradually moving to bigger houses. While he was still doing the paper run Scott helped him with the run 'once in a while' on the weekend.
232. Looking back Mr Johnson thinks that he was trying to step up to be the "man of the house" by bringing in money and says he thinks they were all doing their best in a "kind of tough situation". His sister and mother did not get along very well. As a 14 or 15 year old the sister moved out temporarily.
233. He describes them as having a "real scrambling existence" and then their mother who had had three children by the time she was 21 years old was just "unusually stressed all the time". He remembers clipping coupons and working on different strategies to make money one being when his mother started going to a bowling alley he would keep score for other players and make a bit of money. He calls this his 'next step up' and thinks that he was 13 years old or so.
234. His father did not support them including financially and he described feeling that their mother 'resented us' sometimes.
235. When he got older he started to reflect on his dad's responsibility in the situation. He wondered why he was not angrier with his father and puts it down to not getting distracted by that question as he had lots of work to do to get by and help the family.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

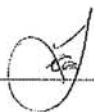


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

236. He and his siblings went to six or seven different schools due to several moves. At one point he stayed at one high school by riding a bicycle 'for miles' rather than move.
237. Scott and Mr Johnson did not like their mother's regular boyfriend, Dennis (also now deceased). Dennis moved into the house after Mr Johnson had left for college. He says that the boyfriend was 'rough on Scott', 'very macho', and did not treat him well. He says that most of his and Scott's conversation was then about the boyfriend. He describes their relationship with Dennis as 'standoffish' and that he did not help his mother as he was an alcoholic. He eventually 'dried out' but became incapable of working so she supported him as well.
238. He explained that sometimes when their mother was 'at her worst point' she said things that made her children feel bad so Scott and he also talked about that. He describes his mother as having a 'sailor's mouth' and then suggests to the interviewer that he would rather not given further detail.
239. Dennis thought that Scott should be able to throw a baseball, hammer a nail, and other things like that. He says that Dennis thought Scott was a 'sissy'.
240. Stephen says that they commonly had commercially produced food such as Kraft macaroni cheese which was about twenty two cents a box and could feed the whole family. Other times food was a can of tuna mixed with macaroni or a burger with protein mixed into it to make it go further. He says that took turns in getting food ready but eventually he was the one in charge of meals.
241. He does not think that Scott took after a parent saying that there were no well defined personalities in the family because 'everything was so chaotic, I guess you could say.' He then says that when he got to know his paternal grandmother in later years he realised that the family 'brilliance' came from that side of the family.
242. Their father was an outspoken atheist and his mother's parents used church as a punishment. They were never made to go to church or had any kind of

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



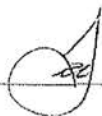
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

religious upbringing. Their father converted to the Catholic religion later when he got married to a Catholic woman.

243. Stephen remembers a time when he and Scott looked at a map of Southern California and identifying twenty five towns that they had lived in Southern California saying that they went to high schools where the teachers time was mainly taken up trying to keep the kids from beating each other up or with the Hispanic population stopping the kids knifing each other.
244. Stephen says that as he was older than Scott so he got an earlier experience of being picked on for being bright. Not only did they get picked on for being 'sissy', Stephen describes himself as being 'kind of girly...'cause I have a fair face and...was always the new kid'. Moving as teenagers was terrible for both he and Scott. He says that due to the moving that he and Scott didn't see each other at school as they almost never shared the same school.
245. Scott never complained to Stephen about being picked on. He does not remember Scott ever getting into a fight or telling him that he had saying, 'I don't remember him ever getting picked on except for my mum's boyfriend (Dennis)'.
246. Stephen describes Dennis's treatment of Scott as 'very oppressive'. Dennis thought he could 'correct' Scott and make him a man so Stephen describes himself as Scott's 'defender'. He remembers Dennis being drunk and sitting them both down one night and telling them how to have sex. He says that Dennis never physically abused them, 'never touched either one of us'.
247. He thinks that when he was away at college that both his mother and Dennis tried to 'correct Scott in a certain sense' namely making him more of a man and more outgoing but describes it as backfiring and making Scott more introverted.
248. The method of trying to 'correct' Scott was telling him what he should do such as join clubs at school to make him more social which would make him 'really stressed out'. Or by trying to teach him how to throw a baseball, hammer and nail, and do housework. Mr Johnson says it '...wasn't pretty, not until he got to college. When he got to college it was, like, liberation.'

Witness:



Signature:

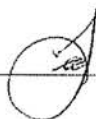


P.S.Young

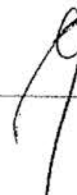
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

249. (On how Scott handled his treatment at home)'...Just quietly...I think he would just, like, pull into a shell and just be quiet. He was not an aggressive person, not at all...' and, 'I think he would tell them that he joined the clubs but he didn't really join the clubs' and, '...when I got out of the house (Scott) ...I think he must have tried to just struggle through it. It was not a good period for him so he was there for another three years...'
250. (On treatment of Scott at home)...My recollection is, as long as (Scott) was getting his housework done, it was okay...at first (there) was pushback because, and this was pushback on, like, when I got to college I discovered books and so I'd bring him books to read and those were, at first, conditional on getting the housework done and, so that was the main, the main issue was, like, she didn't want me, didn't want him distracted from getting his chores done...I don't remember (what the chores were)...I was not in the house...
251. (On Stephen's chores) Well, aside from bringing money, cooking became one of my chores, you know, just, you know trying to keep the house tidy...it was a smaller house when I was there (than when Scott was there by himself).
252. (On physical punishment at home) ...When we were younger (mum) had a, a stick and a ruler 18 inch...that was the disciplinary device, the stick. I think she stopped using that...once she had the steady boyfriend she was less angry...
253. (On the effect of Dennis) ...so after when we were in college together and so ...safely out of the house, (Scott and I) spent a lot of times, sort of, analysing the situation and, you know, when we got back to, to visit we went through all sorts of stages because this guy...Dennis, he was such a dominant influence on our whole thinking...he was a drunk for a while and then he stopped working and then they struggled. My Mum and Dennis struggled because he stopped working...
254. (On if their mother was affectionate) 'No. Never a cuddle or a kiss. It's hard to remember my Mum not, not, kind of, angry about something. Yeah, Christmas

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

she was sort of in a good mood but that didn't translate into cuddles and kisses...it was more like at war...constantly just, yeah, trying to keep going so.'

255. ...we used to, when we were young...you know from his age eight to twelve, we would make lists of all the girls we liked and his was always longer than my list but we were always quiet about that so I never had a girlfriend until my current wife. So we would think about girls but we'd never have a girlfriend.'

256. '...so I think he had one girlfriend who my Mum really protested because she was very buxom and flirty and thought she was just using Scott or something and she had some theory about this girl and so the girl wanted to go to Disneyland with Scott. My Mum prevented him from going and then he climbed out of a window and went anyway. I thought that was, like, right on Scott. I think that was in a senior year of high school...probably 17 or 18. I think he was grounded for a bit. I, I don't think it was super severe...that was such an unusual act for him to actually do something so vertically opposed to (Mum)...

257. ...things (like buying runners or clothes) were in the movies (not in their lives)...we didn't want stuff 'cause it wasn't available...Now that you mention it, I think he, he wore all my clothes...I think the absence of money...we never wanted things that cost money.

258. College Years:

259. Regarding Scott's studies, Mr Johnson says that they all centred on math and he advanced with a scholarship at Cambridge University in England and then started at Berkley University. Back in high school it was clear that Scott had a gift in math and his teachers kept advancing him into higher classes. He did not find anything at high school that challenging.


260. Mr Johnson says, '...quite often he took my lead so he enjoyed whatever I enjoyed. I think he would say that too...whatever I thought was fun, he thought was fun...'

261. Mr Johnson does not recall any friends that Scott had saying, 'He didn't have a lot of friends...not in high school. When he went to college he was the centre of

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

attention. He was everyone's friend...at Caltech he is surrounded by other extraordinary people and they all realised he was more extraordinary so everyone was in awe of Scott and he was such a gentle, wonderful, nice, easy going person. He felt totally comfortable for the first time in his life.'

262. '...this is the way he has described (Caltech) to me many times, that those are his golden years'.
263. (On how he and Scott communicated when Scott was at home for three years after Stephen left for college)'...Well, it wasn't email or Facebook.,so, yeah, talk to you on the phone.
264. (Scott) wasn't a real conversationalist on the phone.
265. Sometimes it was picking him up on the weekends and I started dating my current wife, the one and only ever wife, back then when I was 18 and so we do a lot of things together so we pick Scott up and go to, you know, Disneyland, which is in the neighbourhood and go hiking and things like that, so. That's, that's mainly how we communicated.'
266. (On Mr Johnson's sense of responsibility towards Scott) ...Getting (Scott) through the house and then into, into college I think I did feel very responsible for that and it was, it's because, when you're not in a family that, that is geared toward college and when you don't go to high schools that are geared toward college, you need help finding the information and getting the application and all that. So I took that all on.
267. ...(at Caltech) ...all of his expenses (were) paid...Caltech's the richest per, per student college in the world, so they take good care of their students. He had nothing to worry about
268. ...(Scott) had his gang of friends at Caltech and then some of them sort of (started) coming with us so, so they joined (us hiking). I became very close with several of Scott's friends at Caltech and I, yeah, I think for the most part the recreational side was the two of us...we were so close...

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

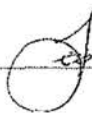


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

269. ...we always had a project that we were at, an intellectual project we were working on. Usually software related, programming related and we just, you know, loved to do so many things together.
270. So when I was in college...I quickly discovered that the easiest way to accomplish my math classes was not to go to class and to wait until about the last two or three days and then invite my brother to come and stay with me, to teach it to me...we learned all, all my classes together.
271. ...second year I was taking first year calculus and he'd already done that, you know when he was...fourteen or something and he was trying to explain to me Green's Theorem. He thought it was funny that I was not clear on Green's Theorem and he explained it to me and I immediately understood...
272. (On how Mr Johnson felt about his younger brother explaining the mathematical equations to him) ...it's great...I was really in awe of my brother and I took good care of him because sometimes his quietness was misunderstood and, you know, like that kindergarten teacher so I spent a lot of time talking about my brother when I went off to Harvard and Scott had gone to Cambridge. We did that at the same time so my friends kidded with me...I had this habit of talking about him a lot saying Scott is my brother...I was not, not, there was no competition between us at all.
273. ...I was following in his (footsteps, academically) in some sense but, basically, he was so far advanced in mathematics. There was, there was no kind of relationship between (our studies) at the level of mathematics that he was studying.
274. Scott still...hadn't really figured out that he was brilliant...until that first year he had missed one of his lectures and...he was supposed to write something about this particular ...joint proof by two mathematicians named Erdos and... (Paul) Erdos is probably the most famous mathematician on the planet...(Scott) didn't know how to proof for it so he had to derive the proof on his own. He found out a few months later from his teacher (that they gave his work)...to Erdos the mathematician...and he wants to know if he can publish it because it's more

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



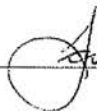
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

elegant and simple than his proof. And so Scott got his first publication out of his homework from his freshman year in college.

275. ...and then he competed in this national math competition...five thousand students...take this hard test and Scott placed in the top ten. And then Scott...got appointed the captain of the math team at Caltech from then on...got straight As or A pluses...and graduated top of his class.
276. (Regarding Scott's academic role models)...there were some fabulous people at Caltech...when he was here (studying in Australia) he got really close with [REDACTED]...his friends at Caltech teased him when he moved (to Australia) that he...just wanted to be the smartest person on the continent. And so when he got to, ANU (Australian National University), there wasn't any professor there that was in his league...and so he finally found this category theorist who was really like very, very smart at Macquarie (University)...and so he developed a relationship with [REDACTED]...
277. ...I think [REDACTED] was his dad here (in Australia)
278. (On what Scott aim to do with his studies) ...I think he really liked working with this professor at Harvard too so when I got into the PhD program at Harvard, I started working with this professor who is like also really super brilliant, meaning also kind of like Scott not like me, and we taught a class together in problem solving and analytic frameworks and he would give a really challenging problem to the students and, you know, only about ten per cent of them would be able to solve it after working on it all weekend. And, you know, I kept telling him about my brother in Cambridge, no, he was at Berkeley by this time, who would solve it. I'd call him up and give him the problem and then he'd solve the problem before I finished giving him the problem. It's, Wow, I really have to meet your brother.
279. And Scott enjoyed economics, this was in economic theory. The work they did actually got published right after Scott died and then won the prize for the best economics paper that year but then it also got split into two more papers because it was bigger than just one paper and those papers got published like five years after Scott died and then 15 years after Scott died.
280. But Scott really wanted practical application. One of the things that frustrated him with mathematics was, his pure mathematics was that it wasn't as connected

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

to the real world as he wished it were although Dominic Verity, this professor I was talking about, would say that category theory actually formed the basis of the modern age of computer science. And so everything that we take for granted now on the internet and with streaming media all over the place, was born from the fundamental work that category theorists did. So there was plenty of practical application like five steps removed in what he was doing but the economics is a little bit closer to the, closer to the metal. Yeah, so he liked that.

281. (On other aspects of Scott's adult life)...we spent a lot of time talking about, you know, around those years there was, the Cold War was still on and so he was really worried about world peace. That was one of the things that brought me to Harvard. So we spent a lot of time talking about change and how you, how you do things that are positive for the world. He was a vegetarian and he took a, I was a vegetarian also, he took it further than I did. He wouldn't wear leather. He didn't think just not eating animals made any sense if you were also wearing animals. And, yes, so that's sort of...about his goals.
282. ...Well, it was another one of those things he inherited from me.
283. That roommate that taught me hiking was also a vegetarian and I guess that sort of, I just, we're all very idealistic and we're always thinking about what was right and wrong. And we just decided that if it was possible to get by without eating animals then we should do it. It wasn't, we weren't, like, super morally opposed to it if that was what we had to do to live then we would do it. It almost was the case in Kansas. Kansas is meat and potatoes. We found an avocado, a place where to buy avocados so that's how he became a vegetarian was from me.
284. (On when they worked together) ...that was just '83 and '84 so we didn't work together again in his life so...it was...four years before he died...during '85 I think he was still at Berkeley and then he was my best man at my wedding and then (in) '86 he had just moved here (to Australia)...then '87 and '88 he would commute to Cambridge two or three times a year (and they would work together).
285. Mr Johnson is unaware of the details of any bank accounts Scott had in America)...he had American bank accounts when he lived in America but I think he shut them down, I'm pretty sure he shut them down when he moved here, so I

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

- would just, so that, that company paid us over a long period of time and so he would get, they pay me and then I would pay Scott, I think is the way it worked.
286. (When Scott was in the US waiting for his Australian visa) ...he lived with us not the whole time because let's see, I actually tried to reconstruct it, but I think we had two of our nieces living with us at the same time. No, no, no, I'm sorry. Becca, maybe, Becca came to visit when she was 10 or something and he stayed with another, an office mate (Andrew) of ours who had an extra room, so he stayed there for, like, one of the months out of four but most the time he was with us.
287. ...I'm sure (Scott) didn't have a stereo or any kind of electronics...he led a very simple life, clothes and travel.
288. ...changing the world was the only thing that motivated Scott. That was professionally.
289. Scott's Sexuality and Life with [REDACTED];
290. ...when he went off to, the turning (point) I think for Scott...really big, big thing in his life was when he went to Cambridge University. He had a really tough first semester and he was telling me that socially he hadn't really connected with groups yet and, and then in January of...'84, while he was at Cambridge, that all changed and he had a very...active social life suddenly and remember there was no email or internet or anything so it was phone calls...but he didn't give me any specifics and it wasn't until the summer of '84 we were working together in Los Angeles making money to go on a Europe trip together and he finally told me that, that the relationship that he had was with a man. That was [REDACTED] And so he came out in the summer of '84 and that, of course, introduced a whole world...that was not at all me.
291. (On his time in Australia) ...so he was suddenly leading his own life (live with [REDACTED] in Australia) and it was independent of me and that was a big deal for him so we spent a lot of time talking about that over the years that, that, and obviously moving to Australia was a big step in that. He was, like, geographically distant from me...Harvard flew him to Cambridge, New Cambridge at Massachusetts (from Australia) a couple or three times a year so we had a chance to see each other...there was no loss of closeness between us...but he

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

obviously flourished (in Australia)...he developed a life of his own and it included all kinds of things... that were not in common with me. I don't even know what they all were because...I haven't had a lot of communication with his friends here in Australia.

292. So, initially...I was shocked that I didn't know this about him 'cause we were so close but he didn't know about himself either. You know I think his, we spent a lot of time that summer...(we) travelled through Europe together for several months that summer...we had plenty of time to talk about it...and I had all kinds of questions 'cause I'd never met a gay man, or at least one that was out to me... and there were all sorts of questions.

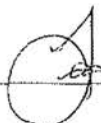
293. ...It was a very violent time and there in Los Angeles even, there were gay bashings and...and so, for somebody as vulnerable as Scott, I was worried about that. I think that was one of the first things that occurred to me and then...AIDS was significant at the time...and then we both, kind of, analysed and picked apart what makes someone gay...are you biologically gay or is that a choice.

294. ...I think the world at the time, the gay world at the time just got it, insisting that it was a biological thing and (Scott), he didn't think that at all....could be partly genetics but...certainly partly social and, so we spent a lot of time just sort of intellectualising about...what caused it and how long you thought you might be gay, which was a long time...it turned out that he probably suspected that he was gay when, when he was in high school.

295. ...during that same summer...I took him there and dropped him off. He wanted to go to some of the gay bars on Santa Monica Boulevard...and then he didn't come home for two or three days and when he came home he...had had some sort of relationship or tryst and then the person was done with him and I remember him feeling bad about the fact...this short relationship and then that was it...I think what was going on with him that summer was he was interested exploring, in exploring this new self. Sort of, like, having your first any kind of sexual relationship. It opens up, you know, a completely new world for you and so he really wanted to, to explore it.

296. ...When we went to Europe together that summer, we went to Cambridge and he introduced me to some of his gay friends there and then we, pretty much,

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

spent the whole summer talking about it and, kind of, thinking about it 'cause it was, like a brand new thing for both of us.

297. (On how his sexuality was accepted by Scott's other family members) ...as you might have been able to glean from the life story there's not a lot of judgement in our family so about what you are, whether you're white or you're black. One of the fonder memories I have of my Dad is that...he used to take us...in downtown Los Angeles...he used to take us to parts where there were just black kids 'cause he wanted...to erase the distinction...I think between white and black and so there wasn't any judgement for sure...
298. ...I think the challenges of being gay at that time were the main thing, the main thing that we talked about and the main thing I was concerned about...he might be exposed to violence.
299. ...given his awkwardness in social situations...it just got a lot harder (for) Scott...it won't be any easier for you to, I guess, conduct yourself in social situations especially if you're with a boyfriend.
300. (The Johnson family) didn't know for a while. He eventually told our older sister. It's not the kind of thing that you would come home to mum and tell her. And not that you would be hiding it. It would just be, there wasn't a super close relationship with our mum as you probably have gathered by now. Our dad didn't find out...our mum found out eventually. He told her, wrote her a letter and my dad didn't find out until Scott died. ...My dad's reaction was, thank God he experienced pleasures of the flesh.
301. (On how Scott told Stephen)...We were walking the streets of LA. We were programming together until late at night and we were taking a break about three o'clock in the morning and he was trying to tell me about his relationship. He was kind of stuttering and stammering about it so I jumped the gun and said, Oh, you got her pregnant. And he said, No, it's not a her. And I said, Wow, tell me about it.
302. ...so I think his first relationship wasn't [REDACTED] It was someone he went to Italy with and slept with in a couple of different countries and then he came back and met [REDACTED]. And so he told me all about the different relationships he had and I was, like, it was shocking in the sense that it was, like, this brand new side

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



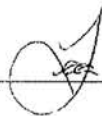
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

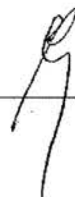
of my brother. Well, it was a couple of days at once, it was homosexuality which I'd never been directly exposed to so, my dad had never taken us to parks full of gay people so I just, like, wanted to hear all about it and wanted to understand it and whether it's an it or whether it's just like being anybody...and I eventually came to understand that...it wasn't an it.

303. ...Then there was the social aspect of it. So you go cruising at Santa Monica Boulevard. How does that work? And is there promiscuity? Is there more promiscuity than heterosexual? So all this, like, it just led to, like, Millions of questions. You could probably understand. My brother and I were constantly, like, we were pretty intellectually engaged. So this was like the topic for a while.
304. ...I think this first guy invited him to Italy and he went with him to Italy and then he, they slept together. So he didn't realise the person was inviting him to Italy to sleep with him but then he discovered it and didn't mind it.
305. ...I think he was always attracted to women but when I say that he suspected it (homosexuality) in high school, I think there was sort of the period of realising that he was also attracted to men, boys.
306. ...He was nervous about telling me and he, I think all the stuff that I felt about the dangers and the challenges, the social challenges, I think he shared as well. I don't think he, it's not like you sign up to be gay and then you go to orientation so you learn all about it. It's sort of, like, he had this new world to learn about that he didn't really understand very well. So I think he had a lot of the same questions. But there was no, there was never any, like, maybe I'm not and I'm trying it out for a while. He was sure he was gay.
307. ...that's why we went to Cambridge to meet his friends there. We went punting together. Do you know what that is?...That's when you hire those little boats on the towns and you push them with a pole... meet his friends and I eventually met [REDACTED]. I think that was like a year later or two years later, something like that. Maybe '86
308. (Scott told him) ...in Cambridge...that was in '84. It started in January and they (Scott and [REDACTED]) were both at Cambridge together.
309. (On communication with Scott in Australia) ...there were a lot of letters back and forth...

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

310. ...(Scott) lived with his boyfriend here (in Australia). I imagine his boyfriend paid the rent, well his boyfriend was full time employed at ANU...
311. ...I didn't have a ton of visibility into what (Scott) did, day to day, week to week while he was here (in Australia).
312. ...I learned from [REDACTED] afterwards that there were some loans from [REDACTED] (to help Scott while he was waiting for his visa) but Scott never mentioned them.
313. (Scott and his sister-in-laws (Mrs Johnson) relationship was)... really close, she was like a sister to him...(Mrs Johnson) was working at (US) Channel 7, she was a, she was a publicist there, and then she ran a, the PR department by the end of it.
314. (Mr and Mrs Johnson's house) was a one-bedroom and one living room, it was 400 square feet, maybe, tiny...I don't think Scott stayed, I felt like he only visited for, like, a short time and he probably slept on the couch, I don't quite how, I don't quite remember how we managed that. Maybe he didn't stay with us, while they (Scott and [REDACTED]) were with us.
315. ...he was very uncertain, he was certain about his own sexuality, so he was certain that, like, he had discovered he was gay, it wasn't like he was wondering he was gay, and he was entering into a new, new world...
316. ...he never really spoke much about his relationship with [REDACTED], so on the trips back to the United States, you know, I think he was a little circumspect about his relationship with [REDACTED]. So, I never really, I, you know, I, I know that he said that [REDACTED] didn't share his interest in things like hiking or outdoors, and I think he also said that, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] was a little prickly about Scott's, Scott's interest in those things, but really didn't get into much detail about their relationship.
317. ...I think [REDACTED], [REDACTED] scoffed at (hiking) like it was a waste of time.
318. ...how (Scott) would cope with the general lack of acceptance in the world, and the violence, and AIDS, and we talked about all those things, and so I can't say that I was totally settled, originally, that he was going to be fine, because those things worried me, and so those were the things we talked about, we talked about them a lot, we talked about them every time we were together, but it didn't,

Witness:



Signature:



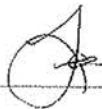
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


it wasn't a question of whether I accepted him as being gay, it was a question of, is my brother going to be okay.

319. (Scott) ...must've been 23 (when he told me he was gay)...I think they all did (know that Scott was gay), all, everyone in Rosemary's family did, it was easy to talk about it...
320. (Mrs Johnson) was very motherly about it, she worried more than I did, about all the things that I just mentioned, and so she wanted Scott to be okay and she felt very protective of her, of her quiet, shy brother, and, and was worried about him, was worried that something like what happened to him would happen.
321. ...he had an actual boyfriend and, but I didn't meet any of these guys, but a boyfriend in the Berkeley area for a short time, but also he had a problem with a room-mate, who fell in love with him, and so he had to move out, I helped him move out, I've helped find another place or something like that, and I think those, those were all the relationships that I knew about.
322. ...we have this unusually liberal family, you know, my sister was, let's see, yeah, an unusually liberal family. My sister dated, my mum dated somebody much younger than her, like I said, she was really beautiful, and so she was probably 30-something when she was dating someone about my sister's age, and so that guy's best friend dated my sister, and they all double-dated. So, there was, like, there was, and my sister was drinking wine with my mum when she was, you know, 14, 15. So, there was not, it's, like, this was not gonna be an issue, just never came up, because my mum never made a habit of asking any of us about anything about ourselves.
323. ...when we both confessed our vegetarianism, we, we, we took heed about that, because then we couldn't enjoy turkey dinner with everybody. I don't think he wanted to go through that process, of just, you know, answering questions about it. So, it wasn't, wasn't like he was worried, he just didn't want to, like, wasn't necessarily something he was going to actively seek to talk about with people.
324. ...I want to be clear that I wasn't, wasn't just, like, Oh yeah, this is fantastic that you're gay. I'm, I'm trying to be as, as honest and open as I can possibly be about my trepidation about this, this choice that he made, because it was going to

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

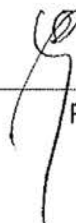
be, for somebody as vulnerable as he was, with the, the way society was then, Wow, you know, it was, like, heavy, it wasn't just, like, Hey, I'm going to embrace this, let's move on, let's go to the movies now.

325. ...I went in with my eyes open and could see that this was going to be a hard life, and actually, when he moved to Australia, part of the reason he decided to move here was because, Australia had just liberalised its gay partnership laws, and so I had this conception that Australia was more accepting, so wow, okay, so this, this is, I never pushed back on, on Australia, except in regard that he was leaving this fantastic university, for Australia, which didn't have a university like that, that was probably the only area that I, that I ever raised with him, as, as something he should think twice about, walking away from Berkeley. But I thought he was coming to a more accepting place...obviously it wasn't.
326. ...remember that we spent the entire summer together, full-time, around the clock, together. So, we had plenty of time to kind of, like, talk, talk it through and then, whenever I was with him, it would be, we would, we would still talk about it, we would talk about what life was like, and whether it was hard or whether it was easy, and whether he was getting along with [REDACTED]. I think, at a superficial level, we, we kept, he, he kind of, would tell me how his relationship with [REDACTED] was going, but yeah, that's, that's how it was.
327. Regarding [REDACTED];
328. ...I've been trying to remember, so he was just about to finish his dissertation and [REDACTED] had lost his job, and they were apparently planning to come back to the United States, because the scholarship that [REDACTED] was interviewing for, the week Scott died, was to come to the United States, the Harkness Fellowship. So, they must've been planning to come back to the States, and of course, [REDACTED] ended up in the States, so and I, I've been trying to remember whether he and I talked about when that was going to happen, and you know, I can't, I can't really remember having a specific conversation with Scott.
329. I think it's probably the nature of the, the doctoral work, but you never quite, because I was a doctoral student for five years and I didn't finish, then I started a company instead, but, you can't, you don't know when you're going finish, it's not like a structured program. So, I don't think he knew when he was going to solve

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

this last problem, it's hard to solve these, and I think it took him several months, and I don't think [REDACTED] knew he was going to lose his job. So, might've been, it might've been something that had just come up, so but apparently they were both planning to come back to the United States.

330. ...I think they (Scott and [REDACTED]) were a permanent item, as permanent as, as relationships go, you know, especially for young 20, 20 year olds.
331. ...I didn't know a ton about [REDACTED]. He came to Cambridge once, and I know that there was, there was a, there was a, he's, he's let's see, you will, you will interview him, it sounds like, he is an interesting fellow. He, I think, got very angry, not to my face, but we heard from Scott, and of course we've heard, you know, and all the documents you guys have read by now, that he was very angry about not being allowed to stay in our house, when we were, when we were in Cambridge, and that was a function of the side of our house, so if they were to stay in our house, they would have slept on our couch, which isn't exactly a great place to stay. So, we, we didn't talk to [REDACTED] directly, because he wasn't there yet, but we, we advised Scott that, Maybe they could get a hotel and be more comfortable there, it was just for one night, as I recall, and so that's what they did, and I think [REDACTED], [REDACTED], like, blew that out of proportion, he was sensitive that that meant something else which it never did.
332. ...So ([REDACTED]) came to visit and it was just a cordial dinner, and that was the only time that I ever met [REDACTED] until Scott died.
333. ...and when I would be with Scott...we didn't spend a, a lot of time talking about [REDACTED], and he, it never sounded like he had any issues with [REDACTED], except that [REDACTED] was pretty dominating. Scott, Scott said that he was, he was, I guess, henpecked, would be the way to put it, [REDACTED] was very fastidious and Scott, Scott would mention things like that.
334. ...I don't remember how (Scott) met ([REDACTED]), precisely.
335. ...that would be [REDACTED] (who initiated their relationship), just because Scott would never initiate a relationship.
336. (the man Scott went to Italy with)...invited Scott to go travel with him, and then hit on him.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

337. ...after, maybe after he died, I re-read those letters and saw that (Scott) did mention [REDACTED] except it wasn't as if they were sleeping together, so yeah, once or twice.
338. (Mr and Mrs Johnson's wedding was in) August 31st in '85 (and Scott's relationship with [REDACTED] started in) January '84...and it wasn't continuous because, remember he went to Berkeley and then he had, like, the room mate who was in love with him, and the other relationship he had while he was at Berkeley, and then I think it just, it, it was a little like when I went to Harvard...
339. ...I wasn't dating my wife, but I realised during that time, that I loved my wife, and so she came and lived with me after that, so, and then we got married. So, that's sort of what happened with Scott, so by the summer of '85, he realised he wanted to be with [REDACTED], he, when he, when he, when I got married, he flew the day after, to go be with [REDACTED] and, in, [REDACTED] had gotten back to Cambridge, he'd gone to Australia in the meantime, and so Scott lived with [REDACTED] for the, for a month or so, I guess, and in Cambridge, and then he came back to...Cambridge.
340. ...I think (Scott) felt like he was (in a full time relationship) with [REDACTED], by that point.
341. ...somewhere in that summer, you know, (Scott) realised he wanted to be with [REDACTED] and I think they probably had corresponded or something, I think that was the assumption, that I was putting him on a plane afterwards, to go be with [REDACTED]. That was quite well understood.
342. ...(Scott) definitely never asked (to invite [REDACTED] to Scott's wedding)
343. There was no reason why [REDACTED] wasn't invited to Stephen's wedding..., remember that (Scott) wasn't, he wasn't with [REDACTED], see, I've tried to be really careful, the way I described it, which is exactly the way I think it was, maybe I'm forgetting some things, but he went through that year at Berkeley, not with [REDACTED], and then I think it, he realised, I'm guessing he realised by the summer that he wanted to be with him, and so the plan was, he would come to my wedding and then go be with [REDACTED]...in Cambridge.
344. (Regarding Mr Johnson's wedding) ...it was great, like, like, it was a good day, and we had our, there's the, the bachelors party, that talk about, talk about

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


times when Scott was uncomfortable with the situation, when he had to give the speech at the wedding, you know, he, it's, like, two hundred people in front of him and he said, I have known Rosemary and Steve for a long time, and I hope they will be very happy. That's his whole speech...He was scared to death, but the, the, the party before, his, my brother-in-law actually put that one together, because I guess, he, he knew that all the people at the strip club and Scott, Scott came along, he had a good time. Yeah, so, it all went well.

345. (Regarding Mr Johnson's impression of [REDACTED]) ...I don't think he ever really liked, liked me much. So, I guess I always had the impression he was a little jealous, or something, but there was, you know, I pick up on those things easily, you know, I don't have a ton of people that, that, like, that I am at odds with, so, so I had the sense from [REDACTED] that he felt, he felt uncomfortable, but that, that was the main thing, you know, it was just that one dinner, so it was just, like, not a lot of data, and you know, I, I guess that impression comes from Scott, as well.
346. ...so Scott would say, like, he would get these jabs from [REDACTED] about things that Scott liked to do, that Scott and I shared in common, programming and, and climbing and so forth. So, I guess I picked up over time that, maybe, there was, like, a little bit of a rivalry or something from [REDACTED]. That, that's all, I didn't really form a really distinct impression of [REDACTED], until I spent time with him when I came here, after Scott died.
347. ...(Scott) always seemed fine, always seemed like he had a decent relationship with [REDACTED].
348. (Scott) would tell me (if he had any relationship problems). So, we were together for five weeks during the last summer of his life, so he stayed with us from July to August 20th, and things seemed fine here, you know. I, he would, could, he would tell heaps, like, we spent tons of time together, when we were together, and we talked about everything.
349. ...but I think, one of the things that Scott mentioned was that [REDACTED], [REDACTED] liked to, like to be with other people, sometimes, and would try to coax Scott into doing the same thing and that it was sort of an okay, okay thing to do, in, in their, in their minor circle of friends, and Scott, Scott felt a little stressed about that, that

Witness: _____



Signature: _____


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

that's not what he liked to do, in a social setting, I guess there would be parties where that would happen. So, that was probably the one thing I can, I can remember, that was specific and a stress-point between them, but didn't seem like a big deal.

350. ...party situations, yes, little bit of an open relationship, like, in a party situation. We've heard that that, that's kind of, that was sort of not uncommon around those, around the time that we're talking about.
351. ...That's what Scott told, that's what Scott told me, that, that, you know, I don't have, like, this, we're talking about 30 years ago, remember. Social situations, [REDACTED] was prone to, to kind of tease Scotty, [REDACTED] calls him Scotty, tease Scotty for not being playful like that...maybe not (about) necessarily (having sex with more than one man) at the same time, you know, (but) in sequence, I don't know.
352. (Scott never mentioned about going to gay beats with [REDACTED]) ...I didn't know the concept of a gay beat, and I didn't know the concept of a place, in America I guess we call them, I don't even know what we call them in America, but it wasn't until much more recently that I heard about places where men would go, and this is, like, after he died, men would go and, like, they would rattle their keys to indicate that they were, they were cruising.
353. Scott and I never talked about those things, and so, part of the issue when Scott died, being told by the police, This is where people jump and, and so he jumped, that I didn't have another, another concept, another scenario I could draw from, so I didn't realise it was a place where you would go and try to meet other people. The fact that he was, he was naked, with his...clothes folded, suggested to me that he was, he was probably there with somebody else, for sex, but I thought he would've gone to the place with that person, as opposed to gone to meet someone. Apparently it was the latter.
354. ...So, I think...we talked about how the gay scene worked, is that, that it was a little bit easier-going about, about sex, in terms of stepping out of a, a relationship, temporarily, just, like, step out just for a little fun, and then step back in, and, can I just, can I, I can't say that these are all the other bad rules, so as, but, and I didn't pass judgment on them, either, I just, like, absorbed it all, OK, I

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

probably reacted the way I'm reacting right now, and, and I think Scott was less comfortable with that, just because it was harder for him to initiate anything, so he was just, like, yeah, I guess that's that.

355. (Scott) never said that (he was fearful that the relationship between him and [REDACTED] would end) ...so I never picked up on any real tension, I never picked up that there was any imminent break-up. They really seemed, they really did seem quite close, and Scott was committed to being here and committed to [REDACTED], it really seemed that way to me, to the very end.
356. ...what (Scott) would say was probably that he wasn't easygoing...he was anything but easygoing...I don't want to put words in Scott's mouth, so he didn't say much, but I do get the impression that [REDACTED] was high-strung, that, that comes to mind.
357. ...I think...in my family, you know, one thing that comes along with, 'don't wonder, don't tell'...is...an attitude of freedom, personal freedom, and it carries over to my kids as well. So my son's dating, dating a girl that has a little baby, and initially that didn't seem like such a great battle for him, to me and my wife. But it's his choice, so it's, like, what can we say, we don't, we don't say, You can't date her. So, so I, I wouldn't have taken [REDACTED] aside and saying, Hey, you better take good care of my, my son, I mean, my brother...So, it was Scott's choice. Scott seemed pretty committed to this man, so I was...I feel, I don't know, kind of upset about the fact that [REDACTED] took, took this as a personal slight, because there was never any personal slight to [REDACTED], on my part, that he was my brother's chosen partner, at that time, and that meant a lot to me.
358. ...I've now re-lived, re-lived this time, with three kids, so got all the same kinds of questions and challenges, and I treat them the same way I treated Scott - which is, it's their choice, and they're making a big decision. I might press them to, to make sure they've thought it all the way through, but that was a, I, I never tried talking them out of it.
359. ...I'm not sure I was aware of it, actually, I don't think I was aware that (Mr [REDACTED]) was older (than Scott), maybe I was, I, I can't remember, no, I didn't react to it at all.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

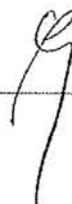
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

360. During the statement, Mr Johnson deferred to Mr Glick in response to inquiries they made with the Canberra School of Music and [REDACTED]. The following is by Mr Glick -
361. The question obviously occurred to us that, why, what, what happened, and [REDACTED] had a temporary position, or an interim position, I'm not sure exactly the technical term, and they did a national, or international search for the, I guess it would be the Chair of the Musicology Department, I think it was, at ANU School of Music, and there was a time of, like, reorganisation at, at ANU, and they did a search, and the person who was in charge was a man named [REDACTED] who chose somebody else to, to, a man named [REDACTED]...I think it's hyphenated, [REDACTED]...became that, took up that position...
362. ... and what we understand from [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], is that [REDACTED] was very upset that he didn't get the job, and that he had expected it, and he was very upset about not getting the job, and there's a couple of different versions of the story from there. One of them is that, this was a, just a political thing that happens at universities, that people who wanted musicology through the sort of more academic version of study, you know, of ancient music versus, sort of, helping people understand, you know, how that fits into a larger context for performing arts, and that kind of thing. So, the performing arts people are kind of winning the political game, and that was reflected in this person's appointment. [REDACTED], [REDACTED] who hired [REDACTED], also made it clear that [REDACTED] was not well-liked by his students, because he was very exacting, yeah.
363. That meant that he treated people, who were music majors, as if they were musicology PhD students, and he expected a lot out of them, and that many of the students had complained that, that [REDACTED] was too harsh with them, and that, at the end of the day, it was just, I get the sense that the, you know, [REDACTED] just felt like this other, this [REDACTED] was a better professor for that school, at the time.
364. Mr Johnson's information continues -
365. Physical Health and Temperament

Witness:



Signature:




P.S.Young

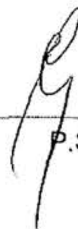
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

366. Regarding what Scott was like socially, Mr Johnson describes him as 'very shy' and 'socially awkward'. He thinks that many social situations were difficult for Scott.
367. His earliest recollection of Scott was when Scott was sent home from school with a note on his shirt from the teacher asking that his parents contact the school. When they talked to the teacher, the teacher wanted to know why they had sent their 'mentally retarded' son to school. His says that his parents were distressed about the teacher who was 'so stupid' not to realise how smart Scott was. He says that this is an example of how Scott's awkwardness was misinterpreted by people.
368. With regards to a level of shyness, Mr Johnson says that he too was shy but that most people did not see it that way because they saw how shy Scott was. They did not know the rules to ball games and so it was 'very stressful' whenever they were exposed to it. He describes them as being like 'two peas in a pod' and how they would have fun together but that in normal social situations Scott was 'quiet and withdrawn and I think often nervous, even when he was older'.
369. Mr Johnson opines that Dennis' treatment of Scott made Scott introverted but adds, '...Actually it took me longer than Scott so I didn't really start to become social and relaxed until I was in my 20s, probably, where (as) Scott (going to college...and he was immediately surrounded by people that he was totally comfortable with. He was a different person completely.'
370. (On long term effects of their upbringing), 'So, I think the past was the past...I do not think anything that happened to us in our childhood left any scars. I think, I think, in fact, over the years I spent time talking to therapists who go back to the past to try, like, dissect it and, you know, I think we, we managed pretty well. Got into good situations in life, you know. We went to, we had fantastic educations and wonderful relationship together...so, I think, yeah, it was tough childhood but we got over it.'
371. (On Scott mixing with groups at high school)...(Scott would) not bother, would be the way to put it...Walking into a party would not be something either one of us ever would have done...'

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

372. (On any aggression in Scott)...I don't think it ever happened after, like age 8 or 9...in our teens, (a fight) never happened. I think there was one time we got into an argument while rolling newspapers. That might be the last one I can remember and I...was twelve and he was ten or something...
373. ...(Scott) never got into confrontations...he would just take it on the chin...that was one of my Mum's frustrations...because he was so compliant...he was not aggressive.
374. (On whether Scott was a neat person) Not really...typical teenage boy...I don't really remember...when we were living together...we're constantly shoving stuff under the bed...that's the easiest way to clean the room. That's all I really remember...his college room...I think as college rooms go it was probably a little bit neater than average but, you know, not, not neat.
375. ...He was always presentable...(what) I liked about going up to Caltech...is that we would not have to worry about taking showers so we would just spend two or three days in the computer room together. They call it trolling, and some guys in there, actually they, the fingernails get really long and they don't smell great. So, yeah, at Caltech, that was one of the liberating things about Caltech. You didn't have to worry about your appearance whatsoever...(Scott found this) Blissful.
376. (On Scott and drugs and alcohol); zero...He and I never, have never puffed. I'm pretty sure he made it all the way to the end of his life without ever puffing a, a marijuana or taking any drugs whatsoever. I'm pretty sure that's the case.
377. (On whether Scott was a risk taker in maths and other things) Yeah, I guess you could say that. He was, he, he learned, over time, that he could do anything and so made him more and more confident...In mathematical sense. He was also a very hardy climber...he...became very strong (in) hiking.
378. (On how Scott's interest in hiking evolved) You know, from me. I had a, a college roommate...getting me into it and the three of us...my college roommate and Scott and I were constantly going on trips and climbing. We hiked, you know, from rim to rim in the Grand Canyon and back. For example, that's about fifty miles. It's not an easy hike. We, we did all kinds of climbing together.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

P.S.Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

379. ...anyway so this (college) interviewer arrived at Scott's high school. Scott, you know, to the end of his life, regarded this as one of his huge...triumphs in terms of rising above his biggest fears which was walking into the faculty dining room to get his teacher to talk to the guy...I can even imagine how terrifying that was. So he got his teacher and brought him to the interviewer and the teacher said, I've been teaching for 30 years (and) I will never have a student as brilliant as this kid...
380. (Scott had) perfect health...I had (chicken pox and measles) but he didn't have those...we didn't go to doctors or dentists. Almost never in our lives.
381. ...both of us were really strong climbers...he was at least as strong as I was and (vegetarianism) never was a problem.
382. ...the years of living with mum and Dennis were, you know, I'm not sure that that would constitute clinically depressing, but they were pretty, like, dismal. But after that, no. He, he never talked about being depressed after that.
383. ... introverted is probably the wrong word (to describe Scott), socially awkward, so uncomfortable in, in many types of social situations...Caltech wasn't one of them, so it was easy to cope with. So it wasn't like he was averse to people or had a tough time talking to somebody...just various types of social situations made him feel awkward.
384. (Scott did not seek help from psychologist or a workshop about being more assertive)
385. ...You know, going through the check-out, standing at a grocery store was probably where you'd see him be the most awkward...talking to a cashier and trying to get the right change was a painful experience to watch, even till he was 28, or 27, rather...those simple types...like ordering from a waiter...(he) ...never got the right rhythm for that.
386. ...But being at Caltech and being among his peers, he was totally relaxed and quiet, yes, but you wouldn't, you wouldn't say, you know, if you said something to him he would shrink back.
387. ...You know, it's, it's a little like the, I don't know how to describe that fear. My kids, it's, like, like, lots of people have those types of fears, like, fear of teachers for instance. You know, there's some dynamic with people in authority, I

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

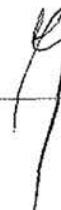
guess, as odd as it sounds, a waiter or waitress, sort of somehow an authority figure.

388. ...our nieces and nephews really love Scott. They would gravitate towards him and he was very comfortable for them to clutch onto or, or talk to...he would gravitate towards people that he felt like he could talk to, so I guess intellectual peers he was really comfortable around. I spent a lot of time with him and his friends at Caltech and then he would hang out with me with my friends. He was always comfortable with them, you know, at the Kennedy School and Harvard. We didn't have a lot of contact with older people. He was quite comfortable with Professor (Richard) Fechauser, so he didn't seem to have a fear of teachers, either, so.
389. ...the shyness was almost, it's painful for me to watch, sometimes, when he was in those, those really tough situations, just because it looked like he was struggling so much with the right thing to say, but most people would feel like he was sweet. So, almost universally, people would call Scott gentle and sweet, and that, that would be kind of the first thing you'd take away from any conversation with Scott.
390. ...It depends on the situation, so he, he would give lectures about his mathematical area, he was completely comfortable, no matter how big the room, but...if it was party that he walked into, yeah, he, he would not be the life of the (party)
391. (Later Mr Johnson says) ...I never witnessed (Scott) in a class
392. ...I think I had that (shyness) problem worse than he did, I think that, like, he was more comfortable in his body than I was, when he was, you know, in school.
393. ...you wouldn't guess this, from everything that I've said already, he was pretty gregarious, so he enjoyed being around Rosemary's family, which could be twenty five, thirty people...he was not a loner...he would be drawn towards groups...especially groups where he was comfortable, so he preferred, you know, sitting quietly in a group, than sitting at home by himself I think...he was gregarious, even though he was quiet.
394. Mr Johnson's theories

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

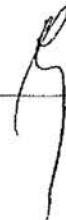
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

395. ...when [REDACTED] called me to tell me Scott's body had been found, it was, it was totally like I had gotten a call from Scott's wife, you know, my brother's spouse...and all the emotion was directed towards him, and that he had, he had lost his lover, and even when I flew here, it was, that was, that was the spirit, so, if that's any gauge of my feelings towards the guy, it wasn't like I saying, you know, God damn you, what'd you do with my brother? I was, Wow, you know, it's, like, I'm, I'm just, like, incredibly sorry, and then coming, and then flying here, I had to fly to Canberra, to meet him there, it was, like, hugs and, and, wow, you know, and walking around their little apartment, looking at my brother's clothes and all the things that, that were indications of Scott, and mourning with his partner, his boyfriend. So that was, it wasn't like I despised him, or despised their relationship, or that Scott was living 10,000 miles away, not at all.
396. ...so [REDACTED] called me to tell me, I got a little, I, I got an emergency visas. I remember, and got right on a plane within 24 hours, I think. So I was here within 36 or so, two days. So his body was found Saturday morning, and then I got here on Monday, I believe. And [REDACTED] had me fly to Canberra. And I didn't really understand the geography much, so I sort of thought Canberra was a suburb of Sydney. So after, after hugging and kind of, lots of tears, it's crushing for both of us, then I realised I was three hours away from Sydney, and I really wanted to talk to police, because I really wanted to know what happened to Scott. So I was a little surprised to find out that we were three hours away from Sydney. And, and [REDACTED], [REDACTED] was, was surprised that I wanted to talk to police, and asked, asked a bunch of questions like, you know, I think the first thing on my mind was, was phone calls, so did the police check phone records?
397. I had all these questions, all the normal questions that you get from just watching cop shows on television. So how about the investigation, how did his body end up at the bottom of this cliff? And so we ended up driving up to, to Manly, [REDACTED] drove, and I came into the police station, which was not this one, the one just down the street, and met with Constable Hardie, and he was very sorry that I'd lost my brother, but the first thing he told me was, this is where people go to jump, and especially homosexuals.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

398. You knew your brother was homosexual, right? I, I did know that. I, I kind of took it on faith that, that he was right about the first part of it, that this is where people go to jump, and it wasn't until many years later that I learned people jump from a different place in North Head, like, the opposite side, and when Dan (Mr Glick) and I established that this was a gay beat, that that might explain why he was naked. And that was never mentioned to me, so, so I'm in the police station, and really no one wants to investigate this. Constable Hardy wasn't going to investigate it. The only statements that had been taken were from [REDACTED], it was three paragraphs, and from the professor, I think had been talked to already, who was the last person to talk to Scott.
399. That was, that was the whole investigation. It was all done. So I stayed here in Lane Cove at [REDACTED]'s family's house, where, where, and [REDACTED] and I stayed there together, where Scott had been staying. And so while [REDACTED] was planning the funeral and [REDACTED] arranged cremation of Scott's body and, and, something he said Scott wanted, and then while [REDACTED] was taking care of that, I was busy here at the police station trying to ask for an investigation and trying to ask, Did you take his picture to places on The Corso to find out if anyone would recognise him?
400. It was like no one wanted to, I mean, Constable Hardie just thought I was kind of nuts, I think. He was sympathetic, but he just thought that I was asking questions about someone who'd jumped, was the way he was treating me. So that was pretty, pretty tragic, you know? It was tragic to, like, how could you not wonder what his phone, what his last movements were. It was like, no curiosity whatsoever of how Scott got there, not even three lines from your documents occurred to the police to ask. It was done when I got here. And I had lost my brother, and I had to get home to arrange a funeral there, and I'm torn here, because I don't know why he died and no one wants to help. And I've got a family back home that wants to know what happened, and I've got a funeral that I need to have, and I've got a brand new baby, 'cause I just had a baby four weeks earlier.
401. I knew Scott couldn't have jumped, couldn't have jumped for so many reasons. Certainly wouldn't have left, wouldn't have done it without a clue. It's

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



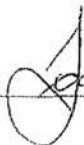
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

like, he had the letter announcing our baby, his first niece, under his pillow at the Lane Cove house.

402. (The matter of a letter being under Scott's pillow has not been mentioned by Mr Johnson or anyone else to police previously)
403. He didn't jump off this cliff. And the fact that he was naked. And when I got back to school, this student of mine who, who then became chairman of the department after he graduated, had been a Scotland Yard detective for 20 years, and he told me that he had never heard of a jumper naked, so, you don't take your clothes off to jump off a cliff.
404. And that was presented to me as the reason it was clear that he jumped. It's ritual suicide. I knew it wasn't any such indication. He took his clothes off to sunbake and he was probably with somebody, so let's find out who it was. Let's find out how he got there without any change in his pocket, like, he made it all the way from Lane Cove on public transit and he has nothing in his pockets? He doesn't have his wallet? Where's his wallet?
405. Constable Hardie just kept listening to me...and he did not react to one single one of my questions, not even one. And so I started just, like, listing them, and this eventually became, became a document that was lots of pages long, that Doreen Cruickshank, who eventually took over the case, because when I went back to the Kennedy School, my professors kicked into gear and they all had friends here and talked to John Avery...and Ted Kennedy made inquiries, and then it got, it was going to be, like, history if none of that had happened.
406. Sorry, I'm going to sound a little this is not directed at you guys. I'm really appreciative that we're in this room. So, so anyway, because this nuisance of an American won't shut up about this case, and he has all these important friends, then I guess we better have an inquest. And so an inquest was scheduled, and this got handed over to Doreen Cruickshank, who took it on as her responsibility to prove that it was suicide, and she didn't do an investigation either...
407. ...I had, in spending all the time that I spent with [REDACTED], had heard so many different versions of his story about Scott's movements that week that I was curious what he was hiding. And it wasn't that I was suspicious of him. I thought he was either hiding that they had broken up and Scott actually did kill himself, or

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

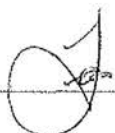
much more likely, because of the fact that he was naked, it just strongly, strongly, strongly seemed to me that Scott had been with somebody, and maybe it was a friend of [REDACTED]'s, because basically, most of Scott's friends here in town were [REDACTED]'s friends. He had some friends from Macquarie University, but mostly they were [REDACTED]'s friends, and I thought that it was a strong possibility.

408. I think differently now, just because I know it was a gay beat. Back then, I didn't know it was a gay beat. I didn't know what a gay beat was. Empty pockets. He rode over there with some friend, was my working hypothesis, I guess, caught a ride up there, and they took their clothes off and then somehow Scott slipped off or got pushed off. Now my theory is, this guy came here 'cause he had heard of this really cool beat that was rustic, and he liked to hike, and it was dramatic, 'cause there were these great cliffs.

409. We've talked to so many gay guys now that, I mean, everyone knew it was a gay beat. It was a very popular place to go, especially the guy that we were with yesterday said it was the shy man's beat. He says, it makes perfect sense that your brother would come here, because it's so much easier than going to Oxford Street. Maybe you're going to be recognised. Back in the eighties, that was more of an issue. Now it's not, but back in the eighties, you wouldn't necessarily go to Oxford Street, especially if you were shy. So it was the place where out of towners would come and, and, it was fabulous, this guy we were with yesterday, it was fabulous. He started really getting into it, 'cause he used the beat back in those days. And, man, you take your clothes off and celebrate. You know, you can lay down, and before you know it, someone comes along, and you kind of check each other out, and, and if you're OK, then, then you have a great time, he said...

410. So [REDACTED] didn't, didn't give me the gay beat scenario either. He was very, very closed. So we were in Canberra, and I was asking questions like, what about phone records, what about, I mean, I didn't have any information down in Canberra, so I didn't even know that he didn't have his wallet and, and his pockets were empty and all these things that sort of alarmed me, that he was with somebody or he got robbed or something.

Witness:



Signature:




P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

411. ... [REDACTED], he, he at one point in our conversation just said, you know, just like Scotty said, you're very detail-oriented. I think was his reaction to my asking all these questions. That was his total take. He didn't give me any, any scenarios or specifics. When I got into the police station, I was shocked from Hardie to find out that [REDACTED] had mentioned this Golden Gate Bridge incident, 'cause [REDACTED] hadn't mentioned it to me. So [REDACTED] had already been there. I'm sure you guys know the whole sequence of events.
412. ...we did a lot of hiking and, and skinny-dipping. I think we always had our, our, our shorts on. So it wasn't like we, we weren't, like, avid nudists. So, but it didn't shock me that he was naked if he was with somebody. I could barely imagine Scott, you know, all the scenarios that went through my head when he was found, like, suicide wasn't, didn't seem even, even consistent with all the information. So sunbaking, that word wasn't in my vocabulary either, but sunning himself naked sounded like a reasonable possibility. That, that was not out of, out of the range of possibility.
413. ...the thing that struck me the most was that he didn't have anything to write with or write on. And that was a long trip, because if you took public transit all the way from Lane Cove, that was probably a two or three hour trip, and he, he would have gone nuts not having something to write on or write, or read. So lots of things jumped out at me when I heard about what, what was found with him.
414. ...he had a little plastic thing that he had in his shirt pocket that had his student ID and, I think, some sort of transit pass, and then he had a folded \$10 bill inside. That was all the money that was found on him, and there wasn't anything in his pockets, which just shocked me, because as you take buses, you just, like, you know, you have a Coke here and you have, transfer there, and you collect stuff in your pockets. Totally empty. Sounded like he hopped in a car. That's just, was my take back then.
415. There was a pen but no paper, and, and that was about it. There was no wallet. And I know, I know his wallet quite well. It was a vegetarian wallet. It was a, it was, like, a beach wallet with the Velcro on it. And [REDACTED], when he left town, pointedly said that he turned around 'cause he realised he had Scott's wallet. That was on the Monday before he died. So I know there was, like, a

Witness:



Signature:



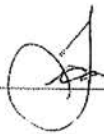
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

wallet, and it was never found anywhere. That was kind of strange, to say the least...so maybe he wrote a note that floated away...

416. Hardie took me to the completely wrong place, so when Hardie walked me up there it was very disturbing at the inquest to look at the actual pictures of where Scott's body was in relation to where Hardie took me...
417. ...so there's this little trail that goes up, and there is this wall from long ago. And there's this little hole in the wall right here, and the trail goes through, and then it keeps going until a road. There's a road up here that cars go on. And so, Scott's body was found over here, well past this hole in the wall. And it turns out if you go through the hole in the wall and then turn left against the cliffs, it's pretty easy to make your way all along those cliffs, and there are all these slabs along the way. And that was the, that was the beat. And it's great, 'cause it's sort of secluded, it only takes seven minutes to walk to this point and then a few more minutes to walk along here, and apparently from all the people that we've talked to, back then it was just, like, quite a scene...
418. ...I guess, you know, I'm not, I'm not current on, on the contents of Scott's wallet. I know he had some pictures. He had several pictures. And he had IDs of various types. He had his ATM card. There was an ATM slip found in his, in the contents of his little pocket protector, I think. That was the other thing that was in there. Things like that. You know, he was a student at ANU and a student at Macquarie. He must have had a couple of student IDs.
419. ...(Scott would usually keep the wallet) ...in his left back pocket...I don't think he, he would have left (to go out) without his wallet.
420. ...I would have, I would have guessed a backpack or some sort of, especially with the cross-town trip, however that went, some sort of, something else. I, I, I would have had one. This is not, I mean, this, there's no way to hike for more than 20 minutes up there, so it's not, like, a big deal. So I wouldn't have expected water bottle and lunch and things like that.
421. ...one possible explanation (of why Scott went to Manly) is that it's out of town, and so he doesn't have to worry about being recognised. Another one is, I'm obviously a horrible drawer, but, so I'm not going to do this one justice either. So here's, here's, North Head, how does this go? I think it goes sort of like this.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

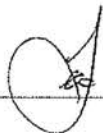
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Okay Sydney's that way, this is, this is North Head, and this is Manly. This is, so this is where we are. On the Sunday before Scott died, [REDACTED], this goes to the answer to the question about nudity, also. [REDACTED] and Scott went to Obelisk Beach. Something that occurred to me just recently, so back then I, again, I didn't know about Obelisk Beach, and I didn't know about this gay beat. But now that I do know those things and I know [REDACTED] and Scott were at Obelisk Beach, which is, which is a nude gay beach, and so they were there nude, and looking over at North Head, it's kind of logical to me that Scott might have looked over there at a pretty dramatic, rustic place and thought, okay, now that I'm done with my dissertation work, I'm going to go hiking. Or if he knew it was a gay beat because he heard that from somewhere, I'm going to go there for that beat, because it sounds really cool.

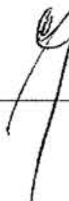
422. There's some hiking and there's, I don't want to, I don't want to mention any, any specific names, but the photographer we were with yesterday for Who Magazine, so we pull into Shelley Beach parking lot, and he immediately starts talking to me about the thing, well, Scott's case and about this whole thing, because he says, I'm gay, and wow, it's, like, great that you guys haven't let go of this case. And then we started talking about beats, and he said, and I said, Do you think it would be natural for, for someone who's using this beat up here to pick somebody up in the bars down here and then go there with them? He said, No, are you kidding me? You come up here and you cruise. It was as natural as goin' to the movies. We just had this conversation yesterday with this guy.

423. Everyone we talked to, it's like, this was, this was a natural thing to do. And how do you know it's a beat? And he looks around this parking lot, and he says, be a pretty good guess that this was a beat, just because you have a nice parking lot, and you've got a secluded area, and your guess would be, this would be a place, back in the seventies and eighties, that this would be a beat. OK, so how's that for an answer? Like, don't go to a beat in your own backyard, because the neighbours might see you. Go to a beat that's actually in an interesting place that's, that's out of town or you're not going to be recognised. That's my best guess.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

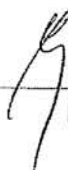
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

424. ...I asked [REDACTED] that question (about if Scott and he had a fight) many times, and I, I asked him in so many ways. Look, if you guys had a falling out and you know that he killed himself, just tell me. Please tell me. You know, it's, like, not like I can't handle it. And he, he just insisted that, that they were fine, and he was shocked, and this couldn't be suicide, and he was, he was quite adamant about that. I worried that, that, you know, back in those days, it was, it was, everyone was in the closet. [REDACTED] was in the closet, his parents didn't know, all of their friends, most of their friends were in the closet. And so I thought, you know, maybe, maybe [REDACTED]'s trying to resist my efforts to start an investigation because everyone's going to get, doesn't want to get involved in an investigation, so they might be outed. That was just something that I thought.
425. Maybe [REDACTED] knows who Scott was with and wants to protect that person, so maybe he got a call from a person, Scott slipped off the cliff, or whatever. Shoot, I didn't know what to think. I didn't have a lot of scenarios to imagine. And it wasn't until I learned it was a beat, and I learned it from [REDACTED], so it was [REDACTED] who sent me the articles in 2005, suddenly get these two articles about Operation Taradale and Milledge's verdict in the mail from [REDACTED] ..
426. ...Well, there's all sorts of ways. Imagine laying there sunbaking. There's all sorts of scenarios, and obviously we don't know which one it was. Laying there sunbaking, the thugs arrive. You jump up, because you're not going to keep laying there. Like, easy to gently push someone in the wrong direction.
427. ...in the right circumstances, pretty high (chance of Scott fighting off three teenage boys)...I can imagine being so surprised...
428. ...I don't know what happened to (Scott's) property. I was re-reading the depositions, or the transcript from the inquest, and I know that, unfortunately, there's no picture of his, the stack of clothes, because the Constable first on the scene, which is, which is Ludlow, picked up the stack and brought them down to the parking lot to Troy Hardie, where Troy laid them out and then took a picture of them, so, and then we don't know what happened to his property. Maybe [REDACTED] has it, I'm not sure, I, I don't have his property.
429. (When Mr Johnson heard about the way Scott's clothes were folded, he thought) that...(Scott) was planning to put them back on.

Witness:



Signature:

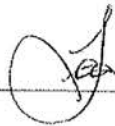


P.S.Young

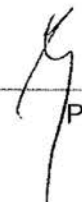
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

430. ...So, we've, we've gone swimming together, many times in the wild, like I said, and we keep our shorts on, but fold up our clothes, that was, yeah, fold your clothes, set in a pile, that was pretty standard, yeah...I actually fold them, we just, we would fold them, and I, I wouldn't say we had a pattern. Didn't surprise me that (Scott's) clothes were folded like, like that.
431. ...back then in the 80s, when I thought that he was just up there with some, with somebody that he had met, or some friend of theirs, I thought maybe he, you know, something happened on the birthday party, for instance, where [REDACTED] was fooling around, or there was some joking or whatever, and so Scott ended up doing the same thing. That was sort of one thing that I was thinking about back then and, and even today, like, going to the beat. Yeah, he, he maybe was just, like, stepping out, sneaking out, having' fun...
432. ...I don't know if there was any indication whatsoever of a relationship problem or something going wrong with his life. I can say something absolutely certainly is, it is impossible to solve a (math) problem at the level that he solved that problem, if you're distressed about stuff, like, and that, that was, like, signal in my mind, like, he called his professor and delivered this final proof, and there was stuff going wrong in his life? I don't think so, it's, like a puzzle, so, it seemed just really inconsistent with, he finished, and then he was going to stay the weekend and Sydney, and then he went off for a, a hike, or some fun.
433. ...didn't even have to be a payback, it was, like, [REDACTED], I know [REDACTED] teased him about not being willing to do that, and [REDACTED] even told me, now that I am thinking more, kind of immersing myself, that long drive from Canberra I think he mentioned once or twice, you know, Scotty would have a hard time, you know, having fun at parties. So, maybe he was rising to the occasion, I don't know, maybe he was, like, doing what, what [REDACTED] was encouraging him to do (that being having sex with other men)...([REDACTED] and I) never got into the details, I imagine all of those things were possible.
434. ...I think (that was kosher in the gay community at that time)...certain circles of friends, that was cool.
435. ...(Scott) He'd probably struggle a little with the casual, but there were some other instances that [REDACTED]'s reported, of Scott having sex with other people. I

Witness: _____



Signature: _____


 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

guess he...this came out in the inquest. I don't think he read it in a statement, I can't remember but, that Scott got crabs from somebody that he slept with, and he scolded them about that, that was the way [REDACTED] put it. So, it seemed like it wasn't a deal-breaker, even if he ended up with crabs. So, I would've drawn the line there. And then there was another incident, that I can't remember the details of, that [REDACTED] mentioned. So, Scott was not, it seemed like Scott was capable of having sex with other, other people.

436. .. [REDACTED] went to great lengths to keep (his parents) from knowing (that he was gay).
437. .. [REDACTED] told me he was the Executor of Scott's Will, and that he had the right, the Power of Attorney, I guess, is the way he put it, to decide that, and that that's what Scott told him. At that time I was pretty trusting of [REDACTED] and I just, like, OK, and before I knew it, Scott was cremated, so, literally, before I knew it, he was cremated. So, I didn't get a chance to see Scott's body, or anything...I've just lost, lost my train of thought...Turned out he wasn't the Executor of Scott's Will.
438. ...I only know that from [REDACTED]'s information, so it sounded like (Scott's estate had) a thousand, yeah, a couple of thousand dollars, or something...I guess [REDACTED] had kept it. I, I didn't ask for it, either, so [REDACTED] asked me to help pay for the funeral. I believe I did that...
439. ...we have talked to the person who fired [REDACTED] (at the Canberra School of Music), but I'd prefer not to, I think he prefers to stay off the record. His, his contract was terminated, it was nothing, nothing criminal.
440. ...that (person they referred to earlier) was from Who Magazine...you're not supposed to remember that, though...he didn't, he didn't know of this specific beat but he knew how beats worked and he looked around and said, Yeah, this is a beat.
441. ...but, but the person with the knife in his back, named [REDACTED], is that who you're talking about, the person
442. ...I think it was difficult for me to get any answers, and I think [REDACTED], [REDACTED] started taking my questions as if they were personal attacks, or something. [REDACTED] got very, he got very strange and then hostile during that

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

- time, so eventually I was asked to leave that house because I couldn't stop asking questions, I guess, or [REDACTED], [REDACTED] was really adamant that I should just stop asking questions, and so then he started telling people that I was suspecting him and accusing him of killing Scott, which is, none of that was true.
443. ...I stayed in (Scott's) room, I slept in that bed for a couple of nights, and there was no wallet...I can't remember looking for an overnight bag. It occurred to me afterwards, I guess, that there should've been some sort of bag that he used to transport stuff from, but I can't, it's so fuzzy now...
444. (Regarding a letter that Stephen claims to have found under Scott's pillow at the Lane Cove house) ...That was the letter from me, I actually have that now, announcing the birth of his niece...It was probably (posted to Scott)...close to October 23rd, so towards the end of October.
445. ...There was, well, no, there was another (post item sent to Scott), there was a video that I made, probably a week later, and then there was a letter that I also have, that I sent along with the video, and he was, [REDACTED] had told me that he was looking for a way to translate the video, because...was US format, instead of Australian format, so he hadn't seen it yet.
446. ...I got back to the United States, after this very frustrating couple of weeks...and then everyone got their friends to help...order an inquest
447. ...and then my professor realised that the computer that Scott had, was Harvard's property, and then I realised, Oh, there's a computer involved, maybe there's stuff on the computer that could help us answer what was going on in Scott's life. So, then we tried to, Harvard got in touch with [REDACTED] to ask for the computer back, and [REDACTED] refused to give it back, and then we had to go through a, like, a police intervention to, to seize the computer and [REDACTED] insisted on erasing all the contents on the computer. It's all very awful. So then, Harvard said, can't erase everyone on the, on the hard, hard disc, because some of it belongs to Harvard, and some of it is the work that Scott was doing for Harvard, and why isn't it all Harvard's because, this was Harvard talking, because why would [REDACTED] have stuff on it? But [REDACTED] insisted that the disc get erased, and so it finally got erased, and then that computer got sent back, so we never got anything out of the computer.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

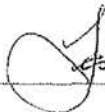


P.S. Young

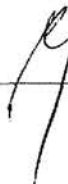
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

448. ...I think [REDACTED] gave me, think, couple of items of (Scott's) clothing, that's all I can remember, maybe a picture or two, like, I ended up with Scott's, Scott's Caltech gym shorts, for whatever reason. I think they meant something, meant, it was a token of Scott that I wanted to keep.
449. ...So, just a couple of observations. Putting, putting myself in Scott's shoes, had he being suddenly surprised by somebody and jumping up, you know, I've been to those cliffs two thousand times now and the eye could easily see, being caught off your guard and easy to knock over the cliff, even if you're real reaction might be that, try to defend yourself. That's number one.
450. Number two, if somebody goes up to have sex with you, and they are really intending to hurt you, that's probably the easiest scenario, to pick the moment when you can push the person over. I, I think that, that's what's happened over in Bondi, and that's what happened to the fellow with the...knife in his side, that the person he was with just turned on him, and then being ambushed while you're having sex with somebody else, another scenario where you can imagine, you know, there is some commotion and then somebody, somebody ends up, ends up going over.
451. So, so yeah, I think if two guys accosted Scott in a, in an alley, Scott would fight back, but in a situation like that, where, if you're near the edge of the cliff, it'd be easy, I imagine. So, on the misadventure aspect, Scott was quite confident and, and, and cautious in situations like this, we've been in hundreds of them together. We spent three hours, I, I remarked to the photographers yesterday, we all spent three hours, like, right over here, and then right over here. I was for, like, this far from the edge of this cliff, all morning. No one even thought about it, it was, like, it is, it is, like, really hard that, put yourself in a situation where you're going to accidentally slip off those cliffs, and I have a feeling, and I'm not even apprised of the numbers, that that does not happen around here, very often, especially by experienced climbers.
452. ...I was trying to think about other things that I've missed, or that we haven't talked about...I strongly feel this, even in my darkest moments, where I feel like Scott, maybe there was a fight, or maybe there was some reason why Scott just

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

wanted to end his life, he would've, he would've given me some sort of message, he wouldn't have just left it.

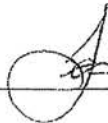
453. That's, that's what seals it for me, that I, I can't say that I ever know for sure, that somebody is not capable of suicide, I don't know that you're not, I don't know that I'm not, and it's, like, I have never said, at any point, that it's impossible, but, but what's, what feels impossible is that he would do it without a sign, so that it would be a total mystery for the rest of everyone's life. So, I think that's pretty important.

454. I think, when, when I woke up on this case again, after [REDACTED] sent me those news articles and suddenly I see the gay beat scenario and that hate gangs. I didn't know that it was a gay beat, so I didn't know until I hired Dan, because I travelled here right after I got those articles and talked to the Manly Police again, and they very cordially took my information, and then they couldn't, they wouldn't return my calls, and so finally, I hired Dan to come here and spend some time, because I was busy running my company and Dan gets up in the morning, his first morning here and runs, runs up here and talks to a couple of people, a couple of workers, because there is a facility up here, and they said, Yeah, we see guys up there all the time, and, and back in the 80s, that's very common...

455. ...and then...the coincidence that, starting from no knowledge whatsoever, he was naked on this, on this rock, then all these deaths happen in Bondi, because people were pushed off of cliffs and a gay beat, and then that turns out to be a gay beat, or violence was rampant, up and down the coast here, even you know I see, my scale's wrong, there's a, a toilet block right down here, where some, someone was killed.

456. The week I was sitting in the Manly Police Station, someone was killed in a toilet block, just a few, half a mile from, from Shelly Beach parking lot. So the violence was there, the setting was definitely a gay beat, that's been corroborated so many dozens of times. We have heard, since the Australian story aired, we've gotten a couple of dozen stories, well, hundreds of stories, but a couple of dozen that actually are salient.

Witness:



Signature:

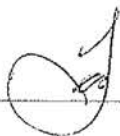


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

457. Some were, some from family members who, some we're talking to tomorrow, they lost their son in the same spot, they recognised it from the helicopter ride, in the, in the show, and their son was, was found at the bottom of the cliff, with his trousers around his legs. The police told them that it was a gay beat. So, the knowledge was there, and they told them that it was, the conclusion was misadventure. So, police knew there was a, a beat, have known for, during that time, they had known for at least 10 years that it was a beat, it was a popular one... [REDACTED] and he had been up there many times, you know, throughout the decades...
458. ...you asked me on the phone yesterday, why was Scott chosen, why was he, why was he killed, if he was killed? I think it was because, because people who hated homosexuals, went up there and killed them, and I don't know the scenario, whether they ambushed him, or whether they lured him, or trapped him, or surprised him, and I think it was very common.
459. We, we have at least six stories of people who, who have died on those cliffs, it sound like it fits the pattern and then, as you'll hear, if we've got more time today, hundreds of other cases along the beaches, of assaults. So, that's, I think that that's my best guess of what happened.
460. Stephen started his current business after Scott died.
461. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC RECORDING AND TRANSCRIPTION
462. [REDACTED]
463. [REDACTED] has provided three written statements, inquest evidence, and an electronically recorded statement in this matter. They are summarised here.
464. On 11 December 1988 he provided an identification statement in relation to the body of Scott. In the statement his describes his relationship with Scott as a 'friend' of five years. They share an address at [REDACTED] Blacket Street, Downer in the Australian Capital Territory.
465. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
466. In his statement on 11 December 1988, [REDACTED] provides the additional information that he is a lecturer at the Canberra School of Music and he describes himself as a 'very good friend' of Scott.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

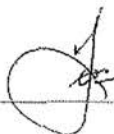


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

467. He describes Scott as being of 'exceptional character', high intellectual, and a highly regarded mathematician in Australia and the United States. He says that Scott was a man of 'impeccable integrity'.
468. He says that Scott was universally well liked, though he was reserved and shy. He says that Scott had successful relationship with no known recent personal problems, psychological or behavioural difficulties. He knows of no medical problems. Scott was vegetarian who did not smoke or drink and was a model of health. He never knew Scott to take any type of drug, including aspirin.
469. Scott was a graduate of Cambridge and Berkley University and at the time of his death was pursuing a PhD at the Australian National University. Scott did not feel pressured by his studies but relished the challenges of his studies and was a high achiever who never failed to reach his goals.
470. He states that he believes there is a possibility that Scott belonged to a group at high risk of HIV/AIDS infection.
471. ██████████ recalled that Scott had mentioned making a suicide attempt which took place about five years prior. No further detail of the suicide attempt is included in the statement.
472. To his knowledge the last person to see Scott alive was ██████████ (██████████'s sister) on 5 December 1988.
473. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
474. In his statement of 12 February 1989, ██████████ further explains that his contract with the Canberra School of Music terminates on 28 February 1989.
475. He described Scott as a shy, quiet and retiring person. Scott often found it difficult to be with people with whom he was unacquainted and he did not make friends easily. Scott had a good relationship with ██████████'s friends and family.
476. In ██████████'s opinion Scott accepted his homosexuality and was comfortable in their relationship. He states that Scott was concerned that his brother Stephen, 'did not seem fully accepting of (Scott's) sexuality'.
477. ██████████ was aware that from time to time Scott engaged in sexual activity with other men and that such encounters were followed by him being depressed and remorseful. ██████████ recalls a previous suicide attempt by Scott (possibly in 1983) after being unfaithful.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

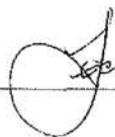


P.S. Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

478. In the last couple of days prior to his death he was his normal self and did not appear to be depressed adding, 'although, Scott was a very private person who was reluctant to discuss matters which affected his personal life'.
479. On 1 August 1986 Scott and [REDACTED] had previously attended the Public Trustees Office in Canberra and made separate Last Will and Testaments and were beneficiaries to each other upon death. The Public Trustee was executor. Scott had on loan a personal computer from Harvard University which was given to Mr Brett Carruthers of the Public Trustees Office after the death.
480. After the death [REDACTED] searched their Canberra home, and the bedroom used by Scott at [REDACTED] Lane Cove. He found no indications of a reason for Scott's death. Their friends and family are also at a loss as to the underlying cause of his death.
481. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
482. An eight page document independently prepared by [REDACTED] is annexed to his statement. It includes -
483. They have known each other since January 1984 when they were both studying at Cambridge University in the United Kingdom and entered an exclusive gay relationship until Scott completed his studies and returned to the USA on 12 June 1984.
484. On 19 December 1984 Scott returned to the UK to visit [REDACTED] and then returned to the USA on 21 January 1985.
485. On 20 March 1985 [REDACTED] travelled to Boston, USA and was introduced by Scott to his brother Stephen who was living with his girlfriend, Rosemarie. Scott told [REDACTED] that whilst either of them could stay at his brother's place, they 'would not be welcome together'. Scott had already booked a hotel for them to stay together.
486. By this [REDACTED] understood that Stephen did not approve of their relationship adding that nothing since that time has made him feel that Stephen accepts him or his relationship with Scott. They stayed together in Oakland, USA until 5 June 1985, when presumably [REDACTED] returned to the UK.
487. About 3 September 1985, being two days prior to Scott joining [REDACTED] in the UK, [REDACTED] had received a phone call from Scott telling him that he had

Witness:



Signature:



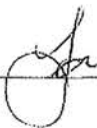
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

made an unsuccessful attempt to jump to his death from the Golden Gate Bridge in San Francisco. [REDACTED] says the Scott was calling from San Francisco. Scott explained that the reason was that he had contracted HIV/AIDS and was distressed for himself and for their relationship. [REDACTED] says that he offered support and positive reassurances to Scott.

488. On 5 September 1985 Scott flew to the UK to stay with [REDACTED] until 28 December 1985. They never spoke of the suicide attempt to each other after the phone call of 3 September 1985. However, as [REDACTED] was distressed he told two English friends who he does not name.
489. On 28 December 1985 he left the UK for the ACT to take up a position a lecturer and Head of Department of Musicology at the Canberra School of Music.
490. On 30 December 1985 Scott flew from the UK to Cambridge, Massachusetts where he stayed with his brother Stephen and they worked together for Professor Fechauser.
491. In 1985 Scott applied for and was accepted to undertake a PhD in Mathematics at the ANU.
492. On 4 May 1986 Scott entered Australia on a student visa and they commenced living together in an exclusive relationship at Waramanga, ACT before moving to their current address at [REDACTED] Blacket Street, Downer, ACT on 11 February 1987.
493. He describes their relationship as strong and committed as shown by Scott's application for permanent resident status on 14 April 1987.
494. On 17 June 1988 [REDACTED] travelled to the UK for a period of study leave and returned on 19 August 1988. On 5 July 1988 Scott travelled to the UK for a mathematics conference at Sussex University from 10 to 15 July 1988. They had a few days holiday together before Scott flew to the USA to visit his brother Stephen on 18 July 1988.
495. In letters from Mr Johnson to Scott dated 26 April 1988 and 18 May 1988, Mr [REDACTED] explains that Mr Johnson expressed an intention to discuss Scott's personal life with him on that visit. According to [REDACTED], Scott was concerned about this and although [REDACTED] understands that the discussion took place, he does not remember being told any of the details.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

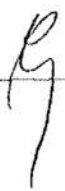
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

496. ██████ states that Scott placed an 'extremely high premium upon gaining his brother's approval and esteem'.
497. ██████ also says that Scott's failure to visit his parents during that visit is perhaps indicative of his estrangement from them which ██████ had perceived from him.
498. On 20 August 1988 Scott arrived back in Australia and was the last overseas trip prior to his death.
499. From the beginning of 1987 Scott made weekly visits to Sydney from the ACT for a regular math seminar on Wednesdays alternating between Sydney and Macquarie Universities. On these occasions he stayed at ██████'s parental home at ██████ Lane Cove. The Sydney study commitments in 1988 grew and sometimes Scott stayed at the Lane Cove house for a week to facilitate the study. Scott became close to his parents and sister, ██████.
500. ██████ held two birthday parties for Scott, one of the 27 November 1988 at the home of their friend, ██████, at Canberra, and one at the Lane Cove home on Saturday 3 December 1988. He lists the people who attended the Lane Cove party, including his sister, ██████.
501. Scott had been staying at the Lane Cove house that week and ██████ drove up from Canberra on 3 December 1988. His parents were away on holiday, starting on 26 November 1988 and until 10 December 1988.
502. On 4 December 1988 ██████ and Scott spent the day together and went to the beach (Obelisk) beach in the afternoon. They stayed together at the Lane Cove house that night. That day they spoke at length about the pending termination of ██████'s work contract on 28 February 1989, the negative consequences but also positive opportunities to engage in other work, including a Harkness Fellowship interview that he had in Melbourne on Friday 9 December 1988. Scott did not express any negative issues or concerns that he had.
503. On Monday 5 December 1988 ██████ left the Lane Cove house about 9.30am to collect his birth certificate from the Registry for the purpose of the interview before continuing on to their home in Canberra. He had to wait for the certificate until about 3.30pm at which time he discovered that Scott had left his wallet in the car so he drove back to Lane Cove where he handed Scott the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

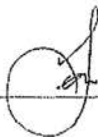

P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

wallet. [REDACTED] was also at the house. Scott wished him luck with the Harkness interview and a safe drive.

504. [REDACTED] arrived in Canberra on 5 December 1988 and worked in the evening.
505. On Tuesday 6 December 1988 he worked and was taken out for dinner by his students (as a farewell gesture) that evening.
506. On Wednesday 7 December 1988 he worked. He used a school's priority paid envelope to send two letters, that had arrived for Scott at the Blacket address, to the Lane Cove address.
507. On Thursday 8 December 1988 he was driven to the airport by [REDACTED] for his flight to Melbourne for the interview. His flight was scheduled to depart to 9.55am and arrive in Melbourne ten minutes later than scheduled at 11am. He provides details of his movements and meetings in Melbourne. He stayed with his aunt at her flat in Kew.
508. On Friday 9 December 1988 the arrangements that he had made with [REDACTED] to put his car in for service in Canberra while he was away were carried out by her and Megan Aplin.
509. That day in Melbourne, [REDACTED] attended the Harkness Fellowship interview at between 11.30am and 12 midday at the Reserve Bank Building. After the interview he spent time in Melbourne including at an academics union meeting that he had requested regarding underpayment by the Canberra School of Music.
510. About 4.15pm he called [REDACTED] to let her know about the interview, confirm that she would collect him from the airport the next day when the flight got into Canberra at 8.40pm. He also asked [REDACTED] if she had heard from Scott and she had not.
511. That evening at the Kew flat belonging to his aunt he made a number of phone calls. He was able to remotely retrieve a message from the Blacket home answering machine from his sister, [REDACTED], about the arrival there of the priority paid letters for Scott that he had sent. He called her and concluded that Scott had left Sydney and was travelling between Sydney and Canberra possibly on the train, which is the regular way he makes that trip.

Witness: _____



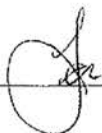
Signature: _____

P.S.Young

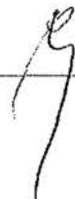
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

512. [REDACTED] states that Scott often used his car, being the one put in for a service on Thursday 8 December 1988 by [REDACTED]. He called the Blacket home to leave a message for Scott about the car being in for a service. He called the Lane Cove home and no one answered.
513. He had not heard from or about Scott for two days by this time and became concerned, but also thought of reasons why he may not be contactable. He spent a few hours with his aunt at her flat and then headed to a hotel in Prahan for a few drinks, returning to the Kew flat via taxi about 12.40am.
514. On the morning of Saturday 10 December 1988 after his aunt had left he made numerous phone calls including checking if Scott had left a message for him on their Blacket answering machine.
515. [REDACTED] called [REDACTED] to ask if Scott had accidentally taken a spare key to their mother's car with him when he returned to Canberra. He called [REDACTED] again and she still had heard nothing of Scott. He spoke to his father who had recently returned to the Lane Cove home. On Friday or Saturday he also called [REDACTED] who was in Sydney. [REDACTED] says that he was so concerned that he stayed in the Kew flat to be near the phone with the exception of going to the local supermarket for something previously requested by his aunt.
516. He was driven by his aunt to the airport bus terminal for the 6pm bus. His flight was delayed and then re-routed to Canberra via Sydney. In the Sydney boarding lounge he made a call to [REDACTED] and one to his sister, [REDACTED]. He asked [REDACTED] to check if Scott had tidied his room as usual before leaving for Canberra. [REDACTED] checked the room and confirmed that it had been tidied. Now he was deeply distressed about Scott. The flight from Sydney experienced further delays and he arrived in Canberra sometime after 11pm. He caught a taxi to the Blacket home.
517. When he got home he played a message left by police on his answering machine. He called the manly Police and they asked him to attend for the purpose of identifying Scott's body. He called [REDACTED] and asked her to come over and drive him to Sydney. He left a message on Mr Johnson's answering machine. He first attempted to go the home of a doctor friend, [REDACTED], at Leichhardt to find that she was not at home. He was then driven by

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


██████████ to the Lane Cove home arriving about 6am. From there they went to the Manly Police Station and met Constable Troy Hardie.

518. ██████████ concludes his document with a statement about their happy relationship, Scott's good health and good career prospects, money loaned by him in support of Scott, and his inability to think of why Scott may have taken his own life.
519. I PRODUCE THAT DOCUMENT AND RELATED 2 LETTERS
520. Transcripts from the 1989 Coronial Inquest indicate that ██████████ was called to give evidence and provided with a warning by the Coroner at the commencement of his evidence. Additions or variations to his earlier evidence is summarised here, otherwise it is consistent with his prior statements.
521. In evidence in chief he was asked about the telephone conversation that he had with Scott when Scott told him of his attempted suicide. ██████████'s evidence includes that he was not aware if Scott actually had an HIV/AIDS test on which to base his fears.
522. ██████████ named the two English friends that he told of the attempted suicide as ██████████ and ██████████. ██████████ confirmed that Scott expressed no fears of having HIV/AIDS preceding his death in 1988.
523. ██████████ was asked about Scott's relationship with his family, more particularly his older brother Mr Johnson, and in particular Scott's interpretation of how his family reacted to him being in a homosexual relationship. ██████████'s answers suggest some discomfort when answering on this topic. His answers include that he is aware that when Scott travelled to the USA in 1988 that he and his brother Stephen spoke of his homosexual relationship and that as a result Scott felt that his brother, Stephen, had a better understanding of the relationship.
524. When pressed to agree that therefore Scott no longer had these concerns on his mind after his visit to the USA in 1988, ██████████ replies that concerns expressed by Stephen to Scott about Scott's homosexual relationship was a 'constant theme' of conversation between him and Scott. He was pressed on

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

whether the theme was less or more of a concern to Scott on Scott's returned from the USA in 1988. [REDACTED] is unable to positively answer either way.

525. [REDACTED] confirms that at the time he left Sydney for Canberra as planned on Monday 5 December 1988 that he and Scott were on 'very good terms'. He has no recollection of any plans Scott made for that week or for when they would meet again. He does not recall speaking with Scott by phone or in person after leaving the Lane Cove house for Canberra. He concedes at page 41 of the transcripts when questioned by counsel representing the Johnson family that he may have made a call to Scott on the Tuesday before the death which he no longer recalls.
526. [REDACTED]'s sister, [REDACTED], gives evidence about a call to Scott presumed to be from [REDACTED] after he left for Canberra on Monday 5 December and before 2pm on Tuesday 6 December, being the last time that she spoke with Scott.
527. [REDACTED] explains that in late June 1988 he received formal notice that his current contract with the Canberra School of Music would not be renewed when it expired on 31 December 1988. He was asked if his own potential pending unemployment concerned Scott and he replied that it did not. He describes Scott as having no interest in money, status or position. He also states that there were no difficulties or concerns whatsoever between himself and Scott in the week preceding the death.
528. [REDACTED] was asked about a priority paid letter that was received at their Canberra address and that he posted on Wednesday 7 December 1988 for the attention of Scott at the Lane Cove house and which arrived a day or two later. [REDACTED] states that the priority paid envelope he sent with two letters from the USA that he had assumed were birthday cards for Scott. [REDACTED] suggests that although it was Scott usual practise to return via an evening train from Sydney to Canberra each Thursday, he posted the letter regardless of this in case Scott decided to stay on in Sydney which he did on occasion. He was questioned at page 34 by counsel representing the Johnson family as to why he thought

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



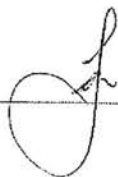
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


birthday cards were worth the expense of being priority paid and [REDACTED] explained that as he posted them via the Canberra Music School it was not at his expense.

529. In relation to Scott's interaction with other people, [REDACTED] refers to Scott mixing mainly with his (being [REDACTED]'s) friends, having the occasional dinner with Wednesday mathematical seminar colleagues, and the possibility of Scott meeting people unknown to him via a social club that Scott told him he was in at the Macquarie ice rink. He only recalls one occasion to his knowledge when Scott did not stay at the Lane Cove house when in Sydney and that was in 1986 (no details were asked for. Ref. p36 of transcription).
530. In relation to him having a three day trip to Melbourne whereas the interview was only on part of one day, he said it was to take advantage of the cheaper flexi-fare option and also to catch up with his aunt with whom he was close.
531. [REDACTED] is certain that he did not call Scott on Thursday 8 December 1988.
532. He was initially concerned but not gravely so, as he also considered that Scott may have been in transit from Sydney to Canberra, or any number of other non-concerning possibilities. He stated that when they were both away from their Canberra home travelling it was not unusual for them not to be in contact for two days. He states that he had developed real cause for concern on Saturday 10 December 1988 when he made calls from the boarding lounge at Melbourne airport to [REDACTED] and his sister and neither had more knowledge of Scott's whereabouts. He was questioned as to why he did not call his Canberra home again from the airport boarding lounge and explains that he was short of coins for the telephone and time before the flight and thought the best action was to call [REDACTED] whom his knew could follow up Scott on his behalf.
533. [REDACTED] says that he and Scott did not have a regular pattern of making phone calls to each other when they were apart (page 39) but certainly did not call each other every day in any case.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

534. ██████ came under significant questioning by the Sergeant Assisting and counsel representing the Johnson family in particular on the topic of calls made and/or not made by ██████ and his level of concern for Scott on Friday 9 December and Saturday the 10 December 1988.
535. ██████ states that he had never been to Blue Fish Point. He states that Scott frequently hiked in bushland and national park areas and that from time to time they went together and that they never undressed on those occasions.
536. ██████ says that is aware of two occasions when Scott told him that he hiked to North Head but is unaware of any specific area at North Head that Scott visited (page 33). (In his 2013 interview, it appears that when ██████ said this he was not referring to having direct information from Scott about this but was actually referring to what his father had told him after Scott died and at a time when they were trying to work out how Scott came to be at North Head. ██████'s father thought that Scott went to North Head and saw wallabies. There is no record of wallabies at North Head, but rather the native fauna of bandicoots, birds, snakes, lizards, frogs and invertebrates)
537. He does not know how Scott travelled to North Head in December 1988, but confirms that it was not ██████'s mother's car which was borrowed by Scott from time to time and which was still at the Lane Cove house after Scott's body was located.
538. In relation to Scott's death resulting from suicide, ██████ states that he has no knowledge of an event or circumstance that may have precipitated this possibility but that he is not qualified to comment on underlying causes relative to it either.
539. ██████ is questioned by counsel representing the Johnson family about his recollection of when the conversation with Scott about suicide took place. Counsel points out that Scott left from New York on 5 December 1985 to fly to the UK and that prior to that date he had been staying in Los Angeles where he attended the wedding of his brother, Stephen. Furthermore, that in order to get to

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

New York for his flight, Scott left on a bus from Los Angeles to New York four days prior to 5 December 1985. (It is unclear if evidence was produced at inquest of the travel dates)

540. After Scott's admission of being unfaithful, ██████ said that he and Scott talked about the possibility of having an AIDS test in the United Kingdom but they decided to wait until they were in Australia.
541. ██████ disclosed that close to 17 June 1988 when Scott was in Sydney, Scott gave him brief details of having had sexual relations with someone else who he does not know. Scott reacted to his unfaithful behaviour with a depression and a lot of self blame. ██████ said he had no knowledge of Scott having again been unfaithful in the period leading up to his death.
542. ██████ describes Scott as not being a person of many words and not a person to volunteer information about his feelings easily.
543. ██████ knew that Scott's work with the ANU was going very well. He found out after Scott's death when he had contact with ██████ that Scott had solved a final problem. ██████ thinks that Scott was in a happy frame of mind relative to his university work, that he was very involved in it and pleased with the way it was progressing.
544. When asked about the quality of his relationship with Scott, he describes it as 'exemplary'.
545. ██████ is questioned by counsel for the Johnson family relative to a computer that was purchased in Australia with Harvard University funds and which was used and kept by Scott in Canberra. ██████ explained that when Mr Johnson visited him in Canberra subsequent to Scott's death he inquired after the computer on behalf of Harvard University. They came to an arrangement that monies owed by Mr Johnson to Scott for prior employment would be put by him into purchasing a computer in the US for Harvard University in settlement of the monies owned to Scott.
546. I PRODUCE THAT INQUEST TRANSCRIPTION

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

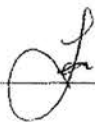


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

547. On 29 March 2013, [REDACTED] took part in an electronically recorded interview. Additional or varying evidence is summarised here.
548. His Relationship with Scott
549. ...I remember we met at...a kind of dinner party that a mutual friend of ours, a guy called [REDACTED] (invited us to)...[REDACTED] was a graduate student in music, who was a good friend of mine...actually, we met a little bit earlier than that...There was a guy called Melvin Ramsden, who was at Kings College and who gathered together...this was at a time when...sort of gay liberation was just kind of, you know, happening a little bit and there were, there was a kind of a gay rights political group on campus and this guy called Melvin Ramsden...said, "Why don't we just have a thing were people who are gay get together for lunch every week and it'll be at my place and anybody can come up and there's no agenda and there's no politics and there's no anything, it's just, you know, if you happen to be passing by, bring a sambo and, you know, well...
550. ...and Scott and I met each other at this, this kind of lunch thing...it was in a way typical for foreign students at Cambridge, Scott from the United States, me from Australia, for both of us, for all foreign students, not only in England, but particularly with this University...and so this was a way of getting to know people and it was a way of getting to know people from, in this case, particularly other countries...
551. ...(Our) meeting was, you know, really nothing more than a, a shake hands and where are you from?...he was a strikingly handsome young man but he was also strikingly shy...
552. ...I properly got to meet him at a party that [REDACTED] threw in his rooms at Cambridge and it was a sit down party and I think Scott might have even been the cook. I have a feeling that Scott was preparing Californian style Mexican food to show these Brits what American food was like. I think that was the case. Right, so that probably would have been, probably early '84...
553. ...he must have been 22 when we met...so I was...five years older than him (27 years).

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

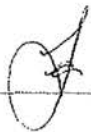


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

554. ...we just sort of started to have lunch together and get to know each other a bit more... there was this kind of, I don't know, camaraderie that came from being foreign students...I can't remember the exact date...I remember inviting Scott round for a dinner on a Friday night and suddenly things got um, how can I put this? Very intense and he, let me, let me say that he left his dinner invitation I think probably on the Monday morning...passionate and you know, lots of kissing and cuddling and breakfast in bed and all that kind of stuff...and I think...there's something more here than just a kind of friendship, that there was something, you know, well maybe not emotional, but certainly, I mean we were very attracted to each other, you know.
555. ...I was older than Scott...there was something about him that seemed to need or to go for the protection...back then, you know, it was a more significant kind of age difference and I think that there was a kind of a, there was something about the, I don't know, there's a, that he was less experienced in the world, you know?
556. ...I wasn't looking for a relationship. I, in fact it was quite the opposite. I was looking to preserve the relationship that I had in Australia and I was going along to this lunch thing, basically to meet people and the funny thing about a sort of gay thing like that, is that, the fact that you are gay, doesn't mean that you have anything in common with anybody at all. You know, yet what happens is when you put a bunch of young gay guys together in a room, it, there is this kind of moderately sexually charged thing because the, the one thing you do have in common with each other, is that you have the same sex attraction. Um, you might be from different countries, you might be from different academic areas, you might be from different socio-economic classes. The one thing that's common is that you're male and that you're gay. And particularly in that situation, we weren't there trying to get involved in some kind of political, equal rights, whatever thing...
557. There was no name for it and I remember that we started to go to groups at Cambridge which were partly health information things and, you know, we were, nobody knew what thing was, nobody knew how it was contracted. There wasn't even a name like HIV. I remember at first it was called HTLV3 and then they

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

didn't know whether it was virus or not and they didn't know how it was transmitted and there was a real kind of, um, it, it wasn't so much a hysteria, it, but it was a real kind of "What on earth is that thing?". And we would see each other at these groups and so the whole idea of, for me, establishing a relationship in this new era where there was suddenly this rather, not rather, this fatal, this absolutely horrible thing that was going around, that wasn't really uppermost in my mind. So when you ask me who was chasing who, I don't think anybody was chasing anybody. I think that, you know, there were two sort of like-minded people who, you know, enjoyed each other's companionship and ah, um, you know, I think at that stage, particularly sex between men, was thwart with this "Is there anything that we can do?", you know, "Is there anything that we can do that's, that's, that's not life-threatening?"...Young people today don't feel like that. Gay people don't feel that. It's a very, it was a very different world and this was before the...Grim Reaper ads...

558. ...we buried friends (who dies from HIV/AIDS). I mean I'm sure that one of the reasons that I, I never contracted anything like that was because, you know, it was really a monogamous thing and our sex was with each other and that was it. And I was pretty much, you know, concerned at Cambridge for that kind of thing to continue. So it was, there, there was a point where it was, "Oh hell, this thing with Scott is getting much more serious".

559. I don't think I did (have sex with another person) and the reason I am pausing, is that after Scott died, I went through a phase where I was having a lot of anonymous sex with a lot of guys...I had a complete emotional breakdown after he'd died. Scott was not just my lover, my boyfriend, my partner, he was also my best friend. He was also my confidant. He was also, he was, I needed to turn to somebody, I needed the support of somebody when he died and he wasn't there and I, I know that I did a lot of sex in Canberra and when I paused this question, I don't, I mean I, I, I can remember a few sexual encounters in that house in Canberra where Scottie and I lived in Blackett Street, but I don't think they were before Scott died. I think they were after.

560. I know that he had sex with others, with at least, I know one instance of him, him having sex. You've got to remember that, you know, in this period AIDS was

Witness:



Signature:



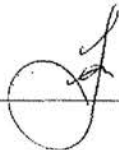
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

still a death sentence. It was a really serious thing and our relationship meant a lot of things in a lot of different ways. But one of things our relationship was, was a guarantee of a healthy sex life and a healthy life.

561. ...Now I know that he had sex once with somebody else outside our relationship and that was a very concerning thing for me and it was something that I wanted to sit down and talk to him about and I never, never got that opportunity. Um, the last six months or so of our relationship was a very fraught six months, because I was essentially being eased out of my job at the Canberra School of Music.
562. ...I had been given a sabbatical and I went back to Cambridge in 1988, so Scott and I were living apart for a while, but Scott came over and gave a paper at a conference in Southampton and then he came to Cambridge and Scott's ah, getting off with some other guy happened before, before I went away and so the fact that we were in different countries, made it very difficult for me to be able to talk to him about what I wanted to talk to him about. I wanted to sit down to him, it's a difficult thing, you know, it's always a difficult thing but it's a particularly difficult thing, um, when you find out about it the way you find, found out about it. You know, it was, "O.K. we've got a situation, we really need to talk about it" and then I'm on a plane. So ah, um, I made allusion to this a, in my, ah, on the witness stand in the first Coronial Inquiry, I gave even further details in an email to Steve Johnson, which I've copied here, about this incident. Um, but we never, we never really got to talk, we never got to talk about it because, you know, he died, and because the most urgent thing was me finding myself some kind of employment. I knew that I was going to, my contract was going to be, ah, the contract was going to finish in December and I had a mortgage, Scott had no income.
563. ...we were living off my income (at the time that his contract with the Canberra School of Music was to terminate)...this was kind of serious.
564. ...there was a lot of (nasty personal) politics going on (at the Canberra School of Music) ...the last six months of our relationship were fraught, not only because there was this sort of hanging over us, "What on earth are we going to do to be able to service the mortgage?" et cetera, but there was also this kind of, "O.K.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Scott, we know you had sex with this guy that you met at Macquarie University, who gave you a dose of..." um, ah, what do you call it, um, "...pubic lice, you brought that home to me, I know about that, ah, let's you know, deal with this" and we never really did.

565. ...But he told me he met some guy in a public toilet at Macquarie University and that's where he thinks that he contracted this pubic lice and um, I wanted to connect those two, that if he was capable of casual sex, and if Blue Fish Point was a place where that kind of thing happened, I wanted to see that investigated. Subsequent to the Coronial Inquiry, I actually went up to Blue Fish Point myself and there were one or two guys there, um, sunbaking, not naked, um, but there were sunbaking there and I struck up a conversation with one or two of them and confirmed my suspicion that, that that was, I mean, that was a place where guys picked guys up.

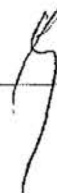
566. ...(Scott) came to Sydney to stay at Lane Cove for two nights, sometimes three nights of the week, to go to a seminar at Macquarie University. He didn't, he wasn't a Sydney-sider. He didn't live in Sydney. I lost touch with Sydney because ah, in 1981, I had a job in Armidale, then I went to Spain, then I went to Cambridge and from Cambridge in 1986, I was appointed to a job in Canberra. So from that period, '81 to '88, I mean my life wasn't in Sydney. Sure, I was a Sydney-sider, but, and my life before that was living with my partner in a monogamous relationship in Rozelle.

567. ...I did have sex with somebody during our relationship, so it's just coming back to me. This is a long time ago, O.K. So Scott and I were in Cambridge. I got the job so we worked out how we were going to have a life together and we worked on his application to the Australian National University to, to do a PhD in mathematics. I went to, I, I flew to Canberra before Scott did and I was there for six weeks before he arrived and I actually went to a um, a nude bathing area called Kambah Pool. Um, this was in January and I met a guy there and went back to his place with him and I was full of remorse about this and I remember when Scott arrived, I remember telling him about this and I remember having this really fraught discussion with him. Sitting him down, there's something I've got to tell you. And we worked our way through it. He was really very hurt by that. Um,

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

he was a bit devastated by it, actually. So, you know, that, yes, so, so you'll need to rewind this tape and so back to what I was saying before, because I, you know, there was something at the back of my mind that was telling me. I, I worry about being cross-examined about this kind of thing but, um, but yeah. So, no, I had, I had in fact had sex with somebody else, this one time, while I was, our relationship was on, and had come clean to Scott about it and we actually really came to what I thought was a, a rock solid agreement, that, O.K. I'd been a really bad guy, firm purpose of amendment, it's just you and me, and you know, will you do the same thing? And I, I thought we had that agreement.

568. ...the suburb is actually called Kambah. K-A-M-B-A-H. It's a, um, it fact when I first went to Canberra, um, I, actually, I don't, I can't remember if I was staying at somebody's place then or not, actually. I think I was, no, no, no, no. But anyway, it was, I don't know if you've ever been to Canberra in the summer. Nothing happens in Canberra in the summer, everybody is away and it's very, very hot and the, the Murrumbidgee has this lovely pool area. It's, it's absolutely beautiful actually but it's a, it was a legal nude bathing place and I met a guy there and um, and he came back to my place, yeah.

569. ...The reason, well I actually, I wasn't looking for it. I mean it was in fact, I was not looking for it. And I mean, that was just, the, the opportunity presented itself. In fact I, this particular guy, this, this particular guy was clearly kind of showing an interest in me but I really ignored it. And I remember, he, he left the river, went up to the, on the way up to the car park and then, I thought, "O.K., cool, you know, this guy's looking at me, but fine, who cares?" and I'm, I'm here to, to um, to swim and to just relax really and um, probably reading. Um, but then when I was walking back, he had sat himself there and he's struck up a conversation with me and he just really basically struck up a conversation. "I haven't, you know, seen you around". "Oh, I've just arrived from England". "Oh, where are you living?", you know, "Nice place down here", ah, all that kind of thing. Um, ah, and honestly I can't remember exactly what happened then, ah, but it wasn't, I mean it wasn't a matter, I mean it certainly wasn't sex there. It certainly wasn't, um, and I didn't even, yeah, I don't know. I just can't remember very much more about it, but it did end up, it did end up at my place and yeah,

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

one thing led to another. This is not the first time in history this has happened Detective.

570. ...we had an agreement about not having sex outside of our relationship (after [REDACTED]'s confession to Scott of being unfaithful). And I actually thought that this was a, I actually think that both sides of us kept to this...after that agreement... except for that instance at Macquarie University.

571. ...wait a second, what are the dates you were talking about, because I know that Scott, in, when he was in San Francisco, had sex with somebody...well I don't have perfect recall...but in 1985, Scott, Scott finished his studies at Cambridge. He was, he got a job as a teacher's assistant at Berkeley University, which is in The Bay area, very, very close to San Francisco and he was living in San Francisco. He was also living with, sharing with, with a number of people actually. One guy called Barrack. I don't know who the other people were and I know that during that time, yeah, during that time, he had sex with somebody and, and, ah, and the only way I found out about that was when I was living, the arrangement was that at the end of the British summer, I was going to rent a house in Priory Road in Cambridge and he was going to come and live with me until I finished my PhD and then we were going to go to Canberra. And I arranged to go to the United States to spend a semester at Berkeley, to be with him. Um, and when I went back to the UK, I had an extraordinary opportunity at a dinner party in London, hosted by a friend, Jim Sait, who was a friend from my days at Armidale, I met two really lovely people, Claudio and Penelope Vitafinzi and they said at this dinner party, "We're looking for somebody to look after our house in Hampstead, ah, because we're going to spend, we want to spend the summer in our summer house". And I liked the opportunity, the sticky Australian I was, said, "I'm really good at sitting houses. Why don't I look after your house?". In fact I didn't say it there on the spot, I said it about a day or two later. I called Jim, and I said, "You know what, I'm, I don't, I'm out of college housing, I'm looking for housing, and it would be really good if I could have a house for August". And I said, "Besides, what I need to do is finish my PhD" and Claudio and Penelope got in touch. They said, "We love you, come, come to see the house. It's beautiful, a four storey house in Hampstead". Ah, it was a, a massive

Witness:



Signature:

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

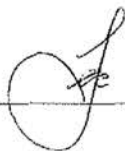
luxury. Um, fantastic for a young Australian and what's more, there was uninterrupted time to work on writing my PhD, finishing it.

572. I mean partly because there wasn't one, but partly because we weren't that kind of people. You know, we, we weren't, we weren't like that. I mean we didn't have this kind of sense that "We're gay, so we're different and special and we only have...", I mean we, we just weren't like that. Um, other friends in Canberra, he had two friends of his, whose names I've mentioned to you, who were both gay and who were both mathematic graduates. Um, there were more his friends than I, my friends actually. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], I think it was [REDACTED], [REDACTED], it's a very Irish name anyway. I hope [REDACTED] never sees me, anyway, and, um, Scott saw more of them than I did. I didn't have very much of a connection with them. But, I mean, we were both on the ANU campus, you know, um, we lived part of the campus life. We had, we both, ah I was finishing my PhD, he was doing a PhD, so we had very, very busy work lives. I was gearing up to be the Head of a Department in a new, my first job. I was determined to excel at that. I was continuing doing my conducting of groups in various ways. And that was a, ah, and, and I was finishing my PhD, so, organising conferences. He was doing, so we had very full work lives really. Um, I was swimming every day, Scottie was doing his exercise and all of that. Um, I, you know, I was servicing a mortgage. It was a very boring kind of work life really.

573. ...I wish that Steve and Steve's family had been able to see the way that when Scott arrived in Australia, he really flourished. He flourished in terms of his relationship with family and friend, we had a terrific relationship, we did practically everything together. We were really good friends...it was a relatively argument free kind of relationship. We had our ups and downs, but it was, you know, it was a good relationship...and work wise, he, he was really flourishing there.

574. ...I am very aware that in that last year and especially those last six months, that I was so obsessed myself with the problems that I was having at work. They were unpleasant, there were some very, very unpleasant personal interactions, but more than that, there was the practical problem, where was I going to find work? And I was really very, very concerned about that and I'm, I feel a bit guilty now and I did after, after his death, because I thought I was probably not paying

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

attention to him enough, to the extent that I should have been, because I was so preoccupied with my own questions. Where was I going to find a job? How was I going to scrape life together? What was I going to do with the house if I didn't have the mortgage repayment? The mortgage was seventeen and a half per cent back then. This was a, you know, this was serious and there was only one, it was just me, um, and so that those, those were the kind of practical questions that we had...couples went through this kind of thing and of course, you know, there's a number of ways of looking at it. One is that if you think that he suicided, well of course you blame yourself and so many of us when we thought that perhaps that it was a suicide, we started to blame ourselves and I certainly went through that. It was partly my fault, because you know, he felt incapable, there was something that was so deep there, that he couldn't even mention to me and you know, it's my fault because, you know, how could I have just, I could have just said, "Listen, let's sit down. There's something obviously worrying you. Let's talk". But there wasn't any kind of amber flag. There wasn't any red flag. There wasn't any, anything. Certainly if there was, I didn't see it. I'm really conscious that during that time I was relying on him to support me emotionally, but I was also saying to him, you know, "Look, hey, we've got this far, it's O.K., you know. Things will, you know, we'll be able to work this out". And you know, at the end of the day, ah, ah, you know, I mean my family was there and there were, they, and they continued to be enormously supportive. You know. Even though, you know, I was brought up to be very proud and not to be, to be sponging off the folks.

575. ... (Scott) kept saying, "Listen, we don't need to worry about money". He said, "I can do work with Steve and we can get the money whenever we like". In fact he was doing work for Steve when we were living in Canberra.

576. ... I don't think there was any sense that he felt, you know, he was a student and I was the earner...but I don't think there was any sense in which he felt that there was a, a financial problem and we just pooled all our resources.

577. ... Never, never, never (did Scott fail to turn up to a pre-arranged meeting). And we, we had... a very simple system but we had one of these old fashioned answering machines where you could call into it, leave a message, and the other person could call into it and retrieve that message. So we used to keep in

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

contact that way if there was going to be a point at which we wouldn't coincide, or for instance, ah, because he was travelling often every week to Sydney..."I'm taking another train"...he might call and leave a message and I'd be able to retrieve that message from the office without having to go home...Mind you, I was the one who able to retrieve the messages. He wasn't able to retrieve messages...it was run by this simple kind of beeper thing...in Sydney of course, he had, he was at my parent's place and that was a great message leaving place, because mum or somebody was always there.

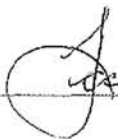
578. (Regarding Scott's unfaithfulness in Australia)...we were living in two different countries...well Scott's just obviously had sex with somebody else and I would really like to, well talk to him about what this means, because we did have an agreement and this agreement obviously hasn't worked out, so how are we going to, you know, deal with this...(the unfaithfulness) ...must have happened towards the beginning of '88...and probably, I mean, gee, we need to look close, more closely at these dates, but maybe we're looking at March or April, something like that.

579. (Regarding how ██████ found out about the unfaithfulness)...I mean I assumed that either we had sex, I mean we slept in the same bed...and you know, then you have creepy crawlies (pubic lice)...and then I remember um, leaving for the UK very, very soon after that...not having had time to properly discuss the matter with Scott.

580. ...I remember being very circumspect about this thinking...this is, this is potentially serious and we really need to sit down and, and deal with this properly. This is not something for a...histrionic shouting match and so rather than really dealing with it, or being able to deal with it, I wanted to deal with it properly and never got round to it because these other events of my moving over to Cambridge...so that was just a kind of unresolved issue really.

581. ...He said it was at Macquarie University and he said it was at a, a public toilet at Macquarie University and that he just met some guy and no, no further information, and I didn't, he was very, very, very embarrassed by this and I didn't, well it's a bit like the kind of questions that you give. Sometimes you want to be gentle with somebody because you think that the last thing you want to do is for

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

them to completely clam up. And you know, I think I was like that and you know, part of me was thinking, well, you know, I kind of need to know if I'm supposed to have a HIV test and if this is something that I'm going to contract and I need to, kind of need to revisit the ground rules that we had in our relationship.

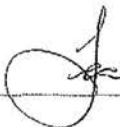
582. (Regarding his trust in Scott) ...I did, but you know, um, he's an adult and he's capable of making his own decisions and he's also a human being and that's a person who's capable of making mistakes. So, yes, I did trust him...No it wasn't the norm for him at all, no, no.

583. (Regarding their plans together)...Our big hope was that I would be given the Harkness Fellowship and that Harkness Fellowship would have given me something like one and a half to two years in the United States. It's a fantastic fellowship. They're pretty rare, but they allow, they encourage you to travel for twenty four, for eighteen to twenty four months in the United States. This essentially meant that I would have had income and airfares and, and permission to be in The States for twenty four months and Scott would have been a recently admitted PhD, able to apply for jobs anywhere in The States. And so in a way, it was going to be the, the thing that would answer all of our, all of our concerns about our future together and an economic future, because I would have been able then to rent the house in Canberra and that would have really helped with the mortgage repayments and he would have been able to pursue a, an academic career...

584. ...I do think that he had extremely high prospects of the ANU right there and then, offering him a job for the next academic year. He was already doing teaching for, and, and he was getting terrific evaluations. They loved him. But he'd also, um, had a, made a really good impression on the folks at Macquarie. So, you know, the chances of him getting employment in Australia were actually much higher than the chances of my getting employment in Australia.

585. ...if he had been given a job in Canberra...it would have turned him into the breadwinner and I would have had to have found some non-academic or some job in Canberra. We could have stayed in Canberra. Or, if there was something in Macquarie, we could have moved up to Sydney. That would have been a relatively easy move. I wouldn't have wanted to move back at home of course,

Witness:



Signature:



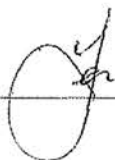
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


but you know, so there were a number of, there were a number of possibilities. You know, it wasn't, this wasn't dire. Some people have real problems...this wasn't a real problem, it was messy.

586. ...I do think he was concerned but I don't think it was a, an overwhelming concern that would darken his view of the world, It was something he was concerned about, it was something we both were stressed about but it was within the realms of the kind of daily stress that most people have to deal with sometime in their lives.
587. ...there was no sense in which our relationship was on the rocks...talk to the people who were at those two parties to, to see what they felt about our relationship. I mean, if, if [REDACTED]'s observing things and other people, perhaps they would be the ones to ask..
588. ...we were both very hard workers. We were both finishing PhD's. I had a full time job, we didn't have a huge social life.
589. (Regarding Mr Johnson's suggestion that [REDACTED] had sex outside his relationship with Scott)...Well that's complete news to me...where's the evidence, I mean I, I'd have to say...
590. ...it (that Scott would confide this in Mr Johnson) just doesn't ring true to me... it doesn't ring true to me but I mean, it's a question that puts me in a very difficult position, because I don't really know what I'm answering. I don't know what the charge is and I don't really know how to get back to it...Right. Yeah. Well I, I mean I, there are two issues here. One is, did I do that, or didn't I, and the other thing is, what did Scott think and why did he think that? I wasn't, I was too busy and I didn't really, I didn't have that opportunity...but I would be very concerned if I thought that that really was Scott's attitude and I'd be particularly concerned to think that if he was worried about that, why wouldn't he talk to me, rather than talk to Steve about it. But finally, I wasn't the one who brought home the consequences of having outside sex to our relationship. He was the one who did that.
591. ...I don't even know if he (Scott) was looking for it (sex outside their relationship). I mean maybe it was somebody propositioned him. And maybe,

Witness:



Signature:


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

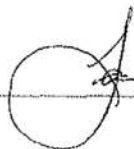
you know, maybe, I, I just don't know the details of it...I don't think of him as somebody going out and looking for sex...

592. (Regarding the last time they saw each other)...I can't remember exactly what it was ...hurried and it was hurried because, you know, I was being held up. I had a long, I had a long drive, so, yeah, it would have been a hurried one...you know, it wasn't a special goodbye. We didn't know it was the last time we were going to see each other...I was in a rush and I was a bit pissed off I think, probably that I, his forgetfulness had meant that I'd had to drive all the way from the city, back to Lane Cove to give him a wallet, that you know, he should have taken out of the car...it was a very pleasant interaction, I know that, because I remember him saying, you know, "Really good luck with that interview. I hope that interview goes really well". We both had a lot at stake at that interview...and I wasn't, I wasn't going to let something silly like a, a forgotten wallet...get in the way of the, the excitement of the bigger prize. And the bigger prize was, you know, things might turn out really well if this interview goes well and, and I'd just got...the last certificate that I needed for that interview from the, from the Registry of Births, Deaths and Marriages.

593. ...I was very well prepared for that interview... in fact, part of the preparing I was doing for that interview was talking to my friend, [REDACTED], about one of the people, a journalist, who was on the interviewing panel, and that led to [REDACTED] calling the Lane Cove House to speak to Scott because [REDACTED] had some information to give to me, and that made [REDACTED] the last person to speak to Scott and I think it was, I can't remember the exact date, but I think that the testimony of [REDACTED] is that Scott sounded quite normal and there was a bit of happy chit chat and once again, no sign of any distress. No sign of a depressed person.

594. ...I'm in Canberra and he's in Sydney, it's not, this is not a completely normal week because I'm coming to the end of my contact...I'm moving, I have meetings in Melbourne and places like that. But the norm was for us not to have very much contact with each other. And the reason for this was really quite simple, we had fixed line phones and we were both at our various offices and Scott, at Macquarie University, didn't have an office or a fixed line phone. So the only fixed line he

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

had was at my parent's place, [REDACTED] and he was there for a meal and for, for, for dinner and maybe a bit of study but he was mainly a student without a phone at Macquarie University. So, and, ah, back in those days, that was a trunk call between Sydney and...Canberra. So for him to make the call, I couldn't make the call to him at Macquarie, because he didn't have a fixed line. He would need to make the call to me, that would have meant going to a phone box and being loaded up with coins and, or, him using my parent's phone and running up the bill.

595. ...so we didn't have a lot of phone contact. But remember we're only talking about him being away for two days...so we didn't have a lot of contact, by phone. I mean we, you know, I mean we lived with each other, slept in the same bed for five days a week...these days it seems odd, doesn't it, not to have contact with somebody on the phone during the day for example, but back then - - -

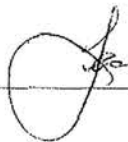
596. ...this part of it is really scrambled in my, in my recollection...I'm not sure if I can even when I wrote this statement that I knew about phone calls.

597. Sexuality, Health and Temperament

598. ...I'd had a very different kind of background. I had a very stable kind of background...and in some ways, compared to Scott, a rather privileged background...he was somebody who needed some kind of protection. There was something very vulnerable about Scott.

599. ...there was something about him that was a little bit too trusting and at that stage, I suppose, I mean I, gee it's funny how I've never really thought about this kind of thing for a long time, but I suppose I felt quite protective about him but I remember him telling me stories and one of the stories he told me was the way that he was, when much younger, um, he got involved with a group of people who he really liked. Now I don't even remember exactly what part of the United States that was, but I remember him telling me that he called his brother, Steve, they had a very, very, close relationship and he told his brother, he said, "Look, I've just found these really nice people and they've invited me to their place and they want me to move in" and, and this Scott telling me, Steve never told me this and Steve immediately said, "Then really Scott, get the hell out of there. You've found yourself with a bunch Moonies"...The Reverend, the Reverend, this was this

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Korean, this very charismatic Korean, who, there's something in, something, I don't know what the Church was called, but this, this guy had these, it was a cult. It was a, completely a cult and, and I remember Scott telling me that and it sort of confirmed my sense that there was something very trusting about Scottie. Um, I'm not like that. I'm not a person who trusts people easily. I, and I remember that kind of struck me at the time and it's always been a part of my, the way I thought of Scott, that he was somebody who needed a bit of protection. He was very, very shy and um, I don't know what more to say really.

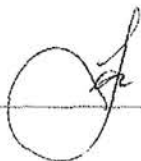
600. It (Scott's shyness) was a huge problem. And it was something that I tried to help him with. You know, as if I had any competence. I mean I'm not any kind of therapist. I don't know how to deal with somebody, but when you're close to somebody and, and they confide these things, and I never understood what shyness was all about.

601. I mean it's pretty clear to you guys that I'm not a shy person. Um, so I, it's not something that I empathise with. It was something that I had to try to sort of understand. But something that might be relevant to this case, is that I remember him saying to me that one of the most difficult things for him to do, was to walk into a, a room full of people, to open his mouth in a seminar, to stand up in front of a group of people and present a paper, to ask a question in a class...

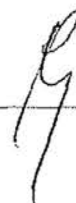
602. ...but that, to have sex anonymously with somebody he didn't know, without speaking, that was easy. And I, I remember being very struck with this, that suddenly, you know, somebody could be so shy, in the circumstances that people like you and I just find normal...(but) the idea of having, you know, anonymous sex with a complete stranger. I mean that seems to me, "Boy, that's the kind of thing that I would feel shy about". Right, you know? So, um, all that, yeah, so I don't know if that's relevant to this particular case. It is something that has always been lurking at the back of my mind about what might explain his being on that cliff that day.

603. ...I mean it was clear that he was gay. He was part of that, that kind of scene. I know that he was, oh yeah, he told me he had some kind of sexual experience with some, I know how this happened. He found Asian guys very attractive and you know, I remember saying to him, "Well you know, why?" and

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

he said, "Well, you know, I, the first guy I ever had sex with was Asian" and I guess, he said he was from Singapore and he said, "I guess that, you know, that's just kind of, you know, my first experience and that's kind of..." and first, you know, physical sexual experience was with this guy and that's how it was. But I don't recall anything much more than that. Um, I don't recall him talking about it. And maybe if I try to dig a big deeper in my brain, but I don't recall anything else and I certainly don't recall anything unusual, anything surprising.

604. I, I do know um, that ah, this, that he had kept the fact of his sexuality secret from his brother and his family. Um, and I don't know if that was because he was still coming to terms with it himself, or because he was worried about potential repercussions and rejection. I tend to think it was the latter.

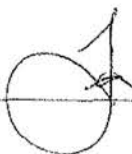
605. ...sex and sexuality wasn't a kind of a big problem for him. His shyness was.

606. ...we weren't 'plugged', even if there was a thing called the gay community, and you know, I mean this is a term that's bandied about like, you know, gay community...there are Archbishops, there are barristers, there are Members of Parliament...there's not a badge, there's not...a membership card...so the kinds of networks that knew about beats, we weren't part of that...

607. ...a mutual friend of ours, Ian Bridge, and the story was that Ian Bridge was somehow doing some kind of beat in the Blue Mountains and he was tortured and murdered. Now that story's stuck with me very, very strongly and I remember telling, mentioning this to Scott. I remember him saying, I remember saying to Scott, "You know, for God sake, you know, don't get into this game of getting involved with beats. This is a really dangerous thing to do". Um, and I mean, I, I just remember telling him that and we never went any sort of further from that and I don't even remember the context of it. And I think the context of it simply would have been the context that you have when you're horrified that somebody who used to be a friend of yours, was murdered, I think he was murdered. I mean that was what I was told.

608. ...You know, there's no such thing as a one size fits all gay and I, you know, I'm not, claim(ing) to speak for all gay people any more than you would claim to speak for heterosexual people. All I can tell you about is what my precise

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

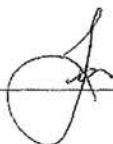
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

experience was. Um, and I'm not sure how relevant this is to our relationship but I'm happy to tell you ...you know, what I know and what my experience was.

609. ...All I know is that for Scott and me, this was something that ah, I shouldn't have done (been unfaithful). I was very aware of not having done it afterwards and I came clean about it as soon as he arrived, ah, to meet me in Canberra, a matter of weeks afterwards...well I just remember his (Scott's) face. It was sort of actually fallen really. He was, you know, here, here was this guy who'd, you know, who he was following halfway around the planet to a country he'd never been to before, and ah, you know, what was, what was my first announcement to him? Ah, so yeah, he wasn't, you wouldn't be happy about that would you?...I certainly wouldn't. I'd be pissed off. He was pissed off. I think he had every right to be pissed off. Um, and ah, you know, we kind of built this into, "O.K. we've really got to...", I mean we really laid our cards out on the table then and said, "O.K. we've got to make sure this doesn't happen again"...(Scott was) just very quiet....he'd sort of retire, you know, became sort of rather introverted and, and, and thoughtful and, and obviously disappointed...but, he, he wasn't a person to lose his temper. He wasn't a person to, to um, Scott, because of, he talked to me a lot about this.

610. He had a pretty unhappy upbringing and he developed, quite consciously, a lot of strategies for dealing with that. And one of these strategies was losing himself in his mathematics. He was very, very good at that. But he would also lose himself in all kinds of other worlds and, ah, he was a, he loved movies, ah, he loved certain kinds of novels. He loved um, Tolkien, Lord of the Rings, Bilbo Baggins, he loved um, ah, he and his brother had built ways of, of living in, in, in, in worlds, finding worlds, imaginative worlds to live in that made it possible for them to cope with the rather unpleasant experience of living in a house that was dominated by this guy called Dennis, who was Scott's, mother's, um, ah, um, boyfriend, live-in boyfriend. Live-in, ah, I don't think the word step-father was ever used and I know that Steve and Scott really resented Dennis and Scott had developed this kind of interior life, as well as this, this way of being able to shut the outside world out. When things were painful to him, he had this way of just being able to completely shut out of what was causing him pain. And I, I think

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

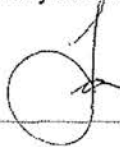
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

that that was what, how he reacted in this particular situation, where I was saying to him, "I've been unfaithful. I've been a bad guy". And I think that there was that sort of closing down but it wasn't a, a no talking situation or anything like that.

611. I mean we, he, both he and I were quite positive kinds of people and we were both very good at, at, at making you know, the best of situations and, and sort of, and in fact Scott was, partly through the influence of his brother, he was very, very serious about improving himself, about living a good life, about exercise, about, he was vegetarian, about um, you know, I mean he wasn't a party, he wasn't a drug user, he wasn't a, a party type. He wasn't um, but there was also this kind of almost Protestant sense of self-education, of reading the classics, or reading um, ah, Plato and Aristotle. I mean, I remember, he used to do this with his brother, but I also remember when Scottie and I were driving through California. All I wanted to do was to see the beautiful California coast, but he was sitting there reading me aloud bits from Plato and Aristotle, that, which was kind of fun, but it was also kind of geeky. And I mean, the fact was, he was a geeky kid. You know, he was a kid who had a, an extraordinary ability to, with mathematics and, and this was, this was the place where he, he was, he was the boss, he was top of the class. He was the, he, he shone there. You know, in ways that he didn't in other, in other things. He was, he told me stories about his childhood, where he just sort of felt un-cool. You know, kids in his class thought he was just kind of not one of the cool kids. You know, but hey, ah, Universities are full of people like that. University's a refuge for people like that. Um, and ah, I suppose we both had a slightly similar experience like that. I was the first person in my family to go to University for a generation and all that kind of stuff, so, but anyway. I think I'm getting off the point, if there is a point in all of this. I'm just rambling on.

612. ...(an) overwhelming concern for both of us, was ah, that we didn't know how AIDS was transmitted. We really didn't. Nobody did. And you know, new theories were coming up and you know, there was you know, you should never touch a cup that, that a gay person, I mean we were being told when I went to give blood, you know, being, being told that you couldn't because, you know, you were gay and you know, all these kinds of things. "O.K. all right". You know,

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



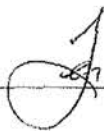
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

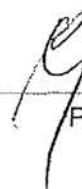
"There's nothing wrong with my blood" but, um, so that was very much our concern but ah, I mean I think we had a really, I actually think we had a really, a really good relationship.

613. And the fact is that we didn't even, we weren't even sort of part of the gay world in Canberra, the extent to which there was one...let's face it, you know, our closest friend was [REDACTED]. Um, I was responsible for appointing her to a position at the Canberra School of Music but we had other friends too, who are mainly my, my friends at work, David Worrell was a person who was appointed to the Canberra School of Music at the same time as I was. His wife, Suzie, who was this beautiful South African lady. Um, their two kids. They, they lived just around the corner from us in Canberra. We would often turn up at their place. David was a complete computer geek and he and Scott had this sort of connection in common. Our friend, we had a really healthy kind of social life. When I say, "healthy", I mean we had a social life in Canberra that was not based on, we didn't live in a gay ghetto.
614. (Regarding Scott's prior relationships)...I don't know that there ever was a relationship, well that's not quite true actually...there was a theological student at Cambridge and Scott and he went away to, to Italy for a week and it turned out rather badly and I can't remember what the guy's name was...there was that and then there was this Singaporean guy whom I never met and never heard very much about. And I, I don't remember anything else. There was no, there was no serious emotional relationship...I know (about) this mainly, I think, from Steve. I don't think I ever heard it from Scott but there was time when Scott in Los Angeles went out on the town one night...neither Steve nor I know what actually happened but, whatever happened was not very pleasant and not very good...that information comes from Steve...I don't know what that tells us. I don't know if Scott was somebody who was looking for love in the wrong places and putting himself in vulnerable positions.
615. (Regarding Scott's personality)...He was good with kids and he was really good with animals. He...and his mum was completely over the moon about dogs...he grew up surrounded by dogs and he was very, very comfortable in that situation and [REDACTED] had this, well a whole line of beautiful border collies

Witness:



Signature:


 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

and Labradors and Max was one of them and Scottie used to always feel just so very, very comfortable with them. But this sort of, this comfort is not something that, it was the same when he was with adults.

616. ...Scottie was always easy to be around, because he...wasn't demanding...people liked to have him around...he was easy company...but he wasn't the life, ever the life of the party...He liked to be in the background but he was happy to be in the background and people found him happy and easy...
617. ...You've seen that photo where... there's four of us sitting there and there's three of us who are engaged and Scottie's just kind of looking off into the distance. It was a bit like that, you know, he was happy to be there but he wasn't quite necessarily always involved.
618. ...He had plenty of friends who were girls, plenty of buddies who were girls. In fact it might be true to say that he found it easier to get along with girls, kind of because he was, girls found him very attractive. They loved being with him and certainly at Cambridge, there was a group of predominantly American girls, who really just enjoyed, you know, and included him in everything. So, I don't know whether it was a preference of his, I think it was just that, you know, they were, you know, that they were happy for him, they, they enjoyed his company.
619. ...he wasn't really a night person. He wasn't one for, for nights, but otherwise, I'd say anytime really.
620. ...very unusual, very unusual (for Scott to stay out overnight).
621. ...Now my father was somebody who used to organise these um, they were Fred Nile's equivalent of the moral majority...I forget what they were called but it was some kind of moral majority kind of marches...dad used to organise these things. So he was the typical kind of guy who absolutely loved his son, loved Scottie, welcomed Scottie into the family but then would go out and, you know, have these, these, sexual morality marches...I remember, you know, one day, um, at home saying to my sister, "Look, I'm just going to have the whole thing out with dad. I'm sick of all this playing around" and she just begged me. She said, "Please don't, please don't. Just please don't. Just understand the way they think about these things. Everything is fine the way it is".

Witness:



Signature:

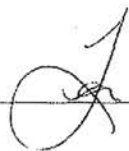


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

622. ...So somebody like Steve Johnson then marches into the private life of our family, a family that like every family, negotiates the different things that happens within families and then accuses me of being a closet queen. Well, good luck to him. That's his problem. It's not my problem. I am not going to be defined by my sexuality and I'm not going to be defined by other people telling...me, "You're gay, therefore you should do 'X'... and I'm not equally going to have muscle Mary's and drag queens telling me, "You're gay, you've got to dress up in frilly dresses and you've got to take anabolic steroids and you've got to muscle-up and you've got to have a certain kind of wallpaper in your...". I'm not going to be, I'm not like that...I'm not going to be defined by that. And these terms like "closet" and all the rest of it, fine, they can have them, but that's his problem. That's his term. It's not, it's not a term that means anything to me at all. I've been a teacher long enough to see, there are horrendous circumstances that some kids have to work through and how so much can impact on the closest relationships that they have and the relationships with their parents and their siblings and it can tear them apart.
623. ...I'm really lucky. I've had a, a family right from the very beginning, who have supported me, all of my relationships...to the full extent that is available, without me having to compromise their standing in the kinds of faith communities that they belong to. That's how things have worked for me.
624. ...(Scott) did go for long runs and his brother and Boston, we have this annual marathon. It's a huge thing and his brother has been going into this Boston Marathon ever since, you know, the year dot...and Scott...used to do quite a lot of running...I may have had a conversation (about Scott running with Megan Aplin). I may have, I don't recall it.
625. ...Well there is one piece of information that I need to share with you and it's something that's, that may or may not go anywhere. Um, and it's something that came up in a conversation with my mother a few days ago. Um, mum, I hope you'll meet mum but you'll find that mum is sort of going in and out of focus, that she has these moments of memory and then she has these moments of, this whole thing of Scott has, has very, very deeply affected her. But she told me that there was one, I, I'll try to clarify this with her tomorrow, or perhaps you'd rather I

Witness:



Signature:

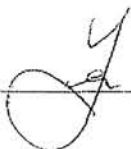


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

- didn't. Perhaps you'd rather speak to her. You decide. But that the, the, ah, she came down to, to Scott's room, that Scott had an Asian guy staying in the house with him for one night, or more than that. Um, and this is something that I'd never heard of and it doesn't, mum said to me, "Does that mean anything to you?" and she said no, and she said, "They were making a terrible racket". She said, "They were, some kind of callisthenics or something that they were doing downstairs"...
626. ...mum later on ran into them in the city, or somewhere. So, they were doing something together that wasn't obviously a University thing. Did Scott have some kind of life in Sydney that I don't know anything about?
627. (On walks Scott would take) an absolute minimum. And I would always laugh that he took nail clippers. I couldn't understand why somebody always needed to have nail clippers with them. Ah, he would have a wallet that he nearly always wore in the front and it would be a vegetarian wallet. It wouldn't be a leather one, it would be made of one of these kind of webbing material kinds of things. But an absolute minimum. Very often a...pencil...and sometimes this raggedy little black kind of address contact book. He thought about mathematics a lot and I know this sounds strange, but he will get these mathematical ideas, or he'd solve a theorem or he'd think of a problem and he'd pull out a pencil and paper and he would nearly always be with a pencil or a paper or this little book...he just wasn't an accessories person.
628. ...a hat, maybe. Sunglasses, probably never.... always these white socks, always trainer/runner type shoes... often shorts, even in the cold weather...and a minimum of cash...and usually a cash card, that would be within the wallet...that's about it...
629. (On Scott's access to money) ...he was very, very frugal. He needed very little, he was very used to spending very little money. He was, as all students did, he was, he was a poor student...and his needs were very simple needs and \$10 back then, is worth a lot more than it is now, obviously.
630. ...No, no (Scott would not have to ask to buy clothes)...but it was me who had to convince him to buy clothes...he just didn't think like that, you know. I mean he...was just very used to getting by on the minimum and being happy with that...the fact is that I was the earner but I was also the provider. I mean I was

Witness:



Signature:

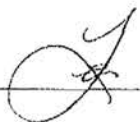


P.S.Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

- paying a mortgage and, you know, he lived in my house rent free...in fact I don't think it was rent free. I think we had some kind of arrangement where a certain amount of his, his allowance, went towards the mortgage, or something like that.
631. (Regarding Scott's spending)...Really just really basic things, like you know, the occasional book, occasional movie ticket...lunch...I can't think of anything out of the ordinary.
632. (Money) wasn't an issue, I mean the only issue was that neither of us had enough, but hey, you know, we were young and healthy and you know, having a good time...
633. ...(Scott's type of mathematics) are susceptible to certain kinds of practical application and Scott was always worried that he was going to have to he was going to find a future in defence. There's a very, very big, call for people like Scott in defence and Scott was very much a pacifist. He was very influenced by a course on Ghandi that he did at the Caltech and he didn't, he didn't like being pushed into, either defence applications to find more and more efficient ways of killing larger and larger numbers of people, and he didn't like being pushed into business, where it was, you know, he, he had this much, perhaps even romantic or artistic idea of his mathematics.
634. ...he was really fascinated by people like Alan Turing, who, who were amazing mathematicians but who were interested in, not the actual application in terms of business or defence, but in terms of building complex systems...as you'll read in some of those letters, those letters that Scott wrote to me at the beginning of '86, were when Scott was working for a Professor at Harvard, Fechauser, who was, um, an, an economist who specialises in an area called econometrics and econometrics is about finding mathematical models for behaving, for explaining human behaviour in the marketplace. So they have these extremely complex mathematical models for saying why somebody will choose one product over another, or, now and Scott really found that quite dirty.
635. ...(Scott) found that...the mathematics, it wasn't very good, that he was kind of being used for something that was really, not only beneath him, but the math wasn't, simply very good. Ah, and he felt that they couldn't make the conclusions they were making from it. But he also just felt he didn't want to be involved in that

Witness:



Signature:


 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

kind of, that his, his research was much more abstract, much more theoretical.

And low and behold, when he came to Australia, he was found, this [REDACTED] at Macquarie University, as felt as some folks down at ANU, who really were these kind of pure mathematicians and that, he kind of really found his world.

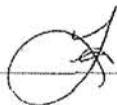
636. ...being very, very shy...not being somebody who could make friends easily.

He's found it difficult to make friends, to make contact with people at the best of times. And this is one of the things that you will find when you are investigating our life together in Canberra, that very, very quickly, it was my friends who became Scott's friends. It was my family who became Scott's family..Scott did have a few other friends in Canberra..he may have, and he made some interesting attempts at Macquarie University to join a skating club, about which I know very little, but I really sort of encouraged, and to join a choir at Macquarie University...and I encouraged these things...but the fact is, that most of the friends he had in Australia were in fact my friends.

637. ...(Scott) and Steve had this, this really almost, um, almost sort of German idea of educating themselves... and being interested in culture and literature and civilisation and all that kind of stuff...

638. ...(Scott) was a person of enormous integrity. He was somebody who really valued honesty and integrity. He had a very, very strict honour code, a very, very strict sense of ethics. A very, very strict sense of what was right and what was wrong...he was a very empathetic person. He hated to see other people suffering, or other people hurt and he was very sensitive to other people and I noticed this particularly when I'd collect him at the Canberra Station after he'd been staying with my, parent's place, because he would always say something about what mum was feeling. You know, he was very attuned to the way people would feel...very shy, reluctant to press his desires on other people, nevertheless, there were things that you would, that nobody would be able to make him do. If he believed something was wrong, there was no way that he would be pressed into doing that...whether it was something trivial, like walking against a stop light or if it was something, you know, more serious...people liked Scott.

Witness:



Signature:

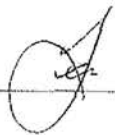


P.S.Young

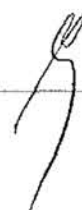
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

639. ...I don't know of anybody who disliked him and I know that people felt very comfortable around him...he was very, very hardworking. He was very modest, very self effacing...I think perhaps he was a little too easily influenced by other people. I gave that example before about how he was talked into moving in for a few days with this cult, these Moonies...I actually find that a little bit disturbing actually, that he could be, in some ways, a bit clueless - - -
640. ...(introvert is a) technical term and I'm not a qualified psychologist, so I, I can't use that term in a technical way, but I'm sure that people would think of him as, on the scale of things, much more introvert than extrovert..I think it would be fair to describe him as introverted, yes, yeah.
641. (The police interviewer relates a note on autism that she made during an earlier phone conversation with [REDACTED]. He responds -)
642. ...Did I say that?...Are you sure I said that?...Are you sure?...You know I wonder...dear friends of mine in Boston have had their...their son, he's just less than 2 years old...they've had him diagnosed as autistic..but I can't, I honestly can't remember, my God, did I say that to you... in a phone, well, oh gee, I, I'm afraid I, well I think I'd like to withdraw that. I mean I don't think that that, that's a fair thing to say...I mean especially as, I mean what does Autism mean? I mean that's a huge, it's a vast spectrum. He's very, he was very, he was very, very, shy. Um, I don't, I don't want to use that word...I'm wondering how I, how I used it with you. I wonder if it was sort of buzzing around in my mind because of this recent (diagnosis).
643. ...(Scott) found any, any kind of interaction with people very, very difficult and he would say to me, "Climbing The Matterhorn with Steve is nothing, it's a challenge for Steve", but he would say, "My Matterhorn is walking into a room, a crowded room"...and right from the time when I met him in Cambridge, he would talk to me over and over about this, about how difficult it was for him to walk into a room to, how difficult it was for him to, and I remember a number of times discussing this from very many angles, but one of the important angles was for, to advance an academic career, you need to have important people on your side, who will write references and you really need to smooze with these people...You need to go up to them and say, "Hi, I'm Scott Johnson. I do this work and I'm

Witness:



Signature:



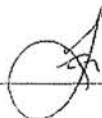
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

really interested in your work" and you need to, his, his year at Cambridge was just a year and, you know, it was so much easier for him to stay in his room by himself than it was to go out. Um, he found any kind of socialising difficult. He found any kind of making contact with people difficult...I think it's a gross exaggeration to use the word Autistic, and if I did do that, I didn't mean to. But, on the other hand, interactions with people he found very difficult.

644. ...(Scott) seemed to be in a dream world. I mean I used to often talk, talk to him about how things are on your planet, you know. What are things like in, on your planet, you know, the kinds of, the common expression in The States and probably in Australia is "geeks". These are the kids in the class who are the brainy kids. They're the ones who are not playing football, they are the ones who are not out partying...they're the ones who are wearing ill-fitting clothes and, and I'm afraid mathematics departments throughout the world, Universities, are full of these geeks. Their hair is all over the place, they've got, you know, but it's not, I mean, you know, he was like that. He was very much at home with that kind of thing. He's, so he wasn't your, he wasn't, he wasn't very conscious of the kind of clothes that was wearing, he wasn't very conscious of the way that he would interact with people. He wasn't very polished in his interactions with people. He wasn't, but I mean it wasn't off the spectrum, whacko.
645. ...this is what I find really strange about being told that his clothes were neatly folded on that cliff, because he was not capable of being neat and tidy. He was, really, he was just really messy...he wasn't neat and tidy...he was also astonishingly unattached to possessions...he was somebody who travelled very, very lightly, who owned very, very few things.
646. ...every now and again he can have a glass of, a glass of wine. Especially, um, if we were, um, out. He liked beer, but not a lot...I mean I think I once saw him just slightly intoxicated, but I wouldn't say drunk...neither of us drank very much.
647. ...I think, with a sense of, I think it (vegetarianism) came from this course that he did at um, Caltech on Ghandi. He was very influenced by Ghandi and Ghandi of course had a very, very strict exercise regime, a very strict diet and was a pacifist and I think Scott in some ways, was very, very influenced by Ghandi. And

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



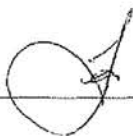
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

ah, you know, I remember he used to talk about his vegetarian belts. He have these belts that weren't leather, because, you know, leather was, you know, from an animal of course. And um, but he wasn't somebody to impose these kinds of views on me and I was, and still am, a real carnivore...but, but he was very healthy, he looked after himself and in that last year, in '88, he really started to go to the gym and really beef himself up and I remember being sort of quite surprised really. You'd wake up in the morning and you'd see, you know, this kind of beefed up guy beside you and kind of, you know. But I don't think it had anything to do with anabolic steroids, or anything like that. I think it was just the fact that he was a young guy in the prime of life, who looked after himself and was serious about exercise.

648. ...(Scott) use to love hiking. He used to love walking. He would go on incredibly long walks without the slightest complaint. Ah, we was, ah, he, he had a capacity to put (up) with discomfort that was impressive...he did a lot of thinking while he was walking and he felt, he felt solitude so much easier to deal with than other people. He loved nature, he loved animals...
649. ...the fact that he would walk somewhere like from, even from Lane Cove, right out to Manly. For most of us, that would see completely bizarre. Why would you, would you even think of that? Would you even know the route? How would you do it?...that's the kind of thing that Scottie would quite readily just set out on his, his own and do. I actually don't believe that he walked that whole way. In fact we know that there was a bus ticket, so he didn't do that. But I mean, going to places that were, where there was a lot of nature, you know, he would definitely enjoy that.
650. ...and I remember dad saying to me, dad died in 1991, and Scottie would go on these long walks and he would tell dad, you know, where he'd been and I remember dad saying, oh yes, he said, "I, I think that it was, that North Head, that he, he went one time, because he said, he, I remember him coming back and telling me about seeing kangaroos". He said, "What about Scottie going all the way out there? You know, no doubt about these Yanks, you know, they'll walk and walk and walk".

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

651. ...(Scott) I think he would become withdrawn. Withdrawn and frustrated. I don't think I ever saw him do anything violent. I don't think I ever saw him do anything, he would feel hurt. He'd sort of internalise things actually. He would internalise things and he would also find ways of avoiding thinking about it. There were strategies that he developed when he was growing up. You know, he would be screamed at by Dennis and criticised and he would find a world, his own sort of imaginative world that he'd get himself lost in. He loved movies. That was a world that would get lost in. He loved things like Star Trek and you know, his mathematics just became this kind of self-contained world that nobody else could enter. It was a, you know, it sounds weird to folks like us because this is a kind of a world that is just, even for most mathematics people, this kind of Category Theory, Number Theory, this kind of stuff is so abstract that it's a, very much its own world. But he would, he would retire in, into that world. It was a way partly of avoiding things, but partly occupying his mind. So if there were major setbacks, that's how he would react.
652. (Regarding his knowledge of Scott's health)...I don't know everything about his health, but as far as I know, he was a very, very healthy specimen in every way. That he suffered from no conditions, he took no drugs, no medication, I don't know of any kind of complaints that he had and um, he was a very healthy specimen...I know of no evidence to suggest that there was...anything like that (mental illness).
653. (Regarding Scott talking to [REDACTED] of his mental health) ...Yes...well the example that I'm going to use is that letter he wrote me saying he tried to kill himself. So (that) was letting me know. ..But obviously that was pretty extreme...you know, he didn't find communicating easy...Maybe there was some terrible thing that was bothering him but he didn't bring it to my attention. Would he have? I hope so... that's all I can say.
654. ...And, and I can say that the one time when he really was very, very, very, very close to some kind of terrible action, that he did communicate with me, but he communicated with me after he found it impossible to carry out the suicide...
655. ...I don't think there was any sign of him being suicidal (in the months before his death). There was nothing, there was nothing about him that made me

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



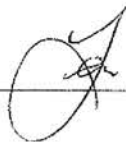
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


concerned. Now I'm no expert of course, but there was nothing there that would make, in fact quite the opposite...he was fun to be with and you know, I hope that you'll ask this question to other people who saw him at the same time too, because I don't think any of us saw any, anything that would make us think that there was any problem and certainly not any problem so big that there was only one way out.

656. ...I mean the shyness was something that, you know, he, he was dealing with and was aware of and that worried him, but hey, you know, people, some people are shy.
657. ...he wasn't an unhealthy person...he was also not somebody, one of these types who would run to the...pharmacy, or run...to the doctor if there was a problem...and the problems we're talking about, if there were any, they would, they're so trivial that I can't remember any...
658. ...Scottie was the kind of person that you, you, you didn't lose your cool with. He was, he's a really kind of soul. He was a very vulnerable kind of soul. He wasn't the kind of person that you ever, you know, you got very cranky with.
659. ...it was funny, it was hard to get to communicate with him, but it was very rewarding when you really could communicate with him. But to get to that point where you could really have a meeting of minds about something important...it took work. I mean I feel, I, with most people you can get to that stage pretty quickly, but to get into that kind of space of mutual trust and mutual you know, honesty, with Scott and at least for me, took preparation and took, leading up to choosing the time, thinking carefully through the language...
660. ...I think because of the way our two personalities interacted. You can hear it on a person that finds it easy to talk. I talk too much...he wasn't like that. He was somebody...who was intensely sensitive to the possibility of confrontation. You know, if he could sense in your tone of voice, or something, that there was going to be a confrontation, he would sort of close down...to avoid it, to deal with it...so you needed to, you know, be sort of terribly gentle about the way sensitive matters would be talked about. And I'm afraid, you know, I just decided that this business (Scott's affair with the man from Macquarie University) was something that I needed to take my time about and I needed to...(avoid) it too. I didn't really

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

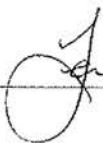
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

want to have a confrontation and I didn't like the thought of it. The whole matter of it was a bit, it was a bit disgusting. It was a bit gross. You felt dirty, you felt horrible. You know. It feels demeaning...

661. Family Relations

662. ...he talked a lot about his family. He talked a lot about his family. He talked a lot about, and I encouraged him to. Um, he was very, he was very, very fond of his mum, um, but it was a difficult relationship with his mum. She apparently was a, a, well, a very shy person and I think there was a part of her that resented the shyness that she saw in Scott, who was, it was almost as if he reminded her of things about herself that she didn't like. Um, I don't want to play amateur psychologist here. You know, I'm, I'm just trying to remember the things that I was told.
663. ...Scott's father, Scott had very little relationship with (him) really, and the father and the mother separated and so much of Scott's early upbringing... That, that when Dennis moved in, ah, that things really got really tough for, for the kids, particularly for Steve and Scott. And Steve and Scott had a, a relationship with which, I have never come across a relationship between siblings that was so close and a, a kind of co-dependency that I think borders on, bordered on abnormal. They were incredibly close. Yet when I say "borders on abnormal", that family situation was a very abnormal one from my point of view.
664. ...my family upbringing was a very traditional Irish/Catholic family, complete fidelity, you know, a, just the sort of, the model, you know, Catholic family really. It was just, you know, incredibly loving parents, amazingly you know, I mean just really, we're incredibly lucky kids. We had, I mean, our parents did everything for us. Ah, we were just incredibly lucky and, and it was a bit shocking to me to hear from Scott about an experience which was so different from my own.
665. ...Scott did not have, Scott was fond of his sister...but didn't have very, very much in common with her. But you know, by far away the dominant relationship was with Steve and it was Steve and Scott against Dennis. Dennis was the no-hoping, good-for-nothing, couch potato, um, ah, guy who treated them, treated them very, very badly. I don't think there was any physical abuse. I don't think

Witness:



Signature:



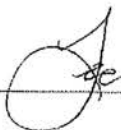
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

there was any sexual abuse but if somebody told me there was, I wouldn't be surprised...I mean the, the screaming at and yelling at I know about.

666. ...I remember that I read in Steve Johnson's correspondence to Scott, and I read this after. Actually Scott used to show me, Scott was, Scott, Scott used to show me every letter he received from Steve. Um, he was very, I know Steve used to write about this and it was clear from what I was read and what I read in Steve's letters, that, you know, this wasn't something that was imagined from Scott's point of view. This really was these kids' experience. They were incredibly poor...you know they moved from place to place...Scott grew with... never having a circle of friends... because they moved from high school, to high school, to high school, to high school and you know, I think in circumstances like that, if you have a, a brother who's on your side, that becomes your world, doesn't it? That's your stability.
667. ...I'm not in a place to make judgements about Scott's mother, but I, I, you know, I, I think the kids felt they were being pretty much neglected, that they couldn't rely on her, that they had to be self-reliant...they learnt self-reliance very, very quickly and that, I mean my view, we did too, but, and we had all the, all the, I mean in our family we had all the advantages of a loving, stable family, so, self-reliance isn't necessary. But that, but you know, they knew that they had to, they had to develop strategies to rely on themselves, that they, they weren't going to get an easy ride through life.
668. ...he (Scott)...worked for...some chicken place where he used to, it was fast food chicken place that he worked in...his job I think was mainly cleaning up the place and it was a fast food place. And he used to do a lot of odd jobs at Disneyland. He really enjoyed the Disneyland jobs, they lived close to, to Disneyland.
669. ...it didn't take long for Steve to realise that there was money to be made in computing and that Scott's mathematics was very useful for that and they started to develop...a kind of a prototype of a company really and they, they worked summers in a place called Broderick, which I think, I think it was a, I don't know what kind of manufacturing. I think it might have been a clothes place. It was in Kansas, so they'd have these, these intensive periods in Kansas during the

Witness:



Signature:



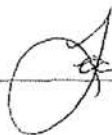
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

summer, where they'd book into a, some kind of skanky motel room, um, and they'd, these are kids, you know...they'd eat fast food and they just worked with building the computer system for the sales and inventory of this place. And this was good for a whole lot of reasons because it, ah, got them away from home, it earned them some money, ah, it developed for them a vision for where they might go in their future professional lives and it was a way of Scott realising that, you know, this mathematics thing and computer stuff, he was really interested in it. He was really, you know, and wasn't worried by the, the difficulties of, the economic and other difficulties of living at home.

670. ... I'd say that he would have been an undergraduate. I think he would have been round about, you know, first, first or second year of, of University...maybe even when he got, went to Caltech. Caltech is a really elite, one of the world's really elite universities and his, his being accepted to Caltech was a, a really, an incredibly important moment for him, because suddenly this world of higher education, of learning, of ah, and of like-minded people, a real community of like-minded people, where he lived. I mean, University in The States isn't like University here, you go and live there. That was a, a point of, this was a major step for him away from this rather, rather less than nurturing home environment.
671. ...I was deeply upset and remain deeply upset to this day, that Scott's parents never made any contact with me at all, ever. And I reached out to them and it was Scott's father's wife, Antonia, who was the only one who would respond to me. And when, I can't remember when this was, but I kept some of Scott's things. There were very simple kind of mementos, degree certificates...clothes I think. I sent them off to Antonia. She was the only member of that family who would have anything to do with me. ...what Scott found in his relationship with me and our friends, well and with my family, was the kind of family life that he just never experienced back there.
672. ...as soon as he became interested in Category Theory, it was clear the Category Theory was happening at Macquarie University and there was this [REDACTED], who would be interested in, in Scott's work and would allow him to come to the seminar every week at Macquarie. The question of, was, well, "O.K., where do I stay at?". "Well of course you stay at my family's

Witness:



Signature:



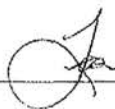
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

place", so mum said, "You know, which room would you like?". Mum would iron his clothes, do his laundry, he had his room.

673. ...dad would drive Scott to places...dad took a particular liking to Scott...in some ways I think Scott was more like the kind of son dad would have like to have had, rather than me. Dad was a real footballer, a real sports type and you know, to have this kind of musician type who was interested in books and you know, stuff, really, I mean, I wasn't the kind of son that, I mean my father and I were very different kind of people and Scott had an easy kind of way with dad that, that I never had. Um, and Scott found, Scott found a really, you know, nurturing family life with, with my family...and my friends.
674. ...and I guess it was after his death that I, I started just to experience, first from Steve, but, but then from other members of his family, this sort of just complete coldness, as if I just completely didn't exist. You know? And it was, it was just so unlike the way we did things. Um, you know, it's, when you meet mum, you'll, you'll realise this. You know, she was a, she was one of these home-builders really. She was a person who, who made sure relationships worked, who made sure that people were comfortable who, you know, and in fact, mum was probably the person in Sydney who Scott had most to do with. Um, I'm not sure that there were any secrets that they shared with each other, but you know, they were, I, I know there were secrets they shared with each other, because I would drive to the, to, to collect Scott from the Canberra railway station every, whichever night of the week it was, and you know, he would say to me, you know, "Your mum's worried about [REDACTED]". You know, he'd sort of say, "Your mum's worried about [REDACTED]". And clearly mum had been talking to him about the things that were on her mind...he was part of the family.
675. ...but it became clear to me in shocking ways at various stages that he wasn't used to this at all. This wasn't, you know, I mean the idea that, that, that I, as a student living in Cambridge, well of course my aunt who's visiting the UK, well of course she's going to come and stay and of course we going to have Christmas dinner together and of course, you know? And so I remember, I remember very clearly um, in that house there, in Cambridge when my aunt came to, she's a Nun. You know, she's the, she won an Order of Australia. She's a fantastic

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



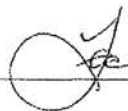
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

woman. She, she was, she, she was a pioneer in um, in, in the provision of hospices for the families of kids who have terminal illnesses...but you know, she said..."For God's sake..." she said, "...you two are going into the double bed. I'm going to be in the single bed", you know, "Let's get real about this". You know, there was never any kind of, Scott was kind of, "Wow, this is a Nun and she's O.K. with us being a couple and, and this is all kind of normal in your house?" and you know, and your family, and this, this, this was a kind of a revelation to him. You know?

676. He (Scott) was very, very loyal to his family. He was very, he was, he would say very blunt things about Dennis, but his family, no. His family was, was very, was important to him and, ah no, I never heard anything. Um, I, I mean I, many times he told me that one of his reasons for coming to Cambridge, and indeed one of the reasons for coming to Australia, was that, but especially for Cambridge, was that he felt that his brother was dominating his life and he thought that in order to grow up, he needed to get away from his brother's influence. He felt that it was too easy for Steve to make, that is how they'd grown up. Steve had protected Scott and, and I've already mentioned to you that I think, and in fact I said to Steve, you know, it's funny that Scott was trying to, in some ways, get away from a dominant personality and yet he attached himself to somebody else that was also a really dominant personality (that being himself).
677. ...but, ...and I mean I really think that at some kind of level, that Steve took an instant dislike to me, before meeting me, because he saw me as a kind of a, as a rival in a way. It's amateur psychology. Maybe I'm completely wrong.
678. ...she (Scott's half-sibling Rebecca) was very, very young and Scott didn't know her very well...I'd hear the name very occasionally around about birthday times. "I must remember Rebecca's birthday".
679. ...(Scott) didn't have much in common with Terry. He used to laugh and say "My sister's a welder", you know, "Isn't that funny?"...you know, a, a welder, an oxy-acetylene welder...I would doubt (if they wrote to each other) very much. And I say I doubt that, because when we were preparing the, the submission that we put to the Minister for Immigration, we needed to get, um, Statutory Declarations from family members and that kind of, it did two things really. It

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

meant that the whole question about our relationship was being laid out very clearly in terms that they needed to understand. We were an exclusive gay couple and I don't think Scott was worried about that, but I remember that we discussed about, it was opening up a slightly new, a, a, a level of communication with Terry that he wasn't used to. A kind of level of talking to her that was, it was new.

680. ...But it wasn't so much that case with Steve, except that this question of Scott being gay was, and, and Steve and Scott communicating that to Steve. That was a, um, that was a, an area of great psychological anguish to Scott. And I remember very clearly one very, very cold Cambridge evening, we went out into the Market Square to use one of those red pillar box public phones, call boxes in England, that were back in those days, and I remember Scott said, "I want you to be with me. I'm going to tell Steve" and I was out there in the cold, I can remember, pacing around this phone box and I went in there and then, and I can hear, I can hear Scott saying to Steve, um, "and I've got, you know...", and he said, "...and her name is Michelle". And I'm just thinking, "Oh". You know, I just felt my stomach, and I thought, "O.K. you know, right. O.K. So this is, this is going to be problematic and now I have to pretend I'm Michelle. How am I going to do that?". Ah, it was, you know, really difficult for him...


681. But the very fact that he was telling his brother about me was a milestone in our relationship. In Scott's eyes, this was like, "Hey, look, I've got...", you know, "...there's something really special happening here and you need to know about this". And then there's kind of complete, and, and Scott used to talk about being flustered. He said, "I got flustered, I'd be flustered". This was the thing that happened to him when he walked into a crowded room, or he tried to ask a question at a seminar, or something. He, he, he got flustered and that, you know, he just sort of clammed up, or, and you know, ah, and there it was happening again and you know...

682. ...he talked about it quite a lot and, and we talked about it (why he couldn't tell Stephen that, that it was [REDACTED] that he was with and not Michelle)...and I'm sure, I'm not sure that I was very helpful, because I just was saying, "Listen,

Witness:



Signature:



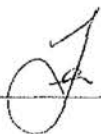
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

you've just got to go and say it. You've just got to go and say it". You know.
 "Nobody else can do it for you and you've just got to lay it out"...

683. ...the esteem of his brother was the most important thing in his life. He, he needed to gain his brother's approval for everything and he was desperately worried that he wasn't going to get that approval from his brother. He was also worried that he would be rejected by his brother and this would have been quite devastating. Rejection from his family I don't think he was ever really worried about. He wasn't terribly close to people and I, I don't know how that would have worked out with his mum, but Steve's approval was absolutely paramount.
684. ...there is nothing unusual about families rejecting ah, siblings on the basis of such a revelation...I mean I know this from my own experience...one of my best friends at high school, wanted nothing to do with me at all, as soon as he found that out, that I was gay. And one of my best friends at University, here at Sydney University, was thrown out of his house by his parents when he told them that he was gay. They said, "You're not living in the same house as your little brother", it's like, so, you know.
685. So you know, that wasn't unusual and it wasn't difficult for me to understand that in this case and I think the fear for Scott was more the, well, no, there was two. It was, it was the carrot and stick. I mean there was the, the fear of being rejected, (by) the person who was probably most important to him in his life and, and the fear of not having that kind of a hundred per cent approval.
686. ...there are letters...written in the year of Scott's death from Steve saying, "You know, I think I've come to a better understanding of your personal life". So it was clearly, it wasn't as if it was a matter that was even resolved in 1988, if I am to read that letter correctly.
687. ...So I'd say that Scott understood that there was some kind of, and you know, look, I mean, I gay person is socialised the same way as a straight person is. You're in the locker rooms, you hear everything, you hear about the bashings, you hear about the, you know, you see the bullying, you're part of it. You know, you know from a very early age that, you know, there's a, it's not cool to be gay.
688. ...you'll know that there's now a point of contention...when ah, I arrived in Boston in 1985, and the understanding was that Scott and I were going to stay at

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Steve and Rose's place, ah, in Essex Street. Scott arrived at the bus station to meet me there, I'd taken the bus up from New York, to announce to me, he said, "Look we can't stay, we can't there", ...he said, "One, one or the other of us can stay there" but he said that Rose has said, she's "not having any of that at this house". Now, I remember thinking, okay so Rose is of Hispanic origin, Mexican I think, maybe Catholic, maybe religion is an issue here...


689. ...but what, the message that was clear to me then was that, well look let's face it, Steve and Rose were students. These were University students. We were University students. Scott and I were travelling at a time when the US dollar was at a massive high against the pound. It was basically a pound to a dollar. We were both penniless and not only were we both penniless, we were really used to bunking up on couches and that kind of thing. We were young and we were, and for me, this was my first visit to the United States. This was, you know, a, this was kind of part of the adventure.

690. ...Steve Johnson at the second Inquest has taken issue with this whole story and now claims that the reason that we weren't allowed to stay there was because of the limited square footage...

691. ...whatever Steve says about his accepting Scott, Scott was not convinced that he was accepted that, that I was accepted as a partner as equal as Steve's partner was accepted and that..Scott's being gay was a problem and such a problem that we couldn't even stay with them. It was fine for us to go and have dinner with them in a Mexican restaurant afterwards in Albert Square but not to stay at their place...that hurt Scott, that really hurt Scott...and that we...barely expressed but deep, deep, deep anguish that he felt.

692. (Scott's reaction to this hurt was) I can see...this kind of grimace. I can see this kind of grimace that he used to have. It was sort of, he would kind of recoil. He was a big, strong guy, very handsome but he didn't always carry himself with sort of confidence. He didn't seem to be the, you know, he didn't seem to be the master of the room...he and Steve and Rose used to go on these really, really long hiking expeditions. Sometimes in Mexico and other places. And they always used to say that Scottie was like the little puppy. You know, he was the, and he was like a little puppy, actually in some ways. He was there, he was

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



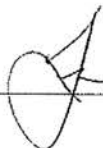
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

faithful, but he was just sort of following...he said that they used to call him "the puppy".

693. ...I can't tell you the exact date of (Scott telling Stephen about his relationship with [REDACTED]) ...but it obviously occurred before the Statutory Declaration that Steve Johnson signed that we used as part of our application for permanent resident status for Scott when we applied to the Minister for Immigration...but I suspect it probably would have been some time before that...this was clear (to Steve) when we went... to the United States and we were denied the possibility of staying at Steve and Rose's place...Definitely that would be, it would have been a little bit before that date and that was 1985.
694. ...I don't recall him talking very much about his mum at all. I know that there was a, a kind of underlying affection there. I, I was just amazed at how little contact he had with his family, particularly with his mother actually. Um, you know, it was so different from my own experience.
695. (On his first meeting with Stephen) ...I think it was all really quite relaxed, really...I kind of felt a little bit like the prospective groom meeting the prospective bride's parent. I felt that I was the subject of you know, them giving me the once over and you know, deciding, you know, exactly what this character was all about. And there was a fair bit of, especially between Steve and me, there was a fair bit of, ah, sort of academic posturing. You know, these two, both of us were ambitious, young graduate students who were keen to show how articulate we were and how clever we were and I think that there as a little, and when I look back on it now, I think how very squirm-making and embarrassing that you could behave like that. But of course, I'm surrounded by students who behave like that all the time now and I can see that I probably, we probably behaved very much in that, in that kind of way...there wasn't any, there wasn't any aggression and there wasn't any arguments and there wasn't any...wasn't any discussion of why we can't put you up here (that is, stay of the home of Steve and Rose).
696. ...There wasn't, "Hey, look, this is a really tiny apartment. I'm really sorry that you can't stay here". So there was this kind of underlying tension and, and I rather wanted to get that out in the open, but I also realised that the most important thing was that, it was really important for Scott that there was a, a

Witness:



Signature:



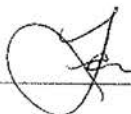
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

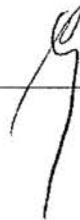
reasonable kind of vibe going on. You know, and I didn't want to get in the way of that.

697. (On the subject of why they were in the US at this time) Essentially, that, that, the reason was for us to be together...because Scott had finished his studies in Cambridge (UK), his visa had run out as well as his source of funding. So he needed to leave the UK...but he got himself a teacher's assistantship at Berkeley University in The Bay area of San Francisco...so he was living there, so I applied for a semester off.
698. ...I know that in those letters that Scott wrote (in 1986) to me from Cambridge, Massachusetts that he referred to discussions with his brother and I've also seen letters from his brother, from Steve to Scott, saying that Steve wanted to talk more about his personal life. Other than that, I don't have very much to offer. I mean I, I, I'm not, I, I wasn't somebody who was interrogating Scott about the kinds of discussions he had with his brother and I was only too happy to listen when he told me things but I didn't, you know, ask him.
699. ...I received nothing from Steve saying, "I don't approve this (relationship), I don't like you, get out", but where was nothing positive either...the few times that he had an opportunity for instance to let us stay with him, it was not only made clear that we couldn't, but it was pretty much implied that it was because of our relationship that we were not...I've never had the sense that Steve was supportive, either of me or Scott's relationship with me. And I mean, maybe it's just that Steve never liked me. I always thought it was more than that, because it's something that I felt before I'd even met him. That even before I'd met the guy, it was not about who [REDACTED] is, but the fact that he is the gay, a gay guy with an interest in my brother. And, uh-uh, that's not what Steve wants.
700. ...I got that impression from Steve and from the complete absence of anything that would show something more welcoming, or more, or more accepting really...nothing that he's done and his subsequent behaviour has made me feel that...there's any genuine support for our relationship.
701. ...and you know, I see this, this recent (activity by Steve), completely over the top and very, very public, um, media circus with dancing in Mardi Gras parades and all that, I just see that as, I see that as theatre.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

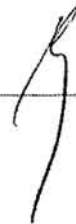
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

702. ... (Scott) desperately wanted Steve's support... I think in his mind it was a matter of reciprocation. It was a matter of, you know, Scott supported Steve's relationship with Rose Marie, Scott was the best man at their wedding. Scott was, you know, overjoyed at their relationship, et cetera and he just wanted the same back.... I mean, these are things that, and I felt utterly unable to do anything. These were problems that I felt I couldn't solve.
703. ... I remember him very clearly, and very many times, talking about, you know, how he needed to, to get out of the strong influence of his brother. That he felt, felt that he was being dominated and crowded and that decisions were being made for him and that he wasn't being heard... he realised that this is, that he, that Scott himself was the key to this. That it was Scott himself had to find a way of being in the world that wasn't overshadowed by Steve... I think that this was something that happened, and a lot in their working relationship too...
704. ... Scott used to tell me that Steve had this idea of this company that they were going to call Johnson and Johnson and you know, Scott was going to provide so much of the, the, really the, the, the whiz kid mathematical computer um, know how to all of this and, and Scott felt that he was kind of being shoe-horned into um, you know, being part of a, an enterprise that was of Steve's designing. And I think that Scott very much... did not want his life to be like that. Um, yet at the same time, it was very, very difficult because, you know, Scott was very, very, very fond of Steve. I mean they were very, very close – scarily close.
705. ... Steve's graduate work at Harvard was in um, public policy... he was at the Kennedy School of Government... whereas Scott, from a very, very early on, physics and at high mathematics and particularly these extremely abstract forms of mathematics, like Number Theory and Category Theory. These are, these are very esoteric kinds of math and they're the kinds of math that are not easily susceptible to practical application.
706. (Regarding the wedding of Mr Johnson)... I don't think I took any... I mean I don't think I felt any... I don't think I felt slighted by (not being invited as Scott's partner of two years)
707. (Regarding Scott's sexuality and his family)... I know that there was a bit of trepidation on Scott's part about having to... or wanting to talk to Steve about

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

things...about Scott's sexuality, about our relationship...Just a kind of generalised anxiety about the subject...

708. ...what he wanted to do was...for it not to be a question, for it not to be an issue, for him to be accepted for who he was in the totality of who he was. And I think that he saw going to the wedding as a far of saying, "Hey, look I accept you and I, I rejoice in you and your relationship with Rose Marie" and, and implying "That it would be very nice if you would do, do the same to me". And I think that was the outcome that he wanted and I think that he went with a positive hope but a feeling of apprehension.

709. Suicide

710. So it was when I was there that Scott wrote me a letter and this letter said, "I have had sex, unsafe sex with somebody. I convinced myself that I had contracted AIDS and I've tried to throw myself off the Golden Gate bridge". Um, he said, I, I remember the words, he said, "I, I tried to do away with myself". Now this was a letter, I wish to God I had kept that letter. I didn't keep that letter. But I immediately got in touch with him by phone and we talked through and by the time that I called him, time had already elapsed since, since he'd written the letter. He was actually pretty cool about it. I was the one who was really uptight about it. I was the one who was, "What the hell?", you know? And I remember having a really good conversation with him and it was a conversation that was like, "Scott, you know, no problem on this planet is big enough that it's going to be solved by something like this". Um, you know, "I'm here for you. If ever you feel that you need the support of, I'm here for you", you know. I, I just, you know, spoke like this on the phone and, you know, and I got a very, very positive response from him and I remember feeling after that, so confident, ah, that we never, Scott and I, never spoke about that again.

711. But I do remember being worried enough about it to mention it to at least one and I think two of our English friends, who were friends, mutual friends of ours back from our Cambridge days. One was [REDACTED] and the other was um, ah, [REDACTED]. Um, I was in London a few weeks ago actually, and ah, um, [REDACTED] and I were going to get together but it never really happened. I didn't mention this matter to [REDACTED] at all and I don't even know if he'd remember it but

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

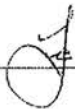
as you know, it's become a subsequent point of contention...because I've been accused of fabricating this story and that, you know. Um, but, but I had to say that um, this gave me a lot of confidence that Scott was actually not capable of suicide. This was somebody who had actually been to the brink once, and well he's found himself. I remember him saying to me, he said, "I just couldn't, I couldn't. I just couldn't". You know, he said something about muscles freezing over, or, or something like that. It wasn't those words, it was just, you know, "I couldn't do it". Um, and I thought, "Yeah, of course, you know, ah, great". I mean...I've been a teacher long enough to, to see that there are, you know, kids do sometimes get themselves into these situations but, you know, so this, this never seemed to me an indication that this was a suicidal personality.

712. Well, it was, the main reason he thought it was, it was this AIDS thing. It was, he felt that he'd, he'd contracted AIDS, so that whatever he did, and he never told me what it was, and frankly I don't think anybody knew then, for sure, how, how the virus was transmitted. Or even if it was a virus. I mean I don't, I mean it was, it really was a, just nobody knew, but somehow he'd, and, and, and you've got to remember, that San Francisco at this point, was the ground zero for just the most horrendous kinds of deaths happening and it was the gay community and Haitians who were the people who were taking the huge brunt of this.

713. ...let me be just be absolutely clear there. That time when I was in the States, um, that was before I had, that was before the period when he sent me a, a letter saying that he had thought he'd contracted AIDS and he had tried to throw himself off the San Francisco Golden Gate Bridge...I don't know the date upon which that attempt happened...and you know, I've had Steve Johnson and his people in the coronial court discrediting me...well the date I gave in that statement was the date, as far as I could recall, of when I had been told...I don't know the date upon which any attempt was made. I was, and I've never claimed that I did.

714. ...suicide was one of the things that came to mind (when I started to worry about where Scott was), but another thing that came to mind was, the previous suicide attempt, the suicide attempt he'd told me about, he told me that he had

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

sex with somebody and was convinced he had AIDS. So I thought, "I wonder if this is the same thing?".

715. ...it may have (played on Scott's mind), it's a 'may' question...I think it well may have. I think it well may have. I mean, let's face it, he was caught, you know, with a smoking gun. This was a, an open and shut case of him doing, him breaking our agreement...and Scott was somebody who took agreements very, very seriously. This was a person, he and Steve when they were growing up, they used to have this thing where they would make vows. It sounded terribly religious to me and they didn't have a very religious background, but they would make vows, like "I will be a vegetarian for the rest of my life" or "I will run so many miles...", you know. Um, they set each other, they set these goals and they took these vows almost like religious, they use this religious terminology. So for Scott to make an agreement like the agreement he made with me about having a monogamous relationship, for him to be, for him to be caught being the one that broke that, I think he would have taken it very seriously. I mentioned to you before that he was a person of great integrity and um, you know, he was a person, I think, who would have felt quite a lot of remorse about that. Um, but to say that that would lead to any other action, I think is a very long shot indeed.
716. (Regarding Alan Turin) ...I have flipped this pancake up and down so many times and it lands on a different side every time. For a long time I was, you know, there were a few pieces that seemed to fit a pattern. He'd been reading, he'd been very, very interested in Alan Turing. Alan Turing was a gay mathematician who suicided. The Category Theory group, you know, somewhere in Sydney, a play was being put on about Alan Turing's life. Scottie was the one who tried to organise the entire group to go and see this. This is quite unusual for Scottie to organise anything like that but he was very keen for this to happen. It may mean something, it may mean nothing. Alan Turing, he was a mathematician, it may not have been about the way he died at all...there was no suicide note. For a long time I could convince myself that the neatly pile, the neatly stacked up clothes were a suicide note. This was a kind of signal to people who knew him that, no, I know what I'm doing...

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

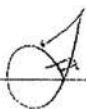


P.S.Young

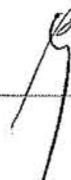
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

717. (Regarding a letter that Scott has written to ██████ in 1986) which the interviewer quotes as saying, "I'm sorry to hear about the trouble with ██████. My only thoughts are, 1) as long as ██████'s not blaming himself for things, he's not likely to suicide, and 2) we've been here before and gotten out of it, so things are bound to cool down again") .. ██████ was my ex and the guy with whom I broke up...when Scottie and I decided that it was time to break up with ██████...I sent ██████ a letter and said, you know, "I'm sorry about this but our relationship is over"...I don't know what...exactly what Scottie's responding to here...I mean, I suppose what I need to do is read the letter that I wrote him...I wouldn't have kept those, no I don't think. Well I wouldn't have kept them. He, I mean, he, he would have, he received them when he was in Boston, so I don't, I wouldn't have copies of them...all I can say is that after I wrote to ██████ telling him that our relationship was over, that I got some very, very angry responses...
718. ...So I mentioned something to Scott like, ██████ is obviously still very angry and he's been saying very unpleasant things about me to my friends. And that's what I think I said and that's what I think is the response. I can't um, I can't recall there being ever any sense of suicide being mentioned by me or thought of by me. I think that suicide thing is something that Scott has just...when I first...went to Berkeley, when I went to Oaklands to be with Scott in '85, I received a very long and very unpleasant letter from ██████...and it was my job to, to try to calm the waters and this is where we'd been and what we were overcoming. So I'd tried to and thought that we'd come to a sort of a quieter and better relationship with ██████. So I think that that's what that was. I don't think that there was ever any sense in which ██████ was threatening suicide, or anything like that...
719. (Regarding the specific reference by Scott in the letter to suicide)...I mean that doesn't (make) a lot of sense to me as I read that...
720. During the interview, ██████ provided a copy of a letter dated 13 May 1989 that he wrote to a mutual friend of his and Scot, namely ██████.
721. ██████ referred to the letter as being able to provide relevant dates as well as a contemporaneous summary of what he had experienced at the time of Scott's death and after. The letter was response to a letter that ██████ had received from ██████ sometime after Scott's death.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

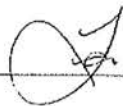


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

722. In the letter [REDACTED] provides the circumstances of Scott's death through his own contemporaneous experience. He also includes his thoughts of whether or not Scott would write a suicide note if that was his intention. [REDACTED] states, "I can hardly imagine Scottie, who experienced so much difficulty expressing himself both in writing and verbally, actually writing one". [REDACTED] also eludes that if Scott had written a note, this may have caused him to not kill himself as he would have time to think about it.
723. In this letter he also makes notes of Alan Turing's biography. Alan Turing was a gay Cambridge mathematician who took his own life. The letter states that whilst Scott was in the USA with his brother in 1988 he bought and read a copy of Alan Turing's biography.
724. [REDACTED] states in this letter that he bought and read the Turing biography after Scott's death and that he was quite alarmed to find so many similarities between Scott's life and personality and that of Turin.
725. [REDACTED] also makes reference to a letter Scott received from his brother just before Scott's visit to the USA in which Mr Johnson advised Scott that he wanted to speak with Scott about his personal life.
726. [REDACTED] refers to the close relationship of Scott and Stephen as well as the accusations by Mr Johnson that [REDACTED] was involved in Scott's death.
727. Other Matters
728. (Scott's personal effects)...I know there was a point at which the police gave me these things (Scott's personal property) and I was disturbed...I don't know whether the clothes had been laundered or not. But I remember that the shorts were a pair of shorts that we bought in Indonesia and I think there was a T-shirt, or something like that, that we also bought in Indonesia, I think...those things I put aside for a while and I eventually returned them to...Antonia, who is the wife of Scott's father...
729. (Police then show him photographs of the clothing at the North Head scene)
...so I'm wrong, I'm wrong about, I'm wrong about a lot of things here aren't I?
Right, I certainly recognise the shoes and the socks... Oh, so there's a bus ticket, is that a bus ticket? There's a cash card...Oh the comb, he always had a bloody comb didn't he, yes...Well I'm really confused because I thought that there were

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

shorts. And maybe it's just because I've seen so many photos recently in the press and all the rest. I don't know...the question in my mind, there's long trousers...the shoes definitely, the underpants yes, those definitely, socks...the long trousers and the shirt. I mean I think, I, I think, I think they're his. You know, I mean, oh I don't know. I mean one of the reasons I'm asking this is, this is December in, in Sydney...it's more shorts and t-shirt weather...but still, if you're going on a long hike...long pants and long sleeved shirt. I've never seen these photos...I think they are probably his clothes and I think that the problem I'm having now is the problem of having to try and recall something so detailed after so many years...that's the kind of style of (long pant) that he would wear... I'm actually wondering if this is one of my shirts...that's the kind of thing he would have worn.

730. ...the idea of (Scott) withdrawing \$10 made sense to me, because \$10 would have been what he would have needed to buy his train ticket back to Canberra. He used to buy it in cash...and presumably this is the \$10 that he'd actually withdrawn.

731. ...I remember that comb and I remember that hideous watch...

732. ...so a pen was definitely a part of (what Scott routinely carried with him)...and well...in fact I'm now pretty sure that that little black book, his little address book, wasn't here (at the scene) because I found that amongst his stuff and...it had some phone numbers in it and I went through and started calling some of those numbers. Until I, until a friend just told me, "Don't be obsessed by this, stop this, just stop this". Um, so I did.

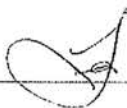
733. ...I think (Scott's black book) was among the things that were returned to Antonia.

734. [REDACTED] is unable to recall any details of keys to the house at Lane Cove or Canberra that Scott may have had possession of saying. '...I know I wish that police had sat down with me and asked me these questions then and there.

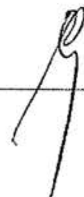
735. ...he always had a bloody, nail clippers, a comb and nail clippers. He seemed to always have those in his pocket...

736. (And later in the interview)...Yes, I'm, I'm certain that they are Scott's clothes...I'm a hundred per cent certain about the, the socks, a hundred per cent

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

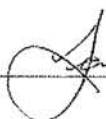
certain about the underpants, a hundred per cent certain about the shoes. Those I recognise and recognised before without any problems at all. Um, I had a bit of a problem about the shorts, the, ah sorry, the long sleeve shirt and the long trousers because I've seen some recent media images and somehow got it into my mind that in December in Sydney, shorts and short sleeve shirts would have been what you would wear but having reflected upon this, for a, for a few minutes now, I, I am sure that these are Scott's clothes. The shirt may even be one of the shirts that he and I shared...I'd put a sort of...ninety five per cent, a hundred per cent sure about the, the blue pants and that khaki coloured shirt. It's a long time ago, but I am certain that these, these are his.

737. (Regarding if Scott always carried a wallet)...you know...I wish I could answer that with certainty...I think so, I think so. I can't guarantee if on a certain particular day he did, but yes...I must say it does seem odd, doesn't it, that, I mean these are the things (in the police photographs) that you put in a wallet...I mean...the cash, the ID card and...the ATM card. They're things that you'd expect to find in a wallet. So I wonder if, I don't know, I wonder if ...he did go out with the wallet. Certainly there are pockets here to take a wallet aren't there? I always remember him putting the wallet awkwardly, it looked daggy. He had a...bulging front pocket in his jeans...I hope my recollection is correct...I always thought it looked daggy...I would have expected him to have gone out with a wallet...the one I remember is it's...synthetic webbing kind of material that folded over, it folded out into a, a kind of a, a web and then folded over three times. One, two, three, and gee, I hope I'm right, because my recollection about these things is, but that's what I recall.


738. ...he didn't have credit cards...I'm not sure that we had ID cards back in those days. I mean, you know, this is a, a long time ago. These days you get a, a plastic card for everything and campuses were much freer places in those days...I think he had a photo of his brother in the wallet.

739. (On folding his clothes into a neat pile)...that's very uncharacteristic of Scott. It's very uncharacteristic of him to put anything in a neat pile, yeah.

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

740. (Regarding the cash card)...I can't exactly remember this...I think it was an account in his name that we both used...that principally had my money in it...but it was in his name.
741. (Regarding any existing bank statements and closing the account)...no, I mean I've lived in many different countries since then and, no...it would have (been closed by) the Office of the Public Trustee
742. (Regarding the estate of Scott)...we made these wills in favour of each other at the Office of the Public Trustee...I think the Public Trustee was the Executor of the Will and therefore I think it was the Executor's responsibility to close those accounts and to declare the value of the Estate...I don't (remember the value of the estate), but I think we're talking about what, something less than \$10,000 and probably closer to about six thousand. Something like that...I don't know, I don't know.
743. (Regarding unusual bank transactions on the account) ...I would say not. I would say that there were...no unusual transactions...I think it was an account in his name...we didn't have complicated financial arrangements...and not only did we not have complicated financial arrangements, banking was a lot simpler then...there was just...a monthly statement and that was it really...so I don't recall any, any, anything unusual at all. No.
744. ...I know Steve Johnson found it highly suspicious that we had um, this, you know, sort of joint account. Ah, and, and, um, you know, but that's just how we did things...Maybe it wasn't the, the perfect way to do things but that's how we did it. And one of the reasons we used the Building Society was that that was the one that was giving the highest interest rate, you know, and the - - -
745. (On getting from Lane Cove to Manly)...you take the 254 bus to Crows Nest and 144 bus from Crows Nest. And I say that with a lot of certainty because I used to go to a school in Military Road in Mosman for, I think it was 5th and 6th grade, or 4th and 5th grade and that was the route we took every day.
746. ...the idea, the thing that was in that television program (*ABC Australian Story*), the idea of Scott going on Manly ferry, the whole idea of people who live...in a place like Lane Cove, would never think of going somewhere on the north side first by crossing the harbour into the city and then going by ferry...It

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

just wouldn't occur to us...I don't know if they're still the same route numbers these days, they could be quite different. ...it's not possible to get from Lane Cove to Manly in one bus, you need to change and I think in those days, there was no such thing as a one ticket, you would have had to have bought a second ticket on the second bus. So it surprises me to see that there's only one ticket here...Mind you, I don't know how this was all found and a bus ticket can easily be blown away by the wind.

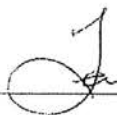
747. ...Scott was used to using buses, he wasn't used to using ferries. Our family wasn't used to using ferries...it's not possible that dad could have given him a ride, because dad wasn't in the house then...so there was no possibility, at least from the [REDACTED] family, of offering him a ride to anywhere...So my guess is that that is a bus ticket from [REDACTED] Lane Cove to somewhere and then from wherever that second place is, that he's walked.

748. ...dad told me before he died that Scott had actually walked along the coast and I don't know exactly what route he took, this was from dad. But it was certainly as far as Waverton, Wollstonecraft, along that part...it was the kind of thing that we would never have thought of doing, walking there...we would have got a train or bus...

749. ...I have no idea (why Scott went to Manly)...I have no idea at all. He and I had never been there ourselves...we had no friends there...I have no idea why he would go there and I don't even have any clear idea of how he would have got there. I just don't know.

750. ...the only suggestion I have that he'd been there or somewhere like that before, was when my father said, "Oh yes, he's, he, he'd been out there before. He's seen kangaroos, he told me about it". So I don't know if dad actually knew where Blue Fish Point was and actually knew if the previous place really was there or if it was just some undefined place on the headlands. It was a long way away. Dad used to play at Manly Golf Club, so dad's kind of idea of the geography around there was actually better than mine...I sort of knew up to about Mosman and maybe down to Taronga Park but I mean that, Manly wasn't a place that I ever much, that I ever went to either. And when we were kids, we used to

Witness:



Signature:



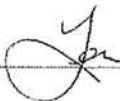
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

go up to Harbord...but Manly...we just never really went to Manly. It was the, maybe a trip on the ferry as kids...

751. (Regarding if Scott had enemies)...None.
752. (Regarding friends that Scott was closest to)...the friend of mine that Scott was closest to would have been [REDACTED]...nearly all those people...(at two parties for his birthday, one in Canberra and one in Sydney...the fact is that most of those people at the party in Sydney were my old friends... [REDACTED] for instance, was the partner of [REDACTED]..
753. ... [REDACTED] and I go back right to high school. We were mates at high school and we've kept in touch since. And [REDACTED] was a psychiatric nurse who was a partner of [REDACTED]'s. And Scott and I had been the guests at their house in Stanmore for maybe it was a, I think it was Christmas because I remember pheasant, which is pheasant, no, or quails, which is fine if you're not vegetarian. It was this, "Whoops, they've gone to all this trouble and I've brought a vegetarian". Um, anyway, but Scottie was used to negotiating these things and always did that with grace...so [REDACTED] wasn't really a friend of mine...he was there (at the Lane Cove party) because he was the partner of [REDACTED] [REDACTED] was a friend of mine, though not one of my closest friends but nevertheless, one of my oldest friends... [REDACTED]'s a very, very good person. He's a kind of rock solid person and...we've always got along well.
754. ...I would say Scott didn't really know...those people very well. You mentioned [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] and I were colleagues from our first year as music students at Sydney University...he and I used to provide the music for St Paul's College...and [REDACTED] was essentially, you know, a friend of mine. Nice guy, all that, but a friend of mine...
755. ... [REDACTED] was basically a friend of mine...
756. ...I think my sister was there, I think [REDACTED] was there for a while.
757. ... [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]... [REDACTED]'s a solicitor, so was [REDACTED] and they were not really very close friends of mine...
758. ...there was [REDACTED]. I knew [REDACTED]...since before I'd left high school...and he was a pretty good friend.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

759. ...but they were all my friends. And not only were they all my friends, they were all Sydney people who lived in Sydney and you know, occasionally one of them might be passing through Canberra, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] at various times passed through Canberra. I don't think they ever stayed with us but we'd go out for a drink or something. So I wouldn't really call any of them really Scott's friends.
760. (Regarding the birthday parties for Scott) ... [REDACTED] definitely (used gay beats)...I overheard [REDACTED] that night, at that (Lane Cove) party, talking to Scott about Marks Park, about the Bondi Beach, I mentioned this to you in the phone call. I mentioned this to a number of people a number of times and it's never really been taken anywhere. And I haven't even asked [REDACTED] about it but hey, how, how much do you follow this anyway, because presumably [REDACTED] was talking about this maybe because it was in the news, or maybe it was just gossip or something. But I remember being just a little bit alarmed that Scott seemed to be taking, what I thought was a bit of an unhealthy interest in [REDACTED] talking about this place at Bondi. And it was the first time I'd ever been aware that there was this, ah, Bondi beat.
761. ...I think growing up that you hear about a few places...there was wall at Darlinghurst Road up in The Cross. My father used to have a menswear store in Darlinghurst Road, just opposite the El Alamein fountain and you know, you'd sort of hear about things but I think that was the first time I'd heard about this, the Marks Park beat at Bondi and it was [REDACTED] telling Scott about it. That's what I remember anyway.
762. ...I overheard it and I remember...there was a pool (in the back yard of the Lane Cove house) and then there was a kind of area around it...it was a very relaxed kind of pool party really and not a very elaborate one...I remember, I just remember hearing that (talk between [REDACTED] and Scott)...and it's just...resounded in my mind since Scott's death, you know, it was just, could these be connected? Of course Scott wasn't at Bondi...
763. ...I'm not even sure that I was in Sydney for very long then...But no, no. There was no discussion (between Scott and I) at all about it (what [REDACTED] told Scott). No, and for I suppose twenty four years, I've, you know, felt guilty that

Witness:



Signature:



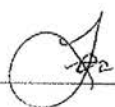
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

I never followed that up. But, you know, it's only in hindsight that you think something might or might not have been significant.

764. (Regarding who was at the Canberra party)...that's a harder one. I can't really remember. [REDACTED], certainly. I can't ...remember. I don't know.
765. ...(the Lane Cove party) was a very tame, middle class, Lower North Shore get together, I'm afraid...there was no snuggling in the corners, there was nothing like that. Nor would there have been, I mean they're just, it just wasn't that kind of thing at all. No. No, this was definitely a sex-free zone and drug-free zone...
766. ...we don't do gifts, no. Not for adults. Gifts are for kids at Christmas time.
767. (the Lane Cove party)... was just a really lovely, relaxed time with, you know, some really lovely people, a lot of conversation. A bit of, you know...throwing themselves into the pool...
768. (Regarding Scott and [REDACTED] talking in the pool)...I don't think I find that unusual...I was always keen to find comfortable environments where Scott could interact with other people in an easy and supportive environment. And, I mean, if in fact this long conversation happened, I would have regarded it as probably quite a good thing. Ah, because you know, more often than not you'd expect Scott to not interact well with people. And I mean, [REDACTED] was a trained nurse, so he's probably quite good at putting people at their ease. I don't remember that conversation but I do remember [REDACTED] mentioning it.
769. (Regarding [REDACTED])...now a [REDACTED]...he's an old friend too. He used to [REDACTED] that I was involved in...back in those days [REDACTED] was a [REDACTED]...[REDACTED] I mean is a charming, intelligent...great guy
770. (Regarding [REDACTED])...He was there because [REDACTED] was a student of mine at the Canberra School of Music, fabulous girl, beautiful singer and [REDACTED] was her boyfriend and [REDACTED] actually played for me once or twice. He used to play lute...[REDACTED] and [REDACTED] actually lived at [REDACTED]'s place in Canberra, so [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] knew Scottie and I as a couple, not only in the sort of professional sense, in that [REDACTED] was a student of mine...
771. (Regarding [REDACTED])...[REDACTED] I can tell you least about...[REDACTED] was a solicitor...he was not a close friend of mine at all, in fact I'm not quite sure why he

Witness:



Signature:



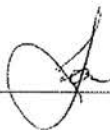
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

got invited...he was a nice guy. He was a young, foot-balling solicitor and I've completely lost touch with him...that's about all I can say.

772. (Regarding public nude sunbaking) ...we (Scott and [REDACTED]) had done that once or twice in Canberra together at Kambah Pool, yes...he didn't have any problem. It wasn't (a) particular problem...
773. ...We went to Obelisk (a nude beach in Mosman, Sydney)...quite soon before he died...clothes optional nude beach and we went there for the first and only time quite soon in a few days before he died...I've written this in my statement... maybe I haven't put that in the statement. But anyway, it was, it was sometime in the, in the sort of, you know in that period before he died. We went, we, we visited Obelisk, just had a swim, and actually I don't think we took our clothes off. It was kind of, you know, just kind of curiosity...he wasn't uncomfortable being naked. We did that very, very rarely...but the reason I mentioned it, is that I wonder, um, what this means about the way he died...
774. ...he wasn't a kind of, you know, body show off type at all...
775. ...I find improbable, I find it, I actually find it improbable that he would have been walking around naked by himself...I'd never heard of him doing that before...
776. ...I remember...a walk with two of our friends in the Kosciuszko National Park. There was this, this beautiful mountain stream with the most incredibly clear, crystal clear fresh water you could imagine and Scottie said, "Oh that would be great to have a swim in" and I said, "Well why don't you?" and there and then, he took all of his clothes off and went straight into the water. And here we are out on a hike and suddenly just, you know, splash like that...naked, naked, I mean naked as the day he was born...just like a kid, just like a dog, you know. And I remember thinking, "Oh, well, O.K. that's, you know. He's from California and they're a bit like that", you know. So that, that, I'm reminded of that when you asked me that question. I, I've never seen anybody else do something like that, quite so, just so easily, so naturally. And there was this sense in which Scott was really very, very at home in natural settings.
777. ...but having said that, that place at Blue Fish Point, that's dangerous. That's not a little stream in the Kosciuszko National Park...but having said that, you

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

know, this is somebody who's climbed The Matterhorn. This is somebody who was very used to hiking.

778. (Regarding him looking in Scott's wallet when he found it in the car) ...not that I remember. I don't, I don't, and I can't imagine why I would either.
779. (Regarding what Scott may have packed for his travel between Sydney and Canberra with)...I guess it would have been a backpack. I don't know. I mean it, you know I think it would just depend on what was needed for those particular days and mostly it was, it was books and papers...I don't even know if I ever knew the extent to which he kept a set of clothes at Lane Cove...but what I do know is that mum laundered his clothes, so I assume that there were clothes there for mum to launder...it was always a surprise to see him come back in ironed clothes from Lane Cove because he never went from Canberra in ironed clothes...
780. (Regarding going to Melbourne)...I had put my car in for service at the BP service station, taking advantage of the fact that I was away. I'd put it in for service and I needed to collect the car...his home was Canberra. You know, his home was Canberra. There was, unless there was a reason for staying in Sydney, he would not stay in Sydney...
781. (Regarding his increasing concerns about Scott's whereabouts) ...by the time I was returning to that house (from Melbourne on Saturday 10 December) , far too much time had elapsed without any indication at all of his whereabouts...and that was really unusual and I remember thinking, "This is very, very unusual"...so unusual that I, I, my mind started to, to imagine all kinds of things...that he, that something terrible had happened...that this was so unusual that this was, you know - - -
782. (Regarding the post mortem)...I was ignorant about the processes for post-mortem. I didn't know that it was the standard practice for a post-mortem, for an HIV test to be performed on the body...and I wanted to know whether there was any signs of a struggle or any signs of sexual activity that could be found from the body. So I went to [REDACTED], my dear friend...who knew Scott, and she was a medical practitioner, a GP, and asked her if she would be an independent witness at the post-mortem...to ensure that those three things were covered.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



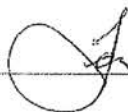
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

That there was an HIV test, that any signs of a struggle or any signs of sexual activity were, were noted.

783. ...but I also needed to know if there was a sign of struggle, if this was, if somebody else was involved in this and I also needed to know if there was a sign of any sexual activity. It was not, I didn't have any preconception about the cause of death at all. My hope was that every possible cause would be investigated and, and my purpose in asking [REDACTED] to be there, as well as making that statement, was really to make sure that those three possibilities, sexual activity that may or may not have been voluntary, signs of a struggle, that may or may not have been involved, well that would have involved somebody else, I mean, and I guess the other thing is signs much more difficult to tell of an accident, but an accident is something that really didn't occur to me then.
784. (Interaction with police)...it was actually when Troy Hardie said to me, he was the police officer who was taking a statement, when he said to me, "Has there, do you know, has he ever attempted suicide? Has there been any..." and that reminded me, that yes, there had in fact been a previous attempt, an attempt.
785. ...I was trying to alert Troy (Hardie) to the fact that Scott was gay but I was very worried that this might trigger some kind of discriminatory reaction towards me. Ah, I explained it to him in ways that I thought would be, the ways that were more acceptable to talk about it back in those days and that was to say that "I believe Scott belongs to a group that is at risk of HIV infection" and the reason I said that was because I was thinking we need to find out if this has anything to do with the one suicide attempt that Scott made.
786. (Regarding [REDACTED]'s relationship with Mr Johnson since the death)...the source of this suggestion that I'm the one who's going out looking everywhere (for sex), the source is, is, is the same person who has accused me of withholding evidence from the police, who's accused me of being on the cliff with Scott, who's accused me of any number...of lying to his face...he's accused me of any, any number of, you know, appalling things...all of which are without, without a skerrick of, of evidence. All of which are unsupported, so it seems to me that it's very consistent with Steve's really consistent attitude towards defaming me.

Witness:



Signature:

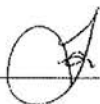


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

787. ...and you know, I have recent emails from him (Mr Johnson) where he is threatening to let everybody know what kind of person I really am and this seem to me that this is consistent with that...if he thinks this is worth proving, if he has evidence for it well let him bring that forth and if he thinks that this is something that needs to be answered, let him bring it to me, to my face, rather than having it brought to me like this.
788. ...But in a way, this whole thing is, is kind of irrelevant, because if Steve has an argument with me that's fine. We're here to understand, see if we can find what happened to Scott on that day. Um, is, is this, if, if this is true, if Scott felt that I was out there looking for sex, what does, how does that help us...
789. ...I know, there's somewhere...I had a rather threatening email from Dan Glick ages ago, saying something like, "You must find it strange that somebody knows that your favourite beach is Obelisk Beach". And I remember thinking, well, great, I've been there once or twice...
790. ...I can't remember (contact with Scott) at this stage...I have to say that I had considerable difficulty remembering. Very soon after he died, Steve Johnson started interrogating me and taking notes about various things. I'm afraid my recollection, not only is it a very long time ago, but my recollection is so scrambled by the way in which Steve Johnson was cross-examining me and trying to prove that I was, um, that I was lying to him about various contacts, that I, I can't, I really can't say. I just can't say...
791. (Regarding Mr Johnson suggesting to police that a letter was under the pillow in the Lane Cove house where Scott had been sleeping – the letter being from Steve to Scott for his birthday) ...wow, no, this is complete news to me.
792. ...Look, Steve Johnson thinks the world revolves around him. Steve Johnson thinks because his wife was pregnant, that Scott couldn't wait to meet the, the, the new kid. I mean, Steve Johnson thinks because he was getting married, that this was the biggest thing in Scott's life. Steve Johnson thinks the world revolves around him. You know, Scott had his own life.
793. ...I have had unremittingly for twenty four years, Steve Johnson and people he has paid, bombarding me with theories...and you get to the stage, you get to a lot of stages, and one of the stages is just ignoring all that, I mean your mind

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



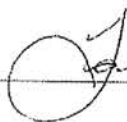
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

plays all kinds of games with various images that they're putting into your head. I can't remember, I, you know, I, I'm not going to add to the further thing by saying more. I just, you know, sorry, I just don't remember.

794. (Regarding the computer that Scott used for his study)...this was yet another example of the, the appalling way in which Steve Johnson behaved...he alleges that I hid that computer in the house...I didn't hide it in the house. I just put it in a place where it wasn't obviously accessible. In those days, a portable computer was a valuable thing that anybody going to, burgling a house, could really pick up and just go with...in those days, backing up files was very, very much more laborious that it is now and the information that contained, my PhD dissertation, it would have been devastating for me to have had something happen to that. So before going to Melbourne for the interview, I put it somewhere that, in a less than obvious place. I took it from the top of the desk...Steve Johnson came to stay in Canberra after Scott's death and he assumed that I had "hidden" it, either to steal it or because it contained information that would lead to proving that I had something to do with Scott's death.
795. ...I mean it's just a ridiculous exaggeration of something that was, well at, well at the time, really, really intimidating, because this was the one person who was as important to Scott as I was and I was looking forward to being able to share the, really to console the guy and to share the sense of grief and loss with him. I felt that more than anybody on the planet, he was the person I could share this with and he just turned around to me, somebody who was utterly aggressive to me, from the word go, who had decided that whatever I was associated with was wrong and he was making the most appalling accusations. It's bad enough to accuse anybody of, of a violent crime but to accuse them of, of doing that to the one person in their lives that meant most to them, it, it's it's wrong. It's, it's just so wrong...and I'm still having to deal with that.
796. ...there were several times when he behaved quite appallingly. I remember when we were going to the funeral directors' place, driving along the Pacific Highway in my bashed up old Mazda. I remember him thumping with his fist on the dashboard, calling me a liar and telling me that I was on the cliff with Scott and I had to pull over. I was, I was in shock. I was having to look after an

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



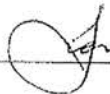
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

overseas visitor, I was having to arrange a funeral, I was having to do, to deal with Wills and all that kind of, the Trust, Public Trustee and all that kind of thing and I had this very aggressive man pounding on the dashboard while I was driving on a freeway. I had to stop the car and I had to get out of the car, because I just realised that this was an accident waiting to happen. And I took several deep breaths and I said, "You and I both need to calm down. This is an incredibly stressful situation for both of us. We've got to be rational about this". He quietened down, we went to the funeral directors. We bought the cheapest bloody casket you can imagine. At this stage Steve Johnson is not just in Sydney, he's sleeping in the same room that I'm sleeping in, which happens to be the room that Scott used to sleep in... Steve Johnson is half overhearing phone calls that I made. I made a phone call to [REDACTED], who happens to be a friend, [REDACTED] and then Steve Johnson starts to present me with a, a whole series of things that I have said about my movements in the days before and the days after, the days before Scott's death and finding inconsistencies in these things and accusing me of, I was in shock. I was not prepared to have, I was not, I was thinking that I was helping somebody out. I kept saying to myself, "What this guy really needs is compassion. It's a real, it's a terrible shock for him" and I kept trying to see the world through his eyes. He asked me to, he, he, um, he threatened me with violence at least once, with fists. I remember having to step out of his way in that room and ah, I asked him to step outside of the house and he was waving this yellow pad of his, saying, "This is all the information I need. You, I know exactly what you've been doing" and a whole lot of other unsubstantiated accusations. And ah, mum saw all this and ah, she just said, I told her that he'd been accusing me of being involved in Scott's death and ah, she just told him to get out of the house.

797. ...and subsequently, you know, he started sending these huge faxes to the Coroner. Um, and there were many years of silence, until 2005 when perversely, quite perversely, after Scott's death I had a Spanish Government Fellowship, I was in Spain for a short time and I came back to Australia and I got a job with the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

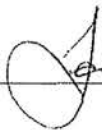
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

ABC. From the ABC I was, I um, I was awarded simultaneously Post Doctoral Fellowships of the University of New South Wale and Cornell University in upstate New York. I went the University of New South Wales first and then to upstate New York. From upstate New York I was renewed for a further year and then I was recruited to the University of Hong Kong. I was in the University of Hong Kong for six years. 1999 I moved to Spain and I lived in Spain until 2003, then I was recruited back to Cornell University in upstate New York and from there I was recruited to Boston College. Perversely, this is where...Steve Johnson lives.

798. ...in the meantime, like most Australians in the age of the internet, I would go to the Herald every day, catch up with a bit of news from home and I started to see, um, a list of articles by a journalist called Leonie Lamont and ah, one of them was about the ah, the murders at Bondi and ah, the way, ah justice, or the Coroner Milledge, ah, looked at these and found ah, she was, she, she, she um, she was very critical of, of a lot of people who were involved in that, that investigation and I tried to, and in fact, actually before the Milledge things, I, I saw these articles from Leonie Lamont, the journalist, about a mother who had been trying to get the police to re-look at the death of her son and I can't remember if it was the newsreader, Ross Warren, or someone else. But I, with the help of [REDACTED] tried to get in touch with Leonie Lamont, because I wanted to get in touch with this mother, but Leonie Lamont told me, she said, "Look, um, the mother doesn't want to talk to anybody else about this", um, and so I didn't have anywhere to go with that.

799. ...Then a subsequent article from Leonie Lamont was published and it was about the finding of the Milledge coronial findings and I printed that out and I sent it to Steve Johnson in the same city, Boston, this is 2005, um, with a very brief note, something like, um, "I think you um, I think you need to see this". Um, and there was an absolute change in Steve Johnson's attitude from that point. It didn't last for long but the change was, "Wow, it is actually possible that this wasn't [REDACTED]'s fault. It's actually possible that [REDACTED] didn't fabricate this as a suicide". He wasn't saying this, but this is what I felt was the message coming across and he and I met and we discussed the various ways in

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

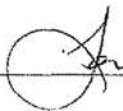
which, what we might do. And though pure coincidence, one of my colleagues at Boston College was Frank Brennan, the journalist and Barrister who's in the Human Rights Commission here and whose father was the, the Brennan, the High Court Judge, and I just said, you know, "Frank, I wish I'd been able to tell you this was happening, but look, I've got Steve Johnson here and this is the story" and I very quickly told him the story. And you know, I said, you know, "Do you have any advice for us?" Frank didn't....and it was a bit unfair for me to involve him, but it was a way of my showing Steve Johnson that despite all of the shit that he'd thrown at me over the years, um, you know, I was still wanting to do the right thing.

800. ...but it became so apparent, so quickly, that Steve Johnson and I can't work together. He, he knows everything. He is convinced that the police are incompetent, that the Australian justice system is deeply broken, that our Coronial system is corrupt and, I'm just kind of left there thinking, "Great, fine, you're on your own". I don't, not only don't I believe those things, I don't think that that's anyway that you're going to get anybody to help you and then he employed this journalist and I have all the email correspondence here from this Daniel Glick here and once again, I said to Daniel Glick and I said to Stephen, Steve Johnson, "This is not a job for a journalist...this is not, this is not a matter of journalism".

801. (Regarding his own theories of what happened) ...there are two ways the lay argument goes, one says, hey, he was really, really good at hiking and he was very skilled. He wouldn't take unnecessary risks, the other one is that he had no fear. You know, and people can make a false step...they can put their foot in the wrong place. I'm not suggesting I know what happened. I don't know what happened.

802. ...after the Coroner brought down a suicide finding, people I had never met or heard of, started coming out of the woodwork and started telling me about the same thing happening to a loved one of theirs, a relative of theirs, or somebody they knew and I was, I knew nothing about the phenomenon of suicide but I was shocked to hear about the number of people who do suicide without any apparent previous sign of that.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

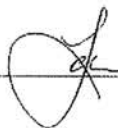


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

803. ...so I spent a considerable time trying to convince myself that that is what happened...and perhaps rather naively, I thought, you know, the police have carried out an investigation, they've looked at all of the evidence, they've presented it before the Coroner. I never thought it was strong enough for the Coroner to come down with a suicide verdict, but the Coroner sees this every day of the week. The police see this kind of thing, and they have decided that it was a suicide. So I tried to come to terms with it as a suicide.
804. ...and me and my family and my friends, I remember, we all went through a period where we were blaming ourselves. I remember my father blaming himself, we were all thinking, you know, "What is wrong with us that we couldn't see this?". I was sceptical. I still had at the back of my mind the question about Scott had had sex with somebody at Macquarie University that I didn't know, so I had that in my mind and I had the question in my mind about whether that Blue Fish Point was a beat. So I went up there after the Coronial Inquiry to make my own judgement and I still think that that's a real possibility. That Scott was either lured there or he went intentionally there or he went and met somebody, or he stumbled across it on one of his walks and, and something happened.
805. ...but the bare facts are, still, you can be somebody who has anonymous sex and you can go to a beat but you can still suicide there and you can still have an accident there...The mere fact that it's a beat, doesn't mean that somebody else needed to be involved with that and I'm still very much struggling with...that part of it.
806. ...and it's one of the things that makes me very annoyed about these television shows. You can have an accident at a beat. You can suicide at a beat...You can go there seeking sex with somebody and be so full with remorse afterwards, or disgust, that you can then suicide...these all seem to me to be possible explanations.
807. ...at the first Inquest, [REDACTED] was called as a witness as I understand it because she'd been the, the last person to see Scott alive and I remember her telling me at that stage that, she said, "Look I really didn't, don't know..." she said, "...I can't really be sure of what I saw". She said, "I was really drunk the night before and you know, I was just really, you know, hung over and I don't really

Witness:



Signature:



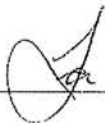
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

know"...that's what she told me...there were periods where [REDACTED]'s behaviour was very erratic...

808. ...What I find truly frustrating is that [REDACTED] could well be a source of information about Scott's movements at Macquarie University, the people he knew and all that, but Steve Johnson has been funding that University with a Scott Johnson Memorial Fellowship for many years now and it made, I mean essentially it made it impossible for [REDACTED]...for me to be able to communicate with him, because Steve Johnson was standing in the way accusing me and my family and friends of, of colluding in Scott's death, of withholding evidence from the police, of lying, of any number of other things and we would have liked to have had an ally in [REDACTED]...there's nothing a Professor likes more than to bring funding to their Department...
809. Documents referred to by [REDACTED] in the interview
810. ...I've brought a number of documents with me...a bound copy of all of the email correspondence that has passed between me and Steve Johnson...all the email correspondence that has passed in either direction, all the email correspondence that has passed between me and Daniel Glick...and the very little correspondence that has passed between me and [REDACTED].
811. ...The first one here between me and Steve Johnson is the 2nd of November 2005 and the most recent one from Steve Johnson is very, very recent, the 14th of March, 2013 is the most recent. Now it's very important to understand that about two years ago, I refused to respond to anything from Steve Johnson. Ah, I was sick to death of him making accusations to me and I simply have not responded to any of his emails. So that you will see emails from him to me but no responses.
812. ...I've been through all my diaries and I've only been able to give the dates for two meetings with (Mr Johnson) one in 2006 and one in 2011. I think, in fact I'm sure, there was another meeting in 2005...
813. ...I have brought along here...a photocopy of the application what Scott and I made for permanent residency, ah, for Scott, a Application for Resident Status in Australia on the basis of our relationship. I don't know that there's anything very

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

useful here, although there are dates here. It, it gives a chronology of the various key points in our relationship. Places that we met, people that we knew...

814. ...it also gives a statement apparently in support of our relationship from Steve Johnson. A statement that consists of three entire lines and two entire sentences...I can verify that they have had during that time an ongoing exclusive homosexual relationship with each other...it refers to me as Scott's "friend". "I am Scott Russell Johnson's brother and have known [REDACTED], his friend, for over two years now"...at other times Steve Johnson referred to me as Scott's "roommate". I never took those and neither did Scott, we never took those as overwhelming support for our relationship. We...felt that we wouldn't refer to his wife as his "friend" or his wife as his "roommate"...that's there and that's available for you if you want it...I'm happy to provide photocopies if they are so desired.
815. [REDACTED] was invited by the producer of ABC television *Australian Story* to be part of the February 2013 story but declined.
816. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW & TRANSCRIPTION
817. **Snapshot of Personal Events Relating to Scott**
818. 1 September 1976 to 15 September 1979 Scott was living with his mother and Dennis at Lakewood, California⁵. Mr Johnson tells us that he (Mr Johnson) had moved from the family home to commence college at USC, a university in California⁶
819. 16 September 1979 to 16 September 1983 Scott was living at the California Institute of Technology ('Caltech'), California⁷. Mr Johnson tells us that in 1983 Scott is working with him also at this time.
820. 17 September 1983 to 12 June 1984 Scott completed a scholarship at Queens College, Cambridge in the United Kingdom (UK)⁸.
821. 13 January 1984 [REDACTED] departs Sydney for travel including the UK and returned to Sydney on 9 June 1984⁹

⁵ Residential Status Application (RSA) by Scott

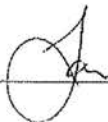
⁶ Johnson interview

⁷ RSA

⁸ RSA

⁹ Australian immigration records (AIR)

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

**Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson**

822. January 1984 Scott met ██████ in Cambridge, UK, and they became lovers¹⁰
823. After June 1984, Scott is in the USA and working with Mr Johnson¹¹.
824. 1984 Scott tells Mr Johnson that he is gay and in a relationship with a man¹².
825. 1 September 1984 to 22 August 1985, Scott is residing at the University of California, Berkeley¹³. 7 September – 15 December 1984 Scott is a teacher's assistant at the University of California, Berkley, USA¹⁴
826. 7 October 1984 ██████ departs Sydney for travel, including the UK, and returns to Sydney on 30 December 1985¹⁵.
827. 18 December 1984 to 21 January 1985 Scott holidays with ██████ in the UK¹⁶
828. 18 December 1984, Scott departs the USA to visit ██████ in the UK and returned to the USA on 21 January 1985¹⁷
829. 20 March 1985 to 5 June 1985 ██████ lives with Scott in the USA¹⁸
830. 31 August 1985 Scott was the best man as Mr Johnson's wedding¹⁹
831. (About 3 September 1985, ██████ recalls a phone call from Scott in which Scott tells him of his attempt to suicide from the Golden Gate Bridge²⁰. It is noted that there is inconsistency in ██████'s statements as to when and how Scott told him of the attempt).
832. 5 September 1985 to 28 December 1985 Scott lives with ██████ in the UK. During this time Scott applies for a PhD scholarship at the Australian National University.²¹
833. 30 December 1985 Scott returns from the UK to the USA²².

¹⁰ RSA ██████
¹¹ Johnson
¹² Johnson
¹³ RSA
¹⁴ RSA
¹⁵ AIR
¹⁶ RSA
¹⁷ ██████
¹⁸ RSA
¹⁹ Johnson
²⁰ ██████ stm 12/02/1989
²¹ RSA
²² AIR

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

**Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson**

834. Scott was granted an interim student visa in April 1986²³
835. 4 May 1986 Scott departs the USA for Sydney. Commences residing with [REDACTED] in Canberra.²⁴
836. 15 November 1986 Scott departs Sydney for the USA²⁵
837. 3 January 1987 Scott and [REDACTED] arrive in Sydney together on Garuda Indonesian Airlines²⁶ [REDACTED] refers to holidaying with Scott in Indonesia after they had started living together in Canberra.
838. 12 February 1987 change of address with [REDACTED] from 43 Damala Street, Waramanga ACT to 21 Blacket Street, Downer ACT²⁷.
839. 3 March 1987 is the declaration date for Scott's application for resident status in Australia with the Department of Immigration and Ethnic Affairs based on compassionate grounds relative to his relationship with [REDACTED].
840. 17 June 1988 [REDACTED] departs Sydney and returns 19 August 1988. He continues his music studies at Cambridge University in the UK.
841. 5 July 1988 Scott departs Sydney to the USA²⁸
842. 20 August 1988 is the last date that Scott saw Mr Johnson²⁹.
843. 20 August 1988 from USA to Sydney. This is the last immigration movement by Scott as recorded in Australian immigration records.³⁰
844. Mr Johnson says that Scott commuted to the USA "two or three times a year" in 1987 and 1988³¹. There are no immigration records of these movements.
845. Mr Johnson's first baby was born in late 1988³²
846. Early November 1988 is "probably" the last time the Mr Johnson spoke to Scott³³. Early November 1988 was the last time Mr Johnson wrote to Scott and that was with a videotape of Mr Johnson's first baby.
847. **Corroboration of the Suicide Report**

²³ RSA

²⁴ RSA

²⁵ AIR

²⁶ AIR

²⁷ RSA

²⁸ AIR

²⁹ Johnson

³⁰ AIR

³¹ Johnson

³² Johnson

³³ Johnson

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

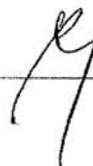
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

848. [REDACTED] and the suicide allegation
849. On 20 July 2013 police received an email response from [REDACTED] which includes;
850. [REDACTED] knew Scott in the early to mid 1980's when he was studying at the University of Cambridge in the UK. He knew that Scott was the partner of [REDACTED] with whom he is still friends. He remembers that [REDACTED] told him that Scott had once contemplated suicide. His recollection is that the site of the attempt was the Golden Gate Bridge at the opening of the San Francisco Bay. His memory of what [REDACTED] told him has stayed with him to such degree that whenever he sees a picture or hears about the Golden Gate Bridge he thinks of Scott.
851. He cannot remember if he heard about this directly in a personal conversation or by letter written by [REDACTED]. He does not remember when he heard the news from [REDACTED] but it was well before Scott's death. It is not a topic that first emerged only after Scott's death.
852. By all accounts Scott was highly intelligent in his own field. His knowledge personal and understanding of Scott is relatively limited. He describes Scott as a very shy, quiet and gentle being. It appeared to [REDACTED] that the best way to engage with Scott was just to let him be and allow him take his own time to feel comfortable with you. He would not have immediately thought of Scott as a potential suicide. He would say that he was introverted, reclusive, sensitive and probably over trusting of others and, therefore, in some ways vulnerable. He would not have considered him to be compulsive, depressive or bi-polar.
853. Scott was 'gay' in a world that [REDACTED] describes as brutally homophobic. This was also the time when HIV was making its first impact. He says that it is not inconceivable that Scott's own sexuality, the potential response of society and his family to that sexuality, combined with the threat of a terminal illness might have concerned Scott.
854. It is his understanding that it was these thoughts that pre-occupied Scott when he considered suicide in California.
855. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL
856. [REDACTED] and the suicide allegation

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

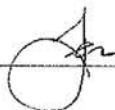


P.S. Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

857. On 2 August 2013 police received an email response from [REDACTED] in which he explains that he remembers [REDACTED] being at a dinner party with him in Hampstead in North London and that this was around September 1985. [REDACTED] told him that he had received a letter from Scott in which Scott described attempting to take his own life by jumping off a bridge.
858. [REDACTED] remembers that the conversation took place due to the dramatic nature of it, describing it as a revelation. He knew Scott when Scott was at Cambridge University UK and that he was in a relationship with his good friend [REDACTED]. He describes Scott as a thoughtful mathematician, highly intelligent, shy and introspective.
859. Scott's Movements Relative to the Suicide
860. The Golden Gate Bridge is in the city of San Francisco in the State of California. Australian Resident Status declarations by Scott record that he resided in Berkeley, California from 1 September 1984 to 22 August 1985.
861. During the period of residence in California, Scott visits [REDACTED] in the UK, from 18 December 1984 to 21 January 1985, and [REDACTED] visits Scott in the USA from 20 March 1985 to 5 June 1985.
862. Scott was away from California and at Mr Johnson's wedding on 31 August 1985. Scott appears to have stayed with Mr Johnson from 23 August to 4 September 1985 for this purpose.
863. Scott then leaves the USA for the UK, and [REDACTED], on 5 September 1985 to 28 December 1985.
864. Records support that Scott was in the USA and a resident of California during the following periods;
865. 1 September 1984 to 18 December 1984, 22 January 1985 to 19 March 1985, and 6 June 1985 to 22 August 1985.
866. [REDACTED] recalls hearing from Scott about his attempted suicide in a period prior to Scott visiting him in the UK. Movement records indicate that Scott travelled to the UK in late 1984 and again in late 1985.
867. [REDACTED]

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

868. [REDACTED] is the younger sibling of [REDACTED]. She has made a two written statements, an electronically recorded statement, and given evidence at the 1989 Inquest.
869. On 14 December 1988 [REDACTED] made a written statement which includes that at the time of Scott's death she was living in her parent's house at [REDACTED] Lane Cove.
870. She has known Scott for nearly two years and met him through her brother [REDACTED]. Scott had been living part-time at the Lane Cove house.
871. Scott was known to be fairly shy, warm, friendly, generous and trustworthy. He was a mathematician who was absorbed in his work. He seemed very happy in the period leading up to his death, happy with his Macquarie University studies and very happy about becoming an uncle to his brother's newborn.
872. She last spoke with Scott at 2pm on Tuesday 6 December 1988, He seemed to be in happy spirits and initiated the conversation. About 11pm on Wednesday 7 December 1988 [REDACTED] was in bed when she heard Scott come into the house, go to the kitchen, and then go to bed. She did not see him.
873. At 6am on Thursday 8 December, she got up and went to the kitchen. From that position she looked across the hall and could see Scott's feet in his bed. When she arrived home from work that afternoon at 3.15pm she saw that Scott's bedroom was very tidy and she assumed that he had done what he usually does on a Thursday and that is to returns to Canberra on a train.
874. On Sunday 11 December 1988, she was told by [REDACTED] that Scott's body had been found at the bottom of North Head.
875. [REDACTED] has been a psychiatric nurse for 10 years and at the time was working at the Rozelle Hospital. In [REDACTED]'s observation, Scott showed no indication of depression. [REDACTED] is of the opinion at the time of Scott's death that he was of sound mind.
876. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
877. On 29 January 1988 [REDACTED] made a written statement of these additional matters;

Witness:



Signature:

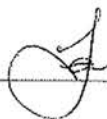


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

878. At the time of the death she was living between [REDACTED] Lane Cove and [REDACTED] Rozelle [REDACTED]. She is a registered psychiatric nurse and had been working at the Rozelle Hospital for four months. She had been a registered nurse for 10 years.
879. She knows that her brother is homosexual and that he and Scott lived together in Canberra. She describes Scott as very introverted, warm and friendly. Scott became close to her mother who treated him like a son.
880. She describes Scott's regular movements as being to travel from Canberra to Sydney every Tuesday to attend studies at Macquarie University and Sydney University. He would return to Canberra on the following Thursday but sometimes he would stay the week in Sydney.
881. Their parents were absent from the Lane Cove home between 27 November 1988 and 10 December 1988 and that is why [REDACTED] was staying full time at the Lane Cove house. [REDACTED] is a shift worker and referred to her diary to confirm that on Monday 5 and 6 December 1988, she was off duty. On Wednesday 7, 8, 9, 10, and 11 December 1988 she worked 7am to 3pm.
882. When she last spoke to Scott about 2pm on Tuesday 6 December 1988 at the house. Scott seemed in happy spirits and he did not seem to be depressed. The conversation was 'idle chit chat'.
883. She did not see Scott on Wednesday 7 December 1988, however at 11pm that night [REDACTED] was in her bedroom when she heard Scott come into the house. He went into the kitchen before going to bed. Due to these simple actions she assumed it was Scott.
884. The following morning, Thursday 8 December 1988, [REDACTED] got up at 6am to go to work and as she was standing in the kitchen she looked across the hallway and saw Scott's feet in his bed. [REDACTED] did not go into his bedroom. She left for work and arrived home again on that day at 3.15pm. She checked Scott's bedroom and it was neat and tidy which is the way he leaves it when he

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

returns to Canberra. She presumed that Scott had left the house and returned to Canberra.

885. On Friday 9 December 1988 [REDACTED] was at home and a priority paid letter arrived addressed to Scott in her brother's handwriting. [REDACTED] phoned their Canberra home to speak with Scott about what he wanted her to do with the letter. No one answered and she left a message on the machine. She is not sure if it was the same day or the following day that [REDACTED] phoned the Lane Cove house and asked her whether Scott was in Sydney. She told him that she thought he had returned to Canberra on Thursday. [REDACTED] told her that he was worried about Scott as he had been trying to find him.
886. About 6am on Sunday 11 December 1988, [REDACTED] called the Lane Cove house and told her that Scott's body had been found at the bottom of North Head the previous day. She cannot detail the times or dates of when she spoke with [REDACTED] or Scott otherwise, but it was not uncommon for her and [REDACTED] to speak to each other three or more times each week.
887. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
888. On 16 March 1989, [REDACTED] gave evidence at the coronial inquest. Additions or variations to her earlier evidence is summarised here.
889. [REDACTED] states that she was at the Lane Cove house on the afternoon of Thursday 8 December 1988 and stayed there that night. She conceded that it was possible for Scott to have returned to the Lane Cove house on the Thursday night after she went to bed and that she did not become aware of it. She did not see him the next morning and left the house at 6.40am (her shift started at 7am).
890. Scott sometimes stayed at the Lane Cove house on the weekend.
891. When Scott was staying at the Lane Cove house and [REDACTED] was away or in Canberra, she was aware that they spoke on the phone a 'couple of times a week.'
892. She says that on a day, between 5 and 9 December 1988, that Scott told her that [REDACTED] had called him and that Scott mentioned the interview that [REDACTED] was to go to in Melbourne. Scott did not tell her anything else about what

Witness:



Signature:



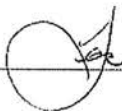
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

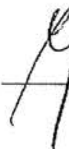
was spoken of during that phone call and Scott did not have a unusual, upset or emotional reaction about the phone call.

893. She agrees with counsel that the conversation when Scott told her that [REDACTED] had called was after [REDACTED] had left for Canberra (on Monday 5 December 1988). She agrees that she last spoke with Scott about 2pm on Tuesday 6 December 1988. She is unable to remember when Scott told her that [REDACTED] had called.
894. I PRODUCE THAT INQUEST TRANSCRIPTION
895. [REDACTED] provided an electronically recorded statement on 14 April 2013. Additional and variable evidence is summarised here.
896. She has been known by the name [REDACTED], but in 1988 she had the surname of [REDACTED], and since 2011 her surname is [REDACTED]
897. She reads aloud her statement of 14 December 1988 and remarks that, other than grammar, she would not like to change anything in the statement. She remarks that she is even less likely now to remember dates and times now.
898. (Regarding her dealing with the police) She remembers being treated 'a bit strangely' by the police officer at Manly who she said had a bit of an 'attitude' about [REDACTED]'s sexuality, saying, 'I can't remember his exact words' but she relates it as having been asked by the officer if she still loved her bother knowing that he was a 'poofter'. He reply was, 'he's my brother, of course I love him.' This made her want to get out of the station as quickly as she could.
899. She reads aloud her second written statement dated 29th of January, 1989.
900. Her electronic interview continues –
901. ...I don't remember when I first met Scott but I imagine it would've been at mum and dad's house. [REDACTED]'s private life was quite separate to family life, so I wouldn't have met him out.
902. (Scott and herself) ...never really had a long conversation...and like I said, my head wasn't in a good space then, I was still trying to work, you know, on my (divorce) problems and I'd interact with Scotty at home, just (on) a fairly superficial level...

Witness:



Signature:

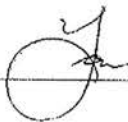


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

903. (Scott and herself) were round about the same age...he was a good-looking, fit young man.
904. ...I was fairly preoccupied, because I had just left a fairly nasty relationship that involved a lot of violence, and that was a relationship of three or four years' duration... we were living up on the Central Coast and I had run away home, back home to Sydney, to get away from him.
905. ...probably the most I learnt about (Scott's) family was the night, well, the night before he died when he was telling me about his brother's child. I knew he had a brother. That was about the extent of his family...I think he might've mentioned a sister, a sister, once.
906. (On Scott's temperament)...we had very short (conversations)...he was very, very shy...sort of (an) introverted fellow.....he was just really shy...he was quietly-spoken and he was quite charming...very quiet person...he had a sense of humour and...you could make him smile, he wasn't that cripplingly shy...
907. ...after working all day in mental health, trying to get stuff out of depressed people...(I) didn't feel like going home and doing the same thing...I just, you know, reacted appropriately, chatted, chatted to him.
908. ...We never really had any time to get to know each other, or sit down and have...a lengthy conversation...probably because of my shifts and his coming and going from Canberra...and I'd only just come (to live at the parental) home...I was living up at Morisset.
909. ...He thought it was a bit weird what I did for a job, and I thought it was a bit weird what he was doing at uni, you know, like I'm a mathematical retard and, and he's doing beyond maths, it was really quite funny. I had no concept of what he was doing really.
910. ...you know how we used to say things like, there's a fine line between genius and madness...in my head I speculated that a bit, but I had no reason to suspect he was anything unusual...there was nothing overtly in his personality to indicate he was different from anyone else, apart from his brilliance.
911. ...I think I recognised (Scott's social awkwardness)...just because he was a shy person...I recognised that it was going to be a little bit of an effort on my part, to interact with him and...you know, maybe I couldn't be bothered when I...got

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

home and I just kept it to I, I'm goin' out, or whatever...he was shy...even sort of (when he) looked up, you know, from under, his head...you know how shy people sort of look up...but he was pretty normal.

912. She very rarely saw Scott and [REDACTED] together ...I knew he was [REDACTED]'s boyfriend, and that [REDACTED] was in Canberra, but (Scott) was attending Macquarie and Sydney Uni, so that's why Scott was in Sydney.
913. (My mother)...said (Scott) was a bit of a nuisance because he was a vegetarian and she had to cook different meals, she probably told you that, and that meant that she had to make, well, she felt that she had to make a separate meal, so it was more work for her. That was the only complaint I ever heard from mum, and she would've done his washing and stuff, but she never reported a, any argument or altercation with him, at all.
914. ...I don't think mum and dad would've charged (Scott) any (board), you know, that, they're sort of very generous, accommodating people.
915. (When asked where in the Lane Cove house did [REDACTED] and Scott stay) I don't know...I imagine it was that same bedroom, because you know, mum and dad's and my room were upstairs, and that bedroom...did have two beds in it, maybe they slept in there...
916. (Their Catholic upbringing is)...probably why (homosexuality) was never discussed, and probably why [REDACTED] would've, perhaps, you know, been ashamed to even mention it...
917. ...I've assumed, since I was this high, that my brother was gay...he never told me...I made reference to it once and got growled down, so I never went back there.
918. ...[REDACTED] was more of a flapper, if you like, more of a queen, than Scotty.
919. (Scott) just, look, you know, he used to wear shorts and a T-shirt, he was very fit. He looked like a guy who...ran a lot...you know, looked after his fitness, and he did.
920. ...Only mum told me that he used to run, he'd run incredible distances, like, into the city from, like, I never saw him doing that running, but I think, yeah, mum told me he used to run Hyde Park to, I mean, he'd run from, like, around Hyde

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

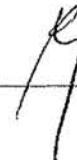
Park back to Lane Cove...(I saw) him come home from a run, or leave to go out on a run but I've never seen him actually running.

921. ...he used to go ice skating, up at Macquarie Uni, what is it called, Macquarie Shopping Centre...I don't know how often, but he'd often...ice skate at the shopping centre, that's all I know about that.
922. (Scott would) say, I went to uni and then went for a bit of a skate. I think, once, I might've...even picked him up from there, driven him home, you know, it's a transport thing...I never saw skates, I imagine he hired them, I don't know...now that I've met (Scott's) sister (Rebecca), she said that, they used to skate together when they were very young, so perhaps that's why.
923. ...I think he drove. I've got a feeling he, but you'd have ask mum, but I've got a feeling he used mum's car a couple of times, but I can't be sure about that.
924. ...I had no idea of any of their (Scott's and [REDACTED]'s) friends.
925. ...I found out very recently...([REDACTED] and Scott) had a very different lifestyle to what we...assumed, or expected....(She) mainly (found out about their private life) through Daniel Glick, really, talkin' to Daniel about how (Scott) lived an openly gay life in Sydney and, because he didn't appear like that to our family, in Sydney, openly gay was never on the agenda.
926. ([REDACTED] has) always been away from the family (through his studies, travel and living in Canberra)...any interaction we did have, was when he came home, at family get-togethers and stuff...and I was off living my own life up the Central Coast.
927. ...The '80s was a bit tumultuous for me, I got married in'80, and then divorced in about '85, and then...I was up the Central Coast with another man and, but you know, I left home when I was about 16. So, you know, it was only when we sort of, Christmas times when the family would get together and that, we'd see [REDACTED].
928. ...(Our parents)...were very proud of ([REDACTED]) and his achievements and, you know, he got to Sydney University and that, or one year, he was a very smart guy and, you know, mum was extremely proud of him, because his, her thing was music and he's, became a musicologist and then he went to Spain and, to Toledo Cathedral and, you know, he discovered a big manuscript there and, down in the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

crypt of Toledo Cathedral that, even the Spaniard's, a composer that Spain didn't even know about, this huge book that he, of medieval manuscript, and he transposed it into modern day manuscript and now he records and performs that music. So, you know, the Spanish Ambassador was at our house for dinner one night and, you know, there's, the Spanish people hold him in very high regard for what he did there. But, you know, this was all mum telling me stuff, because I very rarely saw him.

929. ...I never saw (Scott) sick.
930. ...(Scott) was always very relaxed...never saw him looking' vaguely stressed, or stressing about anything...but like I say, we never really had the time to have a long conversation...but I've certainly never seen him stressed, or upset, or angry, or any sort of negative behaviours, really.
931. ...Yeah, yeah (you could tell that Scott and ██████ were fond of each other), but you know, I never saw them touch or hug or, or anything like that.
932. ...I've never known (Scott's and ██████'s friends), apart from ██████ and ██████ in Canberra, can't even tell you her surname, she used to work at the Canberra School of Music and there's a ██████-someone who's a journalist. You know, I can only name a few of his friends, I never even found out who his friends were, because he kept all that private from us...I was off living my life...
933. ...all of ██████'s friends were all, you know, intellectuals and his thing is 15th century Spanish church music, you know. That was probably playing in the background. Yeah, there would've been more, the focus would've been more, I'd say, intellectual dialogue than, than any music, or no, they weren't rowdy, noisy parties at all, not that sort of people.
934. ...No (drugs, swingers party, wild sex)...No way, no way...No, not in mum's house, anyway.
935. ...(Scott) was tidy...He was very tidy. He probably commented on that, because I'm a real 'messenger', and I've, I've noticed, I've said in both of these, that his room was really tidy. You wouldn't see my room like that.
936. ...██████'s very tidy. He wasn't when he was younger, but ...at that time, he was tidy.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

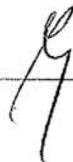
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

937. ... (On the state of Scott's room on the occasion when he left for Canberra)
...it was the same. He was just always tidy, and I guess I've gone, you know, there was no, things weren't on, I dunno. I guess, like, because he wasn't there, he, I'd assumed he'd gone back to Canberra, but his room was always tidy. You know, he's one of these people that makes his bed. Because I'm a nurse, I, you know, do not make beds of my own, because you do that at work, and I noticed that.
938. ...It was just, he'd just pull the bed up, make it, you know, like, like I don't, but his bed was made. I really can't remember, but I've, you know, thought, He's not here, he must've gone back to Canberra.
939. ...I couldn't tell you that (if Scott made his bed each morning). You know, in our house we always respected people's privacy and you wouldn't even go into someone's bedroom...
940. (Q363 So, any time his room was neat and tidy and he wasn't there, did you assume he went back to Canberra?) Yeah, I would assume...
941. ...I don't know (Scott's) normal habits...(due to working shift/night work)...you see people at odd times...I would've, no, I would've gone straight home (after work). Look, who knows, sometimes I'd go to the shops...
942. ...what I said in the Coroner's Court, [REDACTED] disagreed with me, but I said ...I'm swearin' on the Bible here. Yeah, it was just about a phone call, ([REDACTED] [REDACTED]) said he didn't make a phone call (to Scott in the week before his death) and I'd said that he did, at some time...I can't remember the chronology of it...
943. ...(She and [REDACTED]) were concerned about (Scott being missing), before we knew what had happened.
944. (About seeing Scott in his room)...the only reason I saw his knees was because, like, he had the door open and I could see his knees up, in the bed.
945. ...You know, like I say, we didn't go into other people's bedrooms, so it would've been, open the door, have a look. If the door was shut, very rarely doors were shut in our house, so I probably walked in there, looked and, you know, you know, it was a big room, you could see from the doorway.
946. ...I never saw clothes on the floor, or anything.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

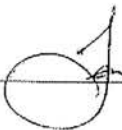


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

947. (On hearing Scott in the house the previous night at about 11pm)...I didn't hear any voices, like, didn't hear anyone talkin'. It was like he was having something to eat you know, or a drink, or something, before he went to bed.
948. (Referring to a floor map of the Lane Cove house)...that was my old bedroom, so, and when I went in the kitchen, the sink is here, yeah, there was a big dresser here and, you know, a breakfast thing here, and this door is actually directly opposite, like that, you could see straight through, see, yeah, to that bed, and that's where I saw his feet in the bed. Door was open.
949. ...so I can see that section of (Scott's) bed right, yeah, and that, you know, his feet were flat, knees up. That's all I saw, under the covers.
950. (Q481 Is there, is there any way that you, you may have been mistaken, and that you didn't see Scott?) No. No, I mean, I seen his legs there, eh, yeah. That's a definite...I still remember seeing his legs in the bed...I can see that picture still now, in my mind's eye.
951. ...I was just shocked (when I learned that Scott was dead) because, you know...that's the farthest thing I would have expected Scott to do, was to take his own life.
952. ...Well, if he had taken his own life it would have been some impulsive act, because, and I mean, who knows why some people take their lives, we never find out, but normally it's people with depression, or you know, hearing voice, like, schizophrenia telling them to do it. There's some sort of illness that's going on, and I would've picked that up, I would have noticed anything like that about Scott, and I would've talked to him about it, too, I wouldn't have let it go. If I thought he was depressed, I would've talked to him about it and tried to get him some help, because that's what I do, but that never happened, and there was no reason to suspect that, to think that he would do that, and I was totally flabbergasted.
953. (On general signs of depression) - ...they talk about black things, niggly things, nihilistic things, they're energy is reduced, sometimes they're learning very slowly, there's all sorts of indicators, and there's usually something precipitates that, a relationship break-up, a death. You know, there's two types of depression, one that has a cause and one that doesn't, and I couldn't see anything, you know, thinking afterwards, nothing, nothing. He was reactive, he was positive, he was

Witness:



Signature:



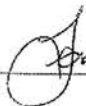
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

future-oriented. People who are going to kill themselves are not future-oriented, they're, you know, they're not seeing past the immediate environment, because they know they're gonna kill themselves. Yeah, and there's just no indicators, none at all. There was nothing going on in the relationship, as far as I knew. I just couldn't find, and I still can't find any indicators.

954. (Q579 And when [REDACTED] was, made contact with you and asked you if you'd saw Scott, or Scott was in the Lane Cove home and you said that, [REDACTED] mentioned to you, he said something about, having a gut feeling?) Just (that) something had happened to Scott...see I mean, I would probably get the same thing with, John (my husband) and I often think the same things at the same time.
955. ...I don't think [REDACTED] was having financial problems, at that time...I wouldn't know about Scott, but [REDACTED] certainly wasn't.
956. (Q595 And do you remember, back in that era, 1988, how, or why the community looked, looked upon homosexuality?)...I worked with a lot of men who died of AIDS that, who were nurses at Rozelle Hospital, so society was looking at a group of people who were causing this disease, and had to be dealt with, that's how society was looking at it, and farring them all with the same brush, and, and I knew of bashings in, I, you know, I'd heard or read about bashings in Darlinghurst.
957. (Q604 So, if [REDACTED] had any dramas in his life, would he confide in you?) No, no, I'd be the last person he'd confide in...he'd probably confide in (mum). He's the firstborn and...they're very close, they have a very close relationship.
958. ...No (I don't remember the Lane Cove birthday party). Was I there? Do you know if I was there?...No, I don't remember. (And later)...No, I don't, no, I don't. Was mum there?...Maybe I was drinkin'. No, sorry...I'm a visual thinker and I can't find a vision of that, at all...
959. (Q706 Can you tell us about that (last) conversation, what did (Scott) actually talk about?) It was just, like, well, how was your day? and the, and he's said something like, he'd had some good news or something, that he was gonna be an uncle...what's the baby's name?...that sort of conversation, but he was beaming, he was really happy about that.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

960. ... (██████████) was) ...pretty distressed about that happen, he was telling me about that...but he also...kept his stoic thing happening. Haven't seen my brother show any emotion in my life, you know...dad's side of the family...didn't do that, you know. But ██████████ was shocked as I was, and disbelieving as I was.
961. ... ██████████ didn't accept (the suicide conclusion) either, very easily, neither of us accepted that he'd suicided, but then we had, we had nothing else to think about, we had, there was nothing else to go on, no other options to look at.
962. (Q769 Do you remember if Scott had a wallet, did you remember seeing him have a wallet in his pocket, or carry it around...?) No.
963. ...I recall ██████████ eluding to something like, Steve (Johnson) was accusing him, and I of murdering Scott...that was just as outrageous as Scott dying...I don't think ██████████'s had a very good relationship with them...just ridiculous and that was it, in my mind ridiculous...not even worth entertaining.
964. ...I told you I wouldn't be able to tell (the police) much. I think between, you know the state that my head was in at the time, shift work and (an abusive relationship breakdown) ...Yeah, I had very little left, at that point...my father wanted me to take him to see (my ex-partner), so he could beat him up, because he wouldn't allow something like that...I just left, finally just left. You know, I, I tried that earlier, but the police at Morisset had said, well, next time he's beating you up, can you call us, and I'm, Yeah, right, if the, if I can get to the phone and. So, police were not on my list of helpers.
965. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW, TRANSCRIPTION AND FLOOR PLAN OF THE LANE COVE HOUSE.
966. ██████████
967. On 13 April 2013 ██████████ provided an electronically recorded statement to police. Her statement includes;
968. She is currently ██████ years old and the mother of ██████████.
969. Scott lived with her ██████████ and her husband at Lane Cove when he came to Sydney to attend Macquarie Uni. She was aware that Scott was a close friend of her son, ██████████. She described Scott as being very quiet, and a person who

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

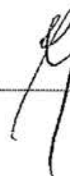
liked to walk. She mentioned where ever Scott went he would always take a notebook and pencil with him.

970. Whilst Scott was staying at her home she would cook his meals and wash his clothes. She mentioned he did not have many possessions. She seemed to recall that Scott would run in the mornings. She kept repeating that Scott was a lovely boy and a vegetarian. She recalls that she picked him up from Macquarie Ice Rink on occasions but could not specify times or dates.
971. There was only one occasion when Scott brought someone into the home. She recalls hearing a thumping noise one morning coming from the bedroom Scott occupied. [REDACTED] was upstairs in her room at the time. She went to Scott's bedroom and the door was open and she saw Scott and an Asian man doing exercises in the room. Both were dressed at the time. She cannot recall anything further about this incident, other than they had breakfast together and Scott and the Asian man left shortly after. She recalls running into them by chance later that day when she got off a bus in the city at York Street. This surprised each of them.
972. She recalls being away up the coast possibly Nelson Bay when she heard about the death of Scott. She and her husband were deeply saddened. She could not believe he was found at North Head, Manly or give any reason why Scott was there. She mentioned her husband John was a member of Manly Golf Club at the time and did not think that her husband had ever spoken about Manly to Scott or given Scott a lift to Manly when he went to golf.
973. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW & TRANSCRIPTION
974. [REDACTED]
975. On 28 January 1989, [REDACTED] provide a written statement which includes;
976. [REDACTED] is employed as a journalist with the [REDACTED].

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

977. He has known [REDACTED] for the previous 14 years. Scott was introduced by [REDACTED] to him two or three years prior when they arrived from having been overseas.
978. He knew Scott and [REDACTED] lived together in Canberra and would see them when they were in Sydney.
979. On the evening of 10 December 1988 (correct date of the party is 3 December 1988) he attended a party for Scott at [REDACTED]'s parent's house. There was a small group of friends and it was very quiet. At the party Scott appeared to be his 'normal self'. [REDACTED] left the party about 11.30pm.
980. [REDACTED] was aware that at this time [REDACTED] was preparing an interview for a Harkness Fellowship and [REDACTED] had collated some information relevant to the interview for [REDACTED] which he had forgotten to take to the party.
981. Between 12 midday and 2pm on Thursday 8 December 1988 [REDACTED] telephoned from his Sydney office to the Canberra home looking for [REDACTED] and left a message on the answering machine. He then telephoned the Lane Cove house and Scott answered. He asked Scott how he was and Scott said, 'Okay'. [REDACTED] asked for [REDACTED] and Scott told him that he was in Melbourne for the job interview that was on Friday 9 December 1988.
982. The conversation lasted for a few minutes and Scott seemed his 'normal self', with nothing 'untoward' being apparent to [REDACTED]
983. About 7pm on Friday 9 December 1988 when he arrive home after work he was told by an (unnamed) house guest that [REDACTED] had left a message asking that he telephone him and [REDACTED] left a Melbourne phone number. [REDACTED] presumed that Scott had told [REDACTED] about his call in relation to the Harkness Fellowship material. He learned later that [REDACTED] had remotely retrieved the message that he had left on the Canberra answering machine. [REDACTED] did not call [REDACTED] back as he knew that it would be too late to give him the information for the Harkness Fellowship interview.
984. He describes Scott as always quiet, reserved person who kept to himself but was also well liked. Scott was difficult to draw into conversation. As Scott did not have many friends of his own he became friends with [REDACTED]'s friends.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

985. From observations of Scott he had no issues about being homosexual. He knows of no person who would want to cause Scott harm.
986. On 30 April 2013 [REDACTED] was interviewed in this matter and his statement is referred to later in this statement. In relation to [REDACTED], [REDACTED] recalled a conversation that he had with [REDACTED] sometime after Scott's body was found. [REDACTED] told [REDACTED] that when he spoke to Scott over the telephone on the day Scott went missing, Scott had said to [REDACTED] that he was planning to 'go to the beach' that day.
987. About 2pm on 18 July 2013 police spoke with [REDACTED] and questioned him regarding the information from [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] stated that he has no knowledge of this information and is adamant that if such important information had been known to him that he would have told police at the time.
988. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
989. [REDACTED]
990. On 20 December 1988 [REDACTED] provided a written statement to police. His statement includes;
991. He is employed at [REDACTED] as an [REDACTED] [REDACTED]. He first got to know Scott about three years ago through Scott travelling from Canberra to attend Category Theory seminars at Macquarie University and Scott asking him for a research problem. Scott solved the problem and wrote it as a paper quickly which led to Scott working towards a PhD under his supervision. Scott spent two days per week in Sydney working towards his PhD and attending seminars. He describes Scott as an excellent student who was unassuming
992. During the course of his PhD studies Scott solved two major problems and wrote papers on them. The first solved problem had been accepted for publication and he had started to work on a third problem which Scott saw as a major contribution to the field of mathematics. It is [REDACTED]'s view that Scott appeared to enjoy the PhD work and he particularly liked the third problem.
993. On Wednesday the 7th of December 1988 at about 2pm [REDACTED] saw Scott on campus which surprised him as he had left a message on Scott's

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Canberra answering machine that the usual Wednesday seminar had been cancelled. Scott told him that he had received the message but had wanted to speak to [REDACTED] anyway and which was their usual Wednesday practice. [REDACTED] was unable to speak with him at that time and Scott left saying that he would contact [REDACTED] soon to make an appointment.

994. In supervising Scott's work [REDACTED] formed the view that enough of the third problem had been solved by Scott for the purpose of his PhD and he told Scott this more than once, the last occasion being over the telephone on Thursday the 8th of December 1988. About 10.30am that day Scott called [REDACTED] at the university and told him that he had found a way of simplifying the second problem which he was happy about. Scott asked to see him that afternoon or the next afternoon being Friday the 9th of December 1988, but neither was suitable to [REDACTED]. They agreed to meet as usual the next Wednesday being the 14th of December 1988. Scott mentioned that he was going to spend Christmas at the home of the [REDACTED] family.

995. [REDACTED] states that he knew very little about Scott's personal life, but that he did know that Scott was in a homosexual relationship with a male in Canberra, that Scott was close to his brother Stephen, excited to have become an uncle, and maintained good fitness.

996. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

997. On 15 March 2013 [REDACTED] provided an electronically recorded interview with police. The recorded interview includes –

998. [REDACTED] was asked to read his written statement of 20 December 1988 aloud after which he said unprompted,

999. '...there are things there that I had forgotten and what you do over time is to have these rational thoughts that become almost a fact'.

1000. '...what we had was a seminar, we've had this for a long time, generally on Wednesdays, Wednesday afternoons for my subject Category Theory. And it used to alternate between Sydney University and Macquarie University...so it's natural that I would see him on Wednesdays prior to the seminar, sometimes

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



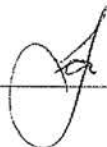
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

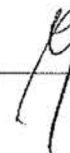
before I think to have a meeting just to talk to him...that would probably be one on one...'

1001. '...although I did try when he was in Sydney I'd drive a bunch of people from Macquarie across (to Sydney University) and...I can't remember whether he came from Macquarie to Sydney or whether he just appeared at Sydney...I didn't exactly (know) where he was living at that time...
1002. '...I didn't even know the [REDACTED] name (at the time of making the statement on 20 December 1988)...he would have told me that he spending Christmas at the place he stayed in Sydney...but I don't think I knew that it was the parents of his boyfriend...
1003. '...And this is another thing I'm having difficulty remembering but we might get it straight...'
1004. '...So Scott would be coming up to Sydney...and knew about Category Theory and this guy [REDACTED] wanted to do an Honours essay on Category Theory and so I think Scott must have told [REDACTED] about me and...I sort of supervised his Honours Thesis as well...so I think maybe they were quite close too, [REDACTED] and, and Scott were close enough as students on the same course are...'
1005. '...so there were at least three of my actual students, that's what I called them in the interview with Who (magazine), the questions I answered for Who magazine...
1006. '... Miss X ([REDACTED])yes, a Hong Kong student who'd gone all the way through Macquarie University but ended up doing a PhD with me, ah, she was in the course and so was Scott and they were two top students and the others were not as good as them...and again is Miss X, is that her confidential name or...well because I thought, no, well no I just didn't want to put that in Who magazine because...but you can find it out on the web because I've got a list of all my students and things.
1007. '... [REDACTED] her name was...as an undergraduate she called herself [REDACTED] but she preferred to go back to her Chinese name...so her and Scott were in a course together, they were the top two...so she was really my first PhD even though I think Scott was really my first one that went right through to PhD...she actually got hers before we got Scott's thesis through...

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1008. (Q11 And can you just explain to me what is Category Theory?) '...I'm always ready for this question but I never give a good answer...it's a bunch of mathematics...and it's...to some extent a unified branch so it relates lots of different parts of mathematics...it has its own problems and yet it relates both algebra and geometry... some mathematicians are scared of it because they think it's just too general... it's fairly new, it started (in) 1945...it's now become...part of undergraduate courses or higher undergraduate courses...
1009. ...there was nothing that they knew really in Category Theory at that time (in the 1980's)...so that's why Macquarie and Sydney University, my supervisor was still in Sydney University...
1010. ...there was one question I actually made a mistake in a question and...Scott actually worked out what the question I meant to ask was and solved that...looking back on it, I think that I probably didn't test him as far as he could go...especially afterwards when I found out all these other things about what he'd done before I knew him.
1011. '...it was more formal in those days the students I have now and I sit down at a desk once a week (for) two and three hours and I talk to them and we do pencil and paper together...(Scott) was fairly independent...it's hard to remember actually what the process was with him 'cause it was still early for me too to supervise PhD's.
1012. (Q46 So how did Scott become connected with your area at Macquarie University?)...I think he followed [REDACTED], now I realise I didn't know at that time, to Australia...I didn't really know why he'd come to Australia...decided he wanted to learn some Category Theory and come up to Sydney...go to the seminars and then he got this problem from me and solved that and then decided he wanted to go on I think and do a PhD...
1013. ...so yeah I thought he was catching the bus up from Canberra I didn't really know what he was doing...
1014. ... the rest of the time he'd come to the seminars and maybe meet with me but when the course was on that would have been offered...the time was chosen to suit him so he wouldn't have to come up too many times...so there would have

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



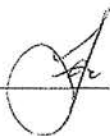
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

been two times, two days he'd need to be in Sydney, one for the course and one for the seminar...

1015. ...I guess he just started coming to seminars...we had lots of people to come to them..my idea is he probably just sat up the back more or less although a lot of it was in a room, if it's at Sydney University it was in an office...(the lecturer) had a fairly big office and we'd sit around a table with a blackboard up...
1016. ...suddenly a student in, an undergraduate student, distinguish themselves by asking a question that you're quite impressed by and then you remember it forever...but they've been in the class for two years or something not saying anything.
1017. (Scott was) ...just very quietly spoken...I mean he'd get through a discussion he'd have a lot of...get input into his own ideas and then he'd go away and work on it that
1018. ...I can sort of picture (Scott), I mean the TV programme was very much how he looked and (he) was fairly quiet and but he was a healthy looking guy...very similar to Steve (Mr Johnson) in some ways not quite as extrovert as Steve I'd say.
1019. (Q67 Is there something about his personality that you can describe a bit, his mannerisms...)...Ah, no, well, there's a, probably the closest sort of discussion of other things than mathematics with him was, because he was a student at, ah, ANU they had this system of reviewing how the students were going each year so I, I've looked at the letters I have here which tell me it was February, 1988, that Mike Newman and Martin Ward (ANU supervisors) wanted me to go down to Canberra to be with (Scott) while he was being, it was sort of an interview for him. He had to get up and say what he'd been doing and put it in a written report...and then sort of defend it in front of everybody. So I, ah, went down for that...that would, that would have been February 1988...
1020. ...they had to keep an eye on me to see as well as him to see what we were doing a good job...so we went down there..Now the point about that is that he told me that he'd meet me at the airport and yeah so when I met him at the airport, I'd heard that he had...(a) friend or partner or something like that. And...when I got out of the plane I said, "Ah, is your friend or partner here too?"

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



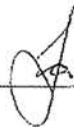
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

And then he said, "No he's working or doing something else", and that was the first time I knew that his partner was a male.

1021. ...I think (on that visit to Canberra) we went out...a few times...it tells you exactly when it was that I was there, Monday and Tuesday, so probably Monday night we had dinner together in the cafeteria...we started talking about world affairs and things like that...he knew what was going on in the world. He seemed to be a vegetarian...so he was worried about health I would say and...he seemed to just be worried a little bit about the world...no more than anybody else just like other students of the day, probably not as much as some of the more political people you get that try to change everything...
1022. ...so I don't think he even would have a drink of alcohol or probably he might have had a glass of wine or something but he, I think that the part of the vegetarian and their healthy lifestyle he probably didn't.
1023. (Q122 ...is this a stressful time for Scott?)...no I think he thought he had it under control, I mean he wasn't, when I say he was shy he still could speak in public and give lectures and, and he was confident because he was, he was good at that...he knew what he wanted to talk about and so he had confidence in that.
1024. (Q92 Did he speak about his personal life, did he speak about his family?)...I'm pretty sure I knew he had a brother...I think I knew that they (Scott and Stephen) had a company of some sort...which they jokingly, like but this is another thing I'm not quite sure when I learnt that they called it Johnson and Johnson. I sort of, I think I learnt that maybe from Steve afterwards.
1025. (Q96 Was there other, more mention about the company that he had with his brother, what they were (going to do) later?)...No, no. But I knew that he was doing some sort of other discussions with the, the economists and so on, academic economists, they were interested in him because he had solve their problems...
1026. (Q120 Did Scott ever talk to you about his life as child or his upbringing or anything like that?) No I don't think so, no I think I've learnt all that since.
1027. (Referring to the possible suicide) ...there was no indication at all...so I'm interested in reading that statement because I, I've been trying to remember...

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

thought we'd missed that Wednesday, the day before he died...but I hadn't remembered that he'd actually come in person that day...

1028. (Q154 And can you try, I know it's very difficult, but try and put yourself back in your office on that day on the phone and if you can picture that in your mind and try and recall (over the telephone on Thursday 8 December 1988)...well I've thought about it a few times but...I was sitting in...the office...and we would have discussed (his latest work)...I told him that solving the axiom, doing the equal thing and the product part was enough to complete the thesis.

1029. ([REDACTED] thinks that he had been telling Scott for a while about the probably success of his PhD) "I told him that quite a while before not just on that phone call. But then this new thing, it was certainly, it'd certainly be enough (to complete the thesis) and so it's just a matter of writing it down and he would have had it all worked out...'cause I had other things to do and we all had other things to do so we only had difficulty reconstructing it all. But in retrospect I would have said he would have had it and, it was just a matter of him writing it down which he could have done very quickly, very quickly...he didn't tell me the details of how (he did it) unfortunately...but the good thing for making this part of his PhD was that he had talked in the seminar about the product part...so he had his stamp on that as his work.

1030. (On how Scott was awarded his PhD after his death)...I said that I'd like to get a posthumous PhD, I told the people in Canberra... and I told either Steve (Johnson) or Margaret Anderson was his mother...and it just went on and on much longer than I thought it would, that's why it's (awarded in) '93...

1031. ...and there was also some bureaucracy once we solved the problem...the people in Canberra...it was a new thing for them (to posthumously award a PhD) and so they had to create this possibility which worked out eventually...I mean they just accepted the idea of having a posthumous PhD done by...the supervisor afterwards...although we also put some mathematics into the final thing to try and recapture what he must have done. So he'd done the first two parts, there was no debate about that, but trying to solve how this worked out, it's all sort of described in the beginning of the thesis...

Witness:



Signature:




P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1032. (Q176 And what was the motivation?) ...I think I thought of the posthumous first because...he's so close it's, it should be done...but I thought it would be good for the family but also you don't know, I'm not a particular religious person but maybe he's up there thinking...we've actually got pictures (of the award ceremony in 1995), that's me being awarded see standing in his place...(it was) given to (Scott's) family.(Referring to a photograph)...that's Steve (Johnson) getting it from the Vice Chancellor.
1033. (Q185 Did you meet the (Johnson) family?)...Steve came out almost...straight after Scott died, he came and stayed at our house...a couple of nights. I remember we were jogging in those days and my wife and I...we took (Steve) jogging to our favourite places.
1034. (Q186 And how did Steve come to say at your house after Scott's death...?)...I think he met, he somehow met up with [REDACTED] before, I think he must have gone to Canberra first and...well he would have rang me to talk to me about it...'cause [REDACTED] is the one who rang me after he'd just identified the body...I don't know whether that was the Saturday, I think it must have been the Saturday...because my wife wasn't there and I was pretty upset all by myself...
1035. (Q190 Had your wife met Scott?) ...I don't think she ever met him, no
1036. ...we were going to have a social (gathering of students and lecturers in 1988)...It was Alan Turing who was the guy who broke the enigma code in World War II and ... I thought that we'd started to organise this theatre party (to see a play called 'Breaking the Code' about the enigma code at the Marion Street theatre) and had almost no reaction...in the...mathematics department...it didn't work, nobody wanted to go except for Scott.
1037. ...Scott actually said he wanted to go (to the play) and my memory was that...we'd made this arrangement that he'd go...what must have happened was that we didn't get enough acceptances but Scott was definitely wanting to go...
1038. (Turing was an exceptional mathematician who suicided by poisoning himself)
1039. (Regarding Mr Johnson's business)...(he developed a way of sending) images across the email somehow. And that's what he sold to America Online...what year...I don't know...certainly after Scott's death because when

Witness:



Signature:



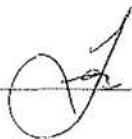
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Steve came out (to Australia) he wasn't wealthy when he came out after the death.

1040. ...the first I knew about the (donation to the university)...his secretary rang me at Macquarie and said he was wanting to set up a donation to our group, our Category Theory Group at Macquarie and (asked) who he should send it to. And he said either half a million or a million dollars...the secretary lined up a phone call and then we, Steve talked to me about it. I was pretty blown out of the water because that was, the Australian dollar was pretty weak then so...
1041. (Q220 Do you remember the year that, they year we're talking about?) ...'90, I think it must have been after we'd submitted this thesis...I don't know...I thought it was earlier than '95, so I'd say '93 something like that...so we invented the Centre of Australia Category Theory and COACT, it was a good name I thought. And then we had a sort of discussion with the Vice Chancellor and the finance guy at Macquarie and had a joint phone call with Steve and we worked out a way of, I was wanting Steve not to have to pay tax the thing, so we ended up working through a thing called the...foundation in California, um, to pay the money through that to us. And it was some way of getting the same rights for Macquarie as they'd get for an American university.
1042. ...so (via the foundation) we were very pleased and we've upgraded quite well. We've set up fellowships for post graduate, for post docs. so people get their PhD and then they want to get their first job...and also for people to do PhD scholarships for them to do it...because it turned out it was one point six million Australia dollars...it was donated by Steve Johnson...
1043. ...there's a requirement that I have to sort of keep telling him what we're doing each year and we report to this California Foundation...it was a one off (donation), I wouldn't mind a bit more...he gave a similar type of donation to Caltech.
1044. (Q247 So was there any condition that if you get...Scott's (posthumous) PhD, then I'll give you money?)...Ah no, no...I'm sure that was (already) done...I don't know whether (Steve) said that was a reward for that (award)...for what we'd done for him that's all...there was no money motivated, money motivated in that no.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1045. [REDACTED] does not recall or have documents of the donation process or year.
1046. [REDACTED] has kept notes written by Scott during his studies. Of the notes he says, '...it's all very sensible (Scott's writing)'.
1047. ...(Scott) had lots of talents which are all kind of mathematical...part of him might have had other talents too but I knew...the mathematical stuff was all mathematical content.
1048. The interviewer notes for the record that in a letter dated 17 December 1988 written by [REDACTED] to Scott's mother that it includes a reference to endeavouring to try and get Scott his PhD awarded.
1049. ...[REDACTED] just showed me all the mathematical stuff that he'd got from the...Lane Cove house...boxes of mathematical stuff and said...take whatever is of interest, or you think will be useful.. I took just about everything...
1050. ...when Steve (Johnson) came out (to Australia)...I think (he had driven) from Canberra to Sydney with [REDACTED]...I don't know the arrangement (as to why he) he stayed with us. I think he was pretty angry with [REDACTED]...he'd got something...in his mind, I don't know, anyway that's his story.
1051. [REDACTED] met [REDACTED] twice, once at the Lane Cove house to collect the math material and at the funeral for Scott.
1052. (Q416 Do you recall how [REDACTED] was emotionally (when he called you to tell you about Scott's death?)...I think he was pretty upset by it but he was, he sounded calm but that's sometimes when you're in shock. I mean it'd be a terrible thing to, to have to identify the body, ah, and no he was matter of fact, he, he wasn't breaking down and crying ...because he had to introduce himself...(as they had not been in contact before)
1053. ...introverted people would be more nervous in, in seminars and things (than Scott was). He wasn't really nervous about talking, not talking about things he was confident in...things he understood he could talk about yeah.
1054. (Q461 Do you, do you think that if Scott had any troubles with anything or anything was troubling him would you be somebody that he would approach?) ...Probably, I don't know, not really, probably not, it's hard to say. I'd like to think

Witness:



Signature:



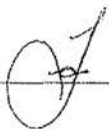
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

I could be approached but I was probably a little bit more formal about relationships in those days...

1055. ...(Scott) looked very much like Steve to some extent, maybe a little...less meat on the cheeks and things like that but, he did have a little mannerism, having his head to his side a bit sometimes and sort of looking a little bit coy, sitting back listening to things...fit, clean skin, curly sort of blondie hair...
1056. ...Personality, I think he was just quiet during most of the meetings, I suppose we'd sit at a desk and he'd say what he'd done, describe what he'd done and talk about his papers...I'm sure we didn't discuss anything very personal, yeah.
1057. (Q494 Do you know, was Scott in a relationship, do you know he may have had a relationship on the side with any of the other PhD students?)...I don't think so, I mean the, the question is how much interaction he had at all with them, I think probably just in the seminars and stuff because he had his own...I mean I really don't know, his own partner I guess...
1058. (Q496 Other than mathematics were you aware of any other of Scott's interests?)...ah, no I don't think so. It's hard to know where you learn things, I mean I knew he was interested in some physics from, ah, from his brother, ah, when they talked about being at Caltech...
1059. ...he would walk, I think he would, I don't know whether (he) walked just for walking sake but he would walk places because he didn't, as far as I know he didn't drive...and yet he picked me up at the airport, that's, or did he now that's good question, maybe Martin, Martin Ward was with us, I mean he was definitely in the car.
1060. ...Steve (Johnson) had been telling me all these things that had happened in his discussion to [REDACTED]...it was about, about these phone calls and recorded messages I think...some things didn't sort of but, you know, they're, they're ordinary things that was out of whack ...well I can't even remember what the, what the issue was there...there was something or other which just didn't make logical sense to Steve...I thought well under the circumstances, you know, [REDACTED]'s memory wouldn't be accurate but it might be, um, I don't know, ah, ah, but there was, we were talking about that issue on the drive over to his house then when [REDACTED] came with, um, in fact I think maybe his mother

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

was in the house or his sister or his mother or something as well, ah, um, I think most of the time we stood outside in the, ah, the car, [REDACTED]'s car and had a discussion there. Um - - -

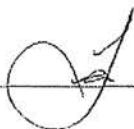
1061. (Q578 Did you interact with Scott much outside of being at the universities like did he call you at home or would you meet up outside universities?)... no, we usually discourage students from ringing at home, ah, but they, they did sometimes...we always had an open phone number...we didn't meet, no, no, I'd say we didn't meet really at all...my wife was trying to remember and she, she thinks she didn't meet him at all...Didn't, nothing rang any bells when she saw him on the Australian Story...

1062. (Q582 And you were approached to be part of the programme, is that correct?) ...yeah I declined and so a guy named Cheshire or something...he tried twice...he got me off on the wrong foot to start with actually...making out that it was obvious that anybody would think it was a great programme, Australian Story, and it's not actually one of my favourite programmes at all. I don't need to know those sorts of gossipy things...

1063. (Q632 Now I know this is going to be very, very difficult but I need you to try and put yourself back in that hallway on that day and it will be upsetting as the last time that you saw Scott but if you can just put your mind back to that day and put yourself back into the hallway where you were when, um, you ran into Scott and try and picture that in your mind and picture, picture you're seeing Scott, can you tell me what Scott was wearing?)...Oh, boy, I wouldn't have any idea, I think he probably had, no like I mean I don't really know but he would usually have the sort of bag over his shoulder that, ah, made out of material I'd say that's my picture of him. Ah, it's very hard to remember how people look.

1064. ...he wouldn't wear these formal type pants like mine I'd say they're more like what people where on safari or something like that I'd say, those sorts of pants...I don't remember him wearing jeans they were more safari kind of pants not shorts but longer safari pants, ah, yeah I've got a couple of pairs now for going on bush walks where you might scratch your legs and things but, ah, I'm really, it's very hard to remember that...

Witness:



Signature:

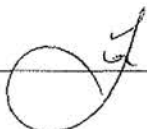


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1065. (Q642 And when, when Scott phoned you, we'll go to paragraph five and it says, "At about 10.30am on Thursday, the 8th of December, 1988 I was contacted by Scott by telephone at work." How do you know it was that time at 10.30?)...I don't know how I knew that it was 10.30, I said about...I might have had a class, no by December there's probably no classes, no it'd just be speculation...maybe the person taking the notes wanted to get a time or something but and I said around that time, mid morning and he might have made it more specific.
1066. (Q654 During the, when you had this conversation with Scott when he rang to make the appointment to see you, you state in your statement here, "He had found a way of simplifying the second problem and he was very happy about this." Can you tell me more about that?)... the second problem...so I usually talk in terms of there being three parts to the thesis and the second problem would have been this second paper, but I think this is more the, this equaliser problem, which is a second, which it could have been taken that way so it was this product...which he'd talked about so we knew that, that this new axiom...the second problem must have been about the equalisers.
1067. ...I had already said that the thing would have been good enough for a PhD even without the equalisers part but we were both quite happy I think that he'd, he'd solved the equaliser part too...but then I must say I started to doubt that after he died because I couldn't, couldn't reconstruct it but it turned out it was right...
1068. (Q658 Now during that conversation can you recall if like Scott and even though it goes to what type of person he is, was he really pushing to see you...?)...Ah, no, no, no, no I'd say. He wasn't that kind of pushy, no. No we were both wanting, I'd want to hear him and he'd want to tell me but...I don't think it was disappointing to him particularly just (he) would tell me next time well because I think we just mutually agreed to, we'll leave it until the next, the next normal meeting which would have been the (following) Wednesday.
1069. (Q660 Now back in '88 when you had dealings with students or if you had any contact with students did you keep a diary?) ...No...well considering I could remember things in those days...I'd make a note...just a mental note.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1070. (Q665 And the conversation that you had with Scott over the phone would that be a mental note or you, would you record it somewhere?) ...that wouldn't be recorded at all, no.
1071. (Q669 You mentioned in paragraph six of your statement, "I knew he was very close to his brother Steve and that he was very excited when he became an uncle after the birth of his brother's baby." Do you recall when the baby was born and if the baby was a girl or a boy?)...I know those things now I guess but I don't even remember knowing that from Scott actually...I don't remember any of that last stuff actually any more.
1072. ...I did know that he'd talked about his brother...and he must have told me, it seems quite possible that he had told me that his brother was having a baby and, ah, that he, ah, was going to spend this Christmas at the...place he was staying in, in Sydney.
1073. (Q674 [14:51] Now when you made this statement on the 20th of December, 1988 was that when Steve was staying at your home?)...No I think he'd gone back by then yeah, it couldn't have been. He wouldn't have been there that long.
1074. (Q675 And when you had the discussions, well you would have had the discussions when he was at your home do you recall what the focus of those discussions were, they were obviously about Scott's death but do you remember the focus of the discussions if, you know, could, could it be suicide, could it not have been suicide?) ...Yeah, well I think even then Steven was interested in pursuing the possibility of murder of some sort...(Steve) was interested in finding out from me what I'm telling you now I suppose...about the last days...
1075. (Q685 So what, during our conversations today, just so I can make sure that I've totally understood what you've said, when, if Scott was upset about anything, whether his personal life or academically or something wasn't right with him that day, you know when some people are having a bad day or they're a bit sad and you can sort of tell they're maybe a bit flat, did you have, did Scott have any of those indications that you observed?)...No, nothing, as I say it was just disbelief when I got this phone call from [REDACTED]. No there was no indicators to me at all...

Witness:



Signature:

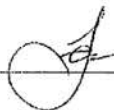


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1076. ...I had no experience of people committing suicide anyway so I didn't know although what I have heard of it since there's usually been suicide notes or something but ...but some psychiatrists' say that you can have, commit suicide without having notes...
1077. (Q705 And, um, the Manly area where Scott has gone to and, um, his body was found at the cliff there at Blue Fish Point, did Scott ever had any conversations with you about that area at all?)...No nothing, never, nothing, I didn't know anything about it at all.
1078. ...like I say...there are lots of things I didn't know...I don't think I knew that he was staying at Lane Cove...I knew he wasn't too far away but...as I say there's lots I didn't know about him that's for sure.
1079. (Q762...question earlier about with his qualifications what he could he do with that and you mentioned teaching?) ...well teaching and research at the university but he could have adapted to see a lot of my students now are going to finance industry... even though they're not really using the same qualifications, not the same material... though it gives them the ability to think the way the finance people want, want them...and there was computer science, he obviously was interested in using Category Theory to computer science which became a big thing a bit after...I would have written him strong references..
1080. (Q772 And just recapping that if Scott did have any personal issues or was upset about anything to look at him you couldn't tell if anything was bothering him?) I couldn't, no, he didn't have any sign of that but and as I say I don't know that I'd be the one he came to tell me those things...but there was nothing visible that was making him depressed that I can remember.
1081. (Q780 And when, and when Scott did, when the news Scott died filtered through to the university what were the reactions of your colleagues and your students that knew Scott?)...I don't know just sort of, just something that they took as having happened and they went to the funeral, well a lot of them did...I've tried to talk to Mark Johnson who was around at the time, another colleague at Macquarie, he doesn't remember that much about him either to help me out in remembering things but he did go to the funeral. Max Kelly (another colleague) went but Max has died since.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

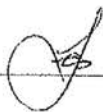


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1082. (Q783 And there no rumours or whispers about the possibility of Scott having an affair with anybody else?) No, no, I didn't hear anything about that no.
1083. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW & TRANSCRIPTION
1084. [REDACTED]
1085. On 11 April 2103 [REDACTED] provided an electronically recorded interview to police. In summary she states;
1086. [REDACTED] has been a friend of hers since university in 1974 or 1975.
1087. She met Scott in the mid 1980's when [REDACTED] came back to Australia and she was living in Armidale. They went up to visit her there, and that's when she first met Scott. It was in perhaps 1984 or 1985. She became very good friends with Scott as well.
1088. She remembers having the impression that Scott was not in touch with his family saying, 'I got the impression that there'd been a falling out, whether that was with his parents, or with his parents and his brother' and, 'I was aware that he had a brother but I wasn't aware that he was close to his brother. I was aware that the, that there was some problem with the family, but he didn't, wasn't in contact with them very much.' Scott didn't talk about his family a lot, if at all. It's only since his death that she learned more.
1089. Mr [REDACTED] moved to Canberra, and then in July 1987 she moved to Canberra and worked with him at the school of music. The three of them socialised a lot and [REDACTED] and Scott use to go to her place out of town come for dinner, a game of cards, and for walks after work. This occurred probably a couple of times a week if not more.
1090. Scott was not a 'great talker'. He was a quiet character so they did not have extended conversations, but you mention Scott's name to people who met him and 'everyone smiles'. She describes Scott as lovely, gentle, smiley, very good natured and shy but with a good sense of humour.
1091. Scott was not extroverted, saying that it would be fair to say that he was introverted. Not introverted in a sullen way, but he tended to be quiet rather than exuberant. He was not likely to initiate conversation in a group.

Witness:



Signature:

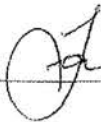


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1092. Her friend Jenny and John and their sons met Scott and Jenny has very fond memories of Scott, even though she only met him I think that once, she has strong memories of that day and Scott interacting well with her children.
1093. [REDACTED] lived on a grazing property and they would go for long walks together down to the river and back and sometimes Scott would take off and run ahead of them. He was very fit without being sort of fanatical about it.
1094. Scott did not drive to her knowledge. Scott used to go to Sydney, not every week but many weeks, often for a midweek seminar at Macquarie University. They visited her place on Thursdays, Fridays or over the weekend.
1095. She never encountered Scott raising his voice or shouting, or being in any way angry, saying that he was very calm person. She describes Scott as a self-contained character not necessarily looking for company and activities. She describes him as an unusual person in that he was a quiet observer rather than an active outgoing person.
1096. She says that there were a lot of gay men at the music school so no one hid the fact that they were gay. She was well aware that [REDACTED] was gay. She says that [REDACTED] and Scott had a very loving relationship, very openly affectionate but not necessarily in public. They were terribly fond of one another and were well matched in her opinion. [REDACTED] is outgoing and vibrant and Scott was the opposite, but they worked very well together.
1097. Scott was serious about his PhD. His subject was not the sort of subject matter that he could communicate easily with [REDACTED] or her about. He had a passion for mathematics and was driven to get the answer to whatever the question was that he'd posed himself. It was an intellectual challenge and he did not do it to be the top professor, or wanting to earn money, or wanting to get a particular job.
1098. [REDACTED] and Scott's home in Downer was a modest place with two or three bedrooms. She went there for dinner a couple of times and Scott made a pecan pie which was his speciality. It was sparsely furnished as that was not something that was important to either of them.
1099. She is unaware of any financial any stressors in their relationship

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

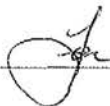


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1100. HIV/AIDS was a topic of conversation because they had a friend who died. She does not remember conversations about whether they were having blood tests for HIV/AIDS.
1101. She says that she has 'never understood' that they had a very loving relationship and yet she thinks that both of them were going out separately and having casual sex. There was no conversation about this with her but that is the impression she got.
1102. She had the impression that their relationship was not monogamous but does not know what that impression was based on saying, "it may simply have been that that was...from all my acquaintance with gay blokes, that was the norm..."
1103. ██████████ and Scott use to feel free to cuddle in her company but they did not talk in depth about their relationship in front of her. It seemed to be an equal and loving relationship.
1104. ██████████ provides detail about the stressors of political machinations at the Canberra School of Music, which was a cause of stress for her, other staff, and particularly ██████████ as head of the department. As to Scott's reaction to it she says that Scott would have made light of it but she does not recall speaking to him about it. ██████████ is a highly strung person but he can also laugh at himself.
1105. She thinks that ██████████ really depended on Scott and on his friendship during the hard time at work.
1106. If ██████████ lost his temper he could be very cutting, not in an explosive way but with a very sharp tongue. ██████████ does not bare a grudge.
1107. When she found out about Scott's body being found she was at home. ██████████ had been in Melbourne and he'd got back on the night he rang and told her. She never forgot the phone call. She drove ██████████ from Canberra to Sydney that night. ██████████ was in shock, and she could tell from his voice on the phone that he was deeply in shock and didn't know what to do. It was clear to her that she had to help ██████████. In the car to Sydney they detailed the reasons why the body may not end up being Scott.
1108. She cannot think of any reason why Scott would kill himself. He did not seem depressed. She remembers ██████████ taking up smoking again which he had given up for Scott.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

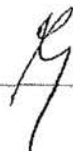
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1109. When they were talking to police officer Troy Hardie she remembers seeing a bus ticket that was a return ticket and she saw that as a sign that he would not have committed suicide if he had a return ticket. (As recorded earlier, it is not possible that the ticket was a return ticket).
1110. At the funeral she remembers Mr Johnson having a conversation with [REDACTED]. They went off together and [REDACTED] came back very distressed and tense. [REDACTED] claimed that Mr Johnson had accused him of murder. She remembers [REDACTED]'s mother being furious with Mr Johnson about this which is very out of character for her.
1111. She first became aware that the area where Scott's body was found was a gay beat from Mr Glick. He contacted her when she was still in Canberra and said that he was writing a book or doing research. She describes him as quite persistent and describes him as "very pushy" and insisting that he was an important journalist. She found him manipulative in not taking no for an answer.
1112. [REDACTED] received emails from Mr Glick and Mr Johnson. Ms Johnson also sent emails "pleading" for [REDACTED] to be involved but she declined.
1113. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW & TRANSCRIPTION
1114. [REDACTED]
1115. On 28 March 2013 [REDACTED] a close friend of [REDACTED] since high school Year 11, took part in an electronically recorded witness interview.
1116. [REDACTED] was present during the post mortem as requested by [REDACTED] and with the knowledge Mr Johnson. She stated [REDACTED] and Mr Johnson asked her if she could ascertain if Scott had been in a physical fight before his death or if he had sexual intercourse. She recalls the autopsy (completed by Dr Dufiou) was extremely thorough and it was impossible to verify if Scott had sexual intercourse prior to death. The fatal injuries sustained to his head/face due to the fall from her memory made it impossible to comment whether or not Scott had been in a physical fight.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

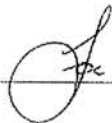


P.S.Young

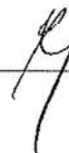
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1117. She confirmed that Scott and [REDACTED] were in a committed relationship. She was present at the party held at the Lane Cove home and recalls that Scott and [REDACTED] were in the pool together for a lengthy time.
1118. From memory had met Scott on three separate occasions, described him to be shy but very nice.
1119. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW & TRANSCRIPTION
1120. [REDACTED]
1121. On 30 April 2013 police contacted [REDACTED] who is a friend of [REDACTED] and attended the birthday party for Scott on 3 December 1988. He had a slight recollection of attending the party at the home of [REDACTED]'s parents and that is was on the weekend prior to Scott's death. At the time he and [REDACTED] were flat mates and in the same social set.
1122. He describes Scott as [REDACTED]'s partner who was good looking with a warm personality. He knew Scott to be intelligent and recalls a conversation about him completing a higher mathematics degree.
1123. He has no recollection of talking to Scott on the occasion of his birthday. He stated he did not know Scott well but had met him on three or four occasions in the company of [REDACTED]. He thought that the two of them were very happy together and committed to each other. He does not think that either of them were being unfaithful.
1124. When he heard about Scott's death, he like most of their social set were shocked and very surprised by the thought of Scott taking his own life. He cannot provide a reason for Scott being at Manly and was not aware that it was a gay beat.
1125. He is aware that [REDACTED] was the last person to speak to Scott (when he called the Lane Cove house looking for [REDACTED]) and recalls [REDACTED] telling him that during the phone call Scott told [REDACTED] that he was planning to go to the beach on that day. (As recorded earlier, [REDACTED] was asked about this by

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

police and denies that it occurred saying that it would have been a priority for him state that information if it had occurred).

1126. [REDACTED]

1127. On 27 March 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] who was an attendee at the birthday party held for Scott at the Lane Cove house on 3 December 1988.

1128. [REDACTED] had been friends with [REDACTED] as undergraduates in music at Sydney University. He had met Scott who he knew to be [REDACTED]'s partner at two or three large gatherings.

1129. He does not remember being present at the party and could not indicate when he last saw Scott.

1130. He recalls that [REDACTED] appeared happy in his relationship with Scott. In his opinion, [REDACTED] was not one to be involved in casual sex relationships due to busy work commitments and other interests.

1131. He said that he did not talk with Scott about his sexual interests as he was not close to him to discuss such matters. He did not discuss relationship issues with [REDACTED] or Scott, either their own relationship or other sexual relationships they may have had. In relation to conversation with Scott, [REDACTED] found Scott to be shy and not much given to talking.

1132. In 2013 he had email correspondence with Ms Johnson and explained the same details to her.

1133. [REDACTED] says that he was a gay beat user in the 1980's and only used those in the area of Paddington South Sydney. He had no knowledge of gay beats in Manly and had not gone to that area for casual sex. He has no friends who used Manly for casual sex.

1134. On 30 April 2013 police again spoke with [REDACTED] based on information from [REDACTED] that Scott may have learned of gay beats from [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] said that it is possible that he spoke with Scott at the birthday party about

Witness:



Signature:



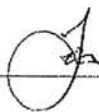
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

the Marks Park Bondi gay beat as he was familiar with it due to living in the Paddington area at the time. He has no specific memory of such a conversation.

1135. [REDACTED]
1136. On 9 May 2013 [REDACTED] made a written statement which includes that in 1988 he was the partner of [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were partners from 1983 until 1994 and lived in Balmain and Stanmore.
1137. [REDACTED] is a friend of [REDACTED] as they are former [REDACTED] students. [REDACTED] attended the Lane Cove party as [REDACTED]'s partner. He thinks that this is the first time that he met Scott. He had met [REDACTED] a few times socially.
1138. The party guests were a mix of males and females and [REDACTED] did not know the names of any of the guests at the party with exception of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and Scott. He consumed alcohol while at the party and was slightly intoxicated.
1139. He found Scott to be shy, with only one interest which was math. He describes Scott as good looking, with a delicate personality, and hard to engage in conversation. He says that therefore he was not attracted to Scott.
1140. He recalls the party as being in the daytime and that he got into the pool in the back yard. Scott got into the pool as well and they struck up a conversation but he does not remember what they spoke about. He was in the pool for about half an hour before getting out because he got cold.
1141. Later he remembers [REDACTED] making some announcement to everyone about a job in Perth. He does not recall the details. He does not recall that the party was for Scott's birthday.
1142. [REDACTED] found out that Scott had died from [REDACTED] who told him that Scott had suicided off a cliff.
1143. He was asked by police if he spoke with Scott about gay beats. [REDACTED] does not specifically remember but explains that if he did speak to Scott at the party about gay beats it could only have been in relation to a bad experience that

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

he had at a gay beat. The experience was sometime before 1988 at Moore Park in the inner east of Sydney. He was with a male friend and when they were near bushes they saw two groups of youths with one teenage female with them. They felt threatened and his friend picked up a stick. Nothing else happened.

1144. He suggests that he could have mentioned this experience to Scott in order to warn him about the danger of gay beats and that this kind of conversation was typical of a subject spoken about between gay men.

1145. He had no knowledge that North Head was a beat and never went there. He does not recall any conversation with Scott about Manly. [REDACTED] knew that Obelisk Beach Mosman was a gay friendly beach for the purpose of nude bathing.

1146. From memory Scott seemed happy and they laughed and joked in the pool. In 1988 [REDACTED] had qualified as a junior psychiatric nurse and worked at Rozelle Hospital.

1147. [REDACTED] visited several gay beats located on the southern side of the harbour bridge and engaged in casual sex with men at these locations.

1148. He has not engaged in a relationship with any person knowingly associated with [REDACTED]. He did not have a relationship or casual sex with Scott.

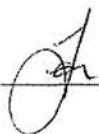
1149. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

1150. [REDACTED]


1151. On 14 March 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] who had also attended the Lane Cove party. He had been friends with [REDACTED] since the age of 12 years when they started at [REDACTED] High School together. [REDACTED] recalls meeting Scott a few times and that he was [REDACTED]'s boyfriend.

1152. The last occasion that he saw Scott was at the Lane Cove party. [REDACTED] remembers that the party was attended by about twenty guests who all mixed together.

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
P.S. Young

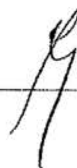
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1153. He did not notice any suicidal ideation with Scott and was aware of his recent completion of the PhD in mathematics. Following the death of Scott, [REDACTED] stayed with him at his Stanmore home.
1154. He said that he knew of, but did not use, gay beats in Sydney. A gay beat at Manly was not known to him.
1155. He is unaware of any interest developing between Scott and his partner at the time, [REDACTED].
1156. [REDACTED]
1157. [REDACTED] was also present at the birthday party for Scott held at Lane Cove in 1988. Police interviewed him and he stated that he knew [REDACTED] through friends of their musical group. He stated he did not know Scott at all and thinks the only time he may have met him was at the party. He described Scott as a polite and quite good looking. He recalls Scott being very reserved and cannot recall participating in any conversation with Scott.
1158. His memory of the party is that [REDACTED] seemed very happy and nothing about [REDACTED]'s behaviour suggested that anything was wrong. He recalls Scott's 'distance' from everyone else and that Scott was so reserved and quiet that he did not leave a lasting impression upon him.
1159. He was aware that Scott and [REDACTED] were in a relationship and [REDACTED] spoke affectionately about Scott and spoke of future plans. [REDACTED] described the party as a very proper middle class gathering, a tame affair with nice food and conversations about music and politics.
1160. [REDACTED] was shocked when he heard about Scott's death. He describes [REDACTED] as being desperately upset about it. He was unaware that the area where Scott died was a gay beat. He has never been to a gay beat. [REDACTED]'s firm represented [REDACTED] during the coronial hearings. He is now retired.
1161. [REDACTED]

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

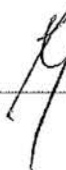
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1162. On 27 March 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] who provided the following information –
1163. [REDACTED] states that she was a good friend with [REDACTED] whom she sung in a choir with. She was invited to the party at Lane Cove but only has a vague memory of it. She said that she was not close to the deceased and had become friends with him only a few months before he died. She believed that Scott and [REDACTED] were very devoted to each other and had never heard either of them discuss gay meeting places, gay beats or bars.
1164. [REDACTED] did not recall anything out of the ordinary about Scott's behaviour at the party. She stated that she was dumbfounded when she heard that Scott had committed suicide as she was not aware that he was depressed or unhappy.
1165. She stated that she had a conversation with [REDACTED] after Scott's death during which [REDACTED] told her that Scott had started running for exercise and he would run from Lane Cove to North Head.
1166. [REDACTED]
1167. On 2 April 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] who was an ANU colleague of Scott and resided in Canberra at the time.
1168. [REDACTED] stated that he was studying at ANU between 1984 and 1988 in the same department where Scott was completing his PhD. He said that he and Scott shared a mathematical interest, but that they were not particularly close. They occasionally saw each other at post-university dinners or social outings and this is how he also met [REDACTED].
1169. [REDACTED] graduated on 2 September 1988 and that evening there was a dinner in Canberra to celebrate. He states that Scott and [REDACTED] may have been invited however he does not recall if they attended or not.
1170. He moved to Wisconsin USA in September 1988 and this was where he was living at the time of Scott's death. The news came via an email sent by [REDACTED]

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

██████ who was another university colleague. He did not know when he received the email but thinks that it was not long after the death. He phoned ██████ within hours of hearing the news. He does not recall the conversation he had with him on that occasion but stated that it was a sympathy call and not one to find out the details of what happened.

1171. He never discussed sexual behaviour or activity with Scott and has no knowledge of Scott attending gay beats, bars or meeting places. Scott did not mention any other sexual partners other than ██████. He was not aware of Scott ever engaging in sex outside his relationship with ██████.

1172. In his opinion, Scott was not a strongly sexual being. He described Scott as confident yet reserved, happy and secure in his relationship with ██████. He stated that he was shocked to learn that Scott had committed suicide as he didn't believe him to be a candidate for suicide.

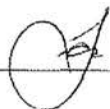
1173. ██████

1174. On 27 March 2013 police interviewed ██████ who was an ANU colleague of Scott and resided in Canberra at the time. He also studied at Macquarie University on an occasional basis. In 1988 he was living in Canberra and was undertaking a PhD at the ANU involving maths modelling of iron molecules.

1175. During his time as a PhD student he met with Scott about once per month at the ANU. It was not compulsory for attendance so they may not see each other even on that routine basis. Scott's substantial supervisor was ██████ at Macquarie University in Sydney and ██████ had a different supervisor. He was not aware of any clubs or groups that Scott belonged to while at University. ██████ could not recall the last time that he saw Scott.

1176. He was surprised at the news of Scott's death as he showed no signs of depression on the occasions when they met. He remembers Scott talking of walking around Sydney and he had assumed that Scott had been at North Head after one such walk enjoying the scenery.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

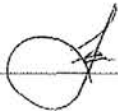


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1177. He describes Scott as given an impression of being asexual and was surprised that he was involved in a gay relationship.
1178. Scott was dreamy and introverted. They never discussed relationships.
1179. ██████ explains how it was possible to travel by bus from Macquarie University to St Leonard's Station and then via another bus Manly. The travel time was a couple of hours. He did not know if Scott ever went to Manly from university or otherwise.
1180. He would not describe himself as a close friend of Scott but they would occasionally have after-university group dinners and he had met ██████ this way.
1181. He says that he had heard ██████ discuss openly concerns that he had about his mother finding out about his sexuality. ██████ has no details of when or in what context these personal matters were disclosed by ██████.
1182. ██████ said that he has had numerous discussions with Mr Glick over the past year on this matter. Based on these discussions, ██████ expressed an opinion to police that ██████ had attempted to hide his sexuality from his mother by not appearing on the ABC television program *Australian Story* related to the death of Scott.
1183. ██████
1184. ██████ is mentioned by ██████ as a student peer of Scott who also studied at the ANU and attended the same seminars as Scott in Sydney on category theory.
1185. On 18 February 2014, ██████ was interviewed by police. He lives in California USA with his wife and ██████ daughter. He is the Senior Vice President of ██████ ██████
1186. He first met Scott about 1986 when he was studying at the ANU. He would see Scott intermittently on the ANU campus in the Math Department but they did not study together. The main contact he had with Scott is when they travelled together on the train from Canberra to Sydney for the category theory seminar which he did "a couple of times", the first time being late 1986.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

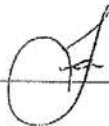


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1187. He does not remember anything in particular that they talked about on the train other than math. He said that Scott was a "very private person". He only found out that Scott had a brother, and was gay after Scott's death. He does not remember who told him that Scott had died. He recalls that Scott was quiet, thoughtful, extremely intelligent, and passionate about his work.
1188. Without prompting, [REDACTED] recalled going to a house at Lane Cove that Scott said was owned by his friend. [REDACTED] had not been to Sydney prior to attending the seminar and he did not know anyone in Sydney. He remembers visiting and/or staying at the house at Scott's invitation after the seminar. He remembers having breakfast at the Lane Cove house and maybe meeting the parents of the friend. He did not socialise with Scott outside of attending the seminars.
1189. He told police that he is of Asian appearance and was born in Singapore. He was asked about exercising in Scott's bedroom as indicated by [REDACTED] [REDACTED] in her statement, and he does not recall anything like that. He does not believe that he ever bumped into [REDACTED] in the city.
1190. He was not in an intimate relationship with Scott and they did not have sex.
1191. On 1 June 2007 and 17 May 2013 [REDACTED] was contacted by Mr Glick, including an email, for information about Scott. He thinks they spoke of similar matters as those recorded here.
1192. [REDACTED]
1193. [REDACTED] is mentioned by [REDACTED] as a fellow PhD student of Scott who studied at Macquarie University. [REDACTED] was interviewed by police on 18 February 2014. She is a Chief Executive Officer of [REDACTED] a [REDACTED] company, in Taiwan.
1194. She first met Scott when they started their PhD program in pure mathematics the same year (in 1986) and knew him for up to two years. She was on a student visa from Hong Kong. She only saw Scott when he was at Macquarie University

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



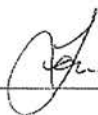
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

and is not sure which other university he was studying at. She went to the same category theory seminars as Scott.

1195. She describes that her English was not very good at that time and they did not get into long conversations. They would sometimes share lunch together on the lawn at the university. She does not remember anything about his personal life and does not remember him talking about it. They talked about math and math problems.
1196. Inside the lecture environment she describes Scott as professional and confident. Outside the lecture environment Scott was not talkative. Scott had no arrogance as a result of his intelligence and was very patient when explaining math problems. She describes Scott as the smartest mathematician she has ever known.
1197. She skated at Macquarie Ice rink but does not remember any involvement that Scott had with ice skating. She did not socialise with Scott outside of university study. [REDACTED] called and told her about Scott's death. She did not find out the Scott was a gay man until after his death.
1198. She does not know what Scott wanted to do after his studies. Her own hopes were to finish the PhD and then get a job at a university.
1199. Macquarie Centre Ice Rink Inquiries
1200. Information has been provided that Scott told people that he skated at the Macquarie Centre ice rink. There is an indication of this is the statements of [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED].
1201. On 27 June 2013 police went to the Macquarie Centre ice rink which is on the corner of Herring & Waterloo Roads at North Ryde. It is within easy walking distance of Macquarie University.
1202. General Manager [REDACTED] has worked at the rink since 1982 and has no recollection of Scott either by name or by reference to a photograph shown to her by the police. Police reviewed records of who purchased quarterly tickets for the years 1985 to 1988 inclusive. Quarterly tickets were purchased by

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

the more regular skaters who typically used the rink more than four times per week. There is no record of Scott in these records.

1203. Scott is not one of the ice skating performers who appears in the ice skating Christmas show booklets for those years.
1204. ██████████ told police that there was an informal ice skating group who met regularly and was known as the 'coffee club'. The group has existed for many years and still meets though the informal membership has changed over time. The 'coffee club' only had adult members and met at the ice rink from 9am to 11am, they usually have a skating lesson followed by coffee and sandwiches. She is confident that if one of the skaters, regular or not, died in unusual circumstances such as Scott then she would have heard about and remembered it.
1205. **Medical Inquiries**
1206. There is no information or evidence from friends or family that Scott was under the care of a health professional prior to his death.
1207. Enquiries have been made with Macquarie University and the Australian National University (ANU) in regard to medical records. Macquarie University and the ANU health service are required to keep medical records for 7 years before destruction. Medical records for 1988 were held until 1995 and then destroyed in the usual course.
1208. Both university health services stated that if a student presented with a risk of self harm in 1988 there was no mandatory reporting in place.
1209. Scott's student file was reviewed by police and no medical records or references were located.
1210. In the USA, medical data is not centralised in a manner similar to Medicare in Australia. Police enquires with the United States Consulate confirm that a medical records search is not feasible. Mr Johnson and ██████████ have no knowledge of specific medical or psychological treatment of Scott.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1211. **Persons of Interest**

1212. This part of the statement records the result of investigation searches for possible suspects who can be reasonably connected with the death. For this purpose we will assume that Scott's death had a criminal cause.

1213. As a rule, homicide investigations identify suspects when police receive quality information, or through the circumstances of the crime highlighting a suspect, and/or by identifying lifestyle factors of the victim to bring a suspect or suspect type into focus. Another means by which suspects can be identified is by forensic evidence, but this is not available here as referred to earlier. To this end, persons of interest have been identified from:

1214. Witnesses to the scene;

1215. Persons known to Scott as family, or by association or lifestyle;

1216. Information from the public, including subsequent to media coverage and the Government reward;

1217. Events linked to North Head and environs;

1218. Events linked by characteristic;

1219. Those persons charged or suspected of gay-hate crimes

1220. **Witnesses to the scene**

1221. At the time of discovering Scott's body and clothes, no suspect is identified or described as being at or near the scene. There is no information from witnesses who saw or heard anything directly relevant to Scott's death.

1222. There is however witnesses available who describe the existence of a gay beat at North Head. There accounts are summarised here;

1223. A gay beat existed on North Head in the 1980's and 1990's and was primarily in the north east area of the headland, above the wall from Shelly Beach.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1224. [REDACTED], a former Sydney Water Board employee, provided the following information verbally to police on 6 June 2013. On one occasion when he was working at North Head in the 1980's he walked to an area of North Head where he saw in excess of twenty men. Some were holding hands, some arguing, and others walking around naked. He did not see any sexual activity. He often saw cars parked along the road alongside the bush area where he had seen the men and so he assumed that all or most of the cars belonged to gay beat users. He did not see joggers or cyclists in that area. He noticed the cars parked on the road everyday of the week but more so on the weekends from 9am when he started work until 4pm when he finished work.
1225. [REDACTED] remembers being approached some years ago by a man who he believed was the brother of Scott (Mr Glick). He was told by the man that he had come to Sydney to investigate the death of his relative/brother who was found in the area. He was also told that his death had been recorded as a suicide but the man believed that his relative had actually been murdered.
1226. [REDACTED], is a former gay outreach worker affiliated with the AIDS Council of NSW (ACON). [REDACTED] made a statement to police on the 11 June 2013 at North Head. He frequented the North Head gay beat in the early 1990's sometimes as a social user and sometimes in his work in gay outreach support to provide safe-sex literature to gay beat users.
1227. He states that sex between males at gay beats would be initiated with small talk and then it would be up to the individuals what happened from there. In relation to gay beat practices it was not usually a place for pre-arranged meetings as spontaneous and anonymous sex was primarily the purpose of a gay beat. To his knowledge the North Head gay beat was only used during the daytime, sunrise to sunset, for safety reasons due to the terrain. It was also a place where gay men would sunbake naked.
1228. [REDACTED] believes that the area probably stopped being a gay beat in the late 1990's and that he last used the area himself around 1993. He stated the gay

Witness:



Signature:


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

beat was not known by a particular name, and he knew it as 'the cliffs at Manly', 'Shelley Beach car park', or where you go 'through a wall'.

1229. He said the assault of gay men was frequently unreported by them because of a fear of what police would do to them. During the period that he socialised or performed gay outreach work at North Head he did not experience an assault or threat of assault, nor was he told by any user of the gay beat that they had been assaulted or threatened.
1230. He says that subsequent to the publicity about the death of Scott he has been told in general terms of assaults of gay men at North Head, including an allegation that boys from the nearby Catholic school would assault gay men.
1231. In relation to the folding of clothes as a gay-related message or code, he had no experience or knowledge of this.
1232. He said that he did not see Asian men using the gay beat and it would be something unusual that is likely to be remembered. The use of a gay beat by Asian males was infrequent across Sydney and he puts this down to there not being many people of Asian origin in Australia at that time.
1233. He showed police areas in the north east corner of North Head that he frequented as a user and as an outreach worker. He observes that now the vegetation is more dense and with less tracks than he remembers. His observations to police indicate that the areas used by gay men were accessed by secondary tracks running off the central track. Wherever a secondary track led to an open area, it would be these areas that were used for gay men to socialise and, or, have sex. The areas frequently used by gay beat users in [REDACTED]'s experience were a distance from the rocky outcrop of the cliff and not along the cliff edge itself.
1234. On the day that he was interviewed and in a subsequent email to police, [REDACTED] confirmed that he has no personal knowledge of assaults and that he is unable to identify any person who was a victim of an assault at the North Head gay beat.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1235. On at least two occasions in 2013 and 2014 [REDACTED] has posted a request on the 'Lost Gay Sydney Facebook Page' requesting that anyone with knowledge of North Head assaults contact either himself or the police. As at 26 May 2014, [REDACTED] has received no information as a result of the posting.
1236. Locations indicated to police by [REDACTED] on 11 June 2013 are indicated on the North Head Map
1237. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW & TRANSCRIPTION.
1238. [REDACTED]. On 9 April 2013 [REDACTED] made a written statement that includes that he is a gay man who has lived in the Northern Beaches for about 33 years. [REDACTED] moved to Whale Beach in 1980. About 1966 when [REDACTED] was 24 years old he started using gay beats which included one at Fairy Bower, Manly. He heard of where gay beats were by word of mouth or as a listing in an international gay publication called *Spartacus*.
1239. [REDACTED] describes the Fairy Bower gay beat area as being above the southern side of the Shelly Beach car park and he remembers having to continue walking up a track which led to a hole in a wall. The main gay beat was on the other side of the hole in the wall. Gay men congregated in the area in daylight hours and some would be naked. In his experience the folding of clothes is not symbolic in gay culture.
1240. He did not see anyone have sex on the cliff edge and stayed well away from that area due to the sheer drop.
1241. He was never assaulted or threatened in the North Head area and does not know any person who had been threatened or assaulted in the North Head area.
1242. [REDACTED] knew of another gay beat, since demolished, at the Manly beach dressing sheds which now have been pulled down. In the early 1980's it was a popular gay beat with three toilet cubicles each with a hole in adjoining walls through which men put their penis for some form of intercourse. There was another gay beat at that time in Manly on the main beach front opposite the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Steyne Hotel. In the mid 1980's he remembers that police conducted raids there and recorded the names of gay men.

1243. He provides two experiences of violence as a gay man. In 1981 or 1982 when he was in a gay beat public toilet in Collaroy, a group of youths lead by an older youth threatened him for being gay but they were then scared off by another person nearby. The other of his experiences was around the same year when his then business partner and gay man, Mr Stephen Dempsey, was assaulted in the Narrabeen beach public toilets. The offenders were also youths and the matter was reported to Mona Vale Police. His recollection is that Mr Dempsey was later murdered in 1994 Deep Creek Reserve in the northern beaches.

1244. ████████ did not meet Scott but is aware of this death through recent media coverage. He does not have any information about the death. He did not know North Head to be a place where people suicided.

1245. Fairy Bower is an area between Manly Beach and Shelly Beach and police believe that when ████████ refers to a gay beat it is the same one referred to by ████████ with 'the hole in the wall' being the identifier.

1246. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

1247. Mr Stephen Dempsey went missing from Cremorne on 2 August 1994. In 1995, ████████ was charged with the murder which occurred in Deep Creek Reserve in the upper northern beaches suburb of Elenora Heights. The circumstances of the murder are that at the reserve, ████████ propositioned Mr Dempsey for sexual activity before firing an arrow at Mr Dempsey from a bow and arrow that ████████ had with him. When arrested in 1995 ████████ told police that after Mr Dempsey died at the reserve that he dismembered the body, kept it in his freezer until December, and then threw it in a waterway near Palm Beach. Mr Dempsey's body has never been recovered. ████████ was assisted in disposing of the body of Mr Dempsey by ████████.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1248. At the time of his arrest for the murder of Mr Dempsey, [REDACTED] also confessed to stabbing a taxi driver in November 1994 on a trip from the city to Collaroy. [REDACTED] was also the co-offender in this matter.
1249. [REDACTED]'s other police records related to drug use. Subsequent to his imprisonment he has been a suspect for a sexual assault of another male prisoner.
1250. [REDACTED] was 15 years and 10 months old at the time of Scott's death in 1988. He was a resident of Collaroy in the northern beaches but has no entries for frequenting lower northern beaches suburbs, including Manly. He is not recorded as associating with or committing crimes with anyone other than [REDACTED]. He is not associated with other convicted gay-hate crime offenders.
1251. In his statement, [REDACTED] refers to *Spartacus* magazine. It is described as a freelance international guide that was available in the 1980's. A 1988 copy of the magazine details the laws in Australia on homosexuality. It also provides locations in Sydney that may interest homosexuals and these are listed as; Lady Jane Beach, Obelisk Bay Mosman, South Head, Tamarama, Bondi Beach rock area, Circular Quay, Chiswick Gardens, Centennial Park, Becroft/Pennant Hills Road park, the Sydney Town Hall, Wentworth Hotel, Belmore Park, Clifford Park, Tempe Bridge, a car park at Collaroy Beach, Balmoral Beach rocks, Collaroy dressing sheds, Coogee Beach, Cremorne Wharf, South Dowling Street, and Reef Beach Balgowlah.
1252. The areas from this list that become relevant to matters in this statement due to their northern beaches location or by known gay-hate offences are; Tamarama, Bondi Beach rock area, Centennial Park a car park at Collaroy Beach Balmoral Beach rocks, Collaroy dressing sheds, Reef Beach Balgowlah.
1253. I PRODUCE A COPY OF THAT SECTION OF THE MAGAZINE.
1254. [REDACTED]. On 6 June 2013 [REDACTED] made a statement to police. His statement includes that he went to a gay beat at North Head, Manly, on two occasions, the first time being in the late 1970's and the second time being in the early 1980's. He thinks that he found out about the gay

Witness:



Signature:



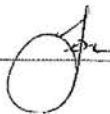
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

beat from talk in a pub as gay beats were not generally published at that time. He describes the North Head gay beat as a secluded place and not one that could easily be found without directions.

1255. The directions that he was given and followed were to walk from Manly Beach around to Shelly Beach, then up the road to a bush walking path until reaching an old sandstone wall which was about ten feet in height. He went through the hole in the wall and into a nature reserve on the other side. In the reserve he found a convenient spot and waited for a suitable man. It may be the case that eye contact or conversation is made and then a place would be found in the reserve for sex.
1256. Both times that [REDACTED] went to North Head was during the week by car or ferry and he took a towel and water and generally stayed until about 3pm. Both times that he was at North Head there were about twenty men there and describes it as not as busy a beat when compared to others in Sydney.
1257. He did not arrange to meet men there as the whole purpose of a gay beat was to have anonymous sex. Generally names are not exchanged but he know some people who have met their life partners at a gay beat. He is not aware that folding clothes has any significance to a gay beat.
1258. His understanding is that the beat at North Head was a daytime beat whereas some beats in the eastern suburbs were used at night time, particularly those like the gay beat near Marks Park as it was a busy area whereas the one at North Head was very secluded.
1259. There were bush walkers who went through the North Head area. On both occasions when he was at North Head he did not see anyone making trouble. He did not experience any trouble himself and was not told by anyone that the area was dangerous for gay men to visit.
1260. He did not know Scott and had not heard about the death until he was contacted by Mr Glick around March 2012 who wanted to find out from him how gay beats operated.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1261. [REDACTED]'s statement refers to annexures entitled, "Statement by [REDACTED]" and [REDACTED].
1262. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
1263. The following statement is included as it relates to gay-beat activity in a neighbouring suburb of Balgowlah Heights.
1264. [REDACTED]. On 30 September 2011 [REDACTED] made a statement which includes that he has lived in Fairlight since 1973 and was an honorary life guard of Reef Beach, Balgowlah, from 1975 to 1993. [REDACTED] observed that the bushes above Reef Beach were frequented by both 'naturalists' and men seeking sex. The area had some wind protection.
1265. He says, "Given my position at the beach, I was trusted by and confided in by beach users". He remembers that he became aware of four or five separate assault and robbery offences being committed by a group of four males in the bushes above Reef Beach. He understood that one or more of these offences included an offender luring a gay man into the bushes for his co-offenders to assault. On each occasion he did not report the matters to police due to a number of days passing before he heard about them. He suggests that the matters may not have been reported due to the "stigma" surrounding homosexuality at the time or the personal circumstances of the victim.
1266. He remembers being told that one such victim recognised his attackers in the area some time after the offence against him and the males were arrested and charged by police on that day. (This is the assault upon [REDACTED] and which is referred to later in this statement).
1267. [REDACTED] recalls the assault of a female nurse in the park area as well.
1268. During his time working on Reef Beach he remembers being told by an elderly gay couple that they had been looking out of their unit window and had witnessed an assault of a male by other males in bushes above Reef Beach. They saw the victim being pushed over a two and a half metre ledge during the

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

assault. [REDACTED] asked them why they did not report the matter to the police and recalls a reply that disturbed him similar to, "it's nothing to do with us we don't care."

1269. He explains that before there were legalised nudist beaches he would sunbake nude in an area above Shelly Beach at North Head around 1975. Whilst sunbaking he saw male heads and some nude male bodies in the area. He did not witness sexual activity but concluded that consensual gay-sex was occurring.

1270. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

1271. Reef Beach at Dobroyd Head is in North Harbour in Sydney Harbour.
Dobroyd Head at in the lower northern beach suburb of Balgowlah Heights.
Travelling west from Manly, Balgowlah is the next suburb.

1272. **Persons of interest who are known to Scott**

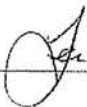
1273. No motive of a real or perceived nature relative to Scott's financial, legal, or intimate life has been identified as a motive for the homicide of Scott.

1274. No person from his family, known social group or university group has been identified as having any motive to harm Scott.

1275. Beside [REDACTED], no one else has been identified as having an intimate relationship with Scott. No one has been identified as knowing Scott from any event, venue or occasion that is not connected to his relationship with [REDACTED] or his university studies as recorded in this statement.

1276. Regarding unknown intimate or social lifestyle choices by Scott, there is information from [REDACTED] to support that Scott engaged in infrequent sexual relations outside their relationship. Two occasions are referred to by [REDACTED] as being, the occasion that led Scott to attempt suicide at the Golden Gate Bridge, and Scott's contraction of pubic lice in Australia. There is also information from Mr Johnson that on one occasion when in the USA, Scott asked Mr Johnson to take him to a gay bar and that Scott did not return for a few days. No business owner or patron of a gay bar has provided evidence or information that Scott frequented

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

businesses that supported a gay lifestyle. I consider the information from [REDACTED] [REDACTED] about the 'Signal Bar' as unreliable.

1277. Other than that Scott's body was found in the vicinity of a gay beat, there is no evidence of Scott being an active gay beat user. There is a suggestion of conversations that Scott may have heard about gay beats with [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. Those conversations were not in the form of Scott actively seeking the locations of gay beats to visit. If the topic of gay beats did arise with Scott it was about gay beats south of the Harbour Bridge in the eastern suburbs of Sydney.

1278. No gay beat user of North Head has provided evidence or information of meeting Scott, or a person similar to Scott, at that beat on any other occasion.

1279. Inquiries with the Macquarie Shopping Centre ice skating centre did not provide confirmation of Scott's attendance and did not provide any persons of interest.

1280. [REDACTED]

1281. [REDACTED] was the intimate partner of Scott at the time of the death. An investigation of a suspicious death would routinely include inquiries and assessment of the possible involvement of the intimate partner of the deceased person.

1282. [REDACTED] provided an alibi for the 8 to 11 December 1988 that he was in Melbourne for a job interview and stayed with his aunt. His domestic travel movements are independently verified by the airlines as referred to in inquest evidence by Detective Cruikshank.


1283. Not a single incident of disagreement, argument, aggression, violence, disturbed, jealous, or proprietary behaviour by [REDACTED], or between [REDACTED] and Scott is reported or suspected by any person.

1284. There is evidence and information that the nearly five year relationship of [REDACTED] and Scott was mutually loving and supportive with a total absence of separations based on conflict.

Witness:



Signature:


_____ P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1285. In saying that, it may be acknowledged that a relationship conducted even intermittently over a geographic distance (and without the forms of communication available today), combined with the study requirements of Scott, and evident work pressure on [REDACTED] particularly in the latter part of 1988, it is reasonable to suggest that they quite naturally and unavoidably disengaged from each others' everyday life.
1286. There are no criminal or intelligence police records for [REDACTED].
1287. A request for 1988 telephone records for calls to and from [REDACTED] [REDACTED] Lane Cove, and [REDACTED] Blacket Street, Downer in the ACT, returned with a negative result in 2013. Information from telecommunications providers is that records of telephone activations in the 1980's were itemised by telephone number for long distance and overseas calls. Local calls were recorded by quantity only.
1288. There is corroboration by [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] of [REDACTED]'s account of a prior suicide attempt by Scott. There is nothing about [REDACTED] that could be interpreted as him premeditating this account in preparation for his murder of Scott's a number of years later.
1289. The apparent lack of a full, intimate and urgent conversation between [REDACTED] [REDACTED] and Scott about Scott's attempted suicide either immediately or at the time of their reunion in the United Kingdom a short time later may seem peculiar. [REDACTED] [REDACTED], even on full reflection, appears not to have a satisfactory comprehension of why such a conversation did not take place. It is relevant to remember that it was Scott's apparent unfaithfulness to [REDACTED] that prompted Scott's attempt. It may be that the shame and guilt commonly attached to all those touched by suicide, combined with what prompted the attempt, and the personal nature of Scott not to discuss intimate matters, is the most logical explanation.
1290. Suspicions expressed by Mr Johnson in his correspondence of 1 January 1989 to the police and the 1989 inquest, that [REDACTED] was directly or indirectly involved in the death of Scott are highly emotive and not supported by the facts.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

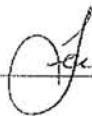


P.S. Young

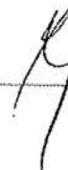
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1291. Suspicions expressed by Mr Johnson in several items of correspondence and his interview, that [REDACTED] has intentionally held back information from authorities are highly emotive and not supported by the facts.
1292. In a letter dated 17 January 1989, written by Mr Johnson to the Public Trustees in Canberra, he writes that [REDACTED] lied, misled, kept secrets, retained undeclared deceased estate property, and attempted to obtain expenses from the Johnson family. The Public Trustee considered these allegations to be invalid as does the current investigation.
1293. [REDACTED] did not have a motive or opportunity to harm Scott. For all of the preceding reasons, [REDACTED] is not a suspect in this matter and deserves a status of being next of kin to Scott in these proceedings.
1294. **Information from the Public**
1295. There have been several media articles on this case between 2007 and 2014. The year 2013 saw a concentration of twenty six (26) media articles across mainstream and gay media agencies. The articles included numerous and varied images of Scott inclusive of him about the age he was when he died. Articles by the police included publicity about the reward and seeking information from the public. Articles by the Johnson family included details of the case and how they link it to gay-hate crimes, the government reward, and their contact details.
1296. The following seventeen (17) police information reports, one letter and one email, represent the total of the information received from the public touching on the death.
1297. Information provided by a member of the public, whether to a centralised number for Crime Stoppers or to a police station by phone or in person, is recorded in an 'Information Report' for disseminated to this investigation.
1298. 2009 Crime Stoppers Report I74902302 re [REDACTED]
1299. On 30 October 2009 an anonymous person contacted Crime Stoppers and said that they wanted report a "gay basher" called [REDACTED] who lives at

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



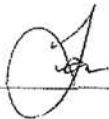
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Narrabeen. The caller said that they had heard that in the 1980's [REDACTED] and his friends travelled into the city and assault gay men. The caller had heard that it was common for teenage males to travel from the northern beaches to the city to assault gay men in the 1980's.

1300. A person named [REDACTED], [REDACTED], or similar cannot be identified via police or RTA records. The addresses provided are not linked to a person of that name or similar. A person of this name or similar is not nominated elsewhere in investigation holdings. The information was unable to be investigated further.
1301. 2011 Crime Stoppers Report I43270622 re 'The Facebook Confession'. This relates to information received anonymously at South Australia Police Crime Stoppers dated 31 January 2011. The report names [REDACTED], also known as [REDACTED], as confessing to the murder of Scott on the Gay Marriage Rights in Australia Facebook site. This report and information provided by Mr Glick was part of the investigation by Detective Tim Wilson of Manly Police.
1302. Deputy State Coroner Forbes dealt with this matter for the 2012 inquest via a report by Detective Wilson. The information provided was that on 29 January 2011, [REDACTED] a 14 year old from South Australia read the *Gay Marriage Rights in Australia* webpage presented on Facebook. Facebook is a world-wide-web social networking site trading as Facebook Incorporated. He read what appeared to him to be a confession to the murder of Scott by a person using the profile name, [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] then looked for links on the 'web' to the name Scott and located Mr Glick's email address via a media article link and sent him an email. This has been referred to in the media as the so called 'Facebook confession'.
1303. The email from [REDACTED] to Mr Glick is reproduced here from the 2012 inquest documents -
1304. *"Hi, if this is the guy to contact about Scott Johnson I have a Extraordinary Break-through in the case. Today on the Gay Marriage rights for Australia Facebook Page. A Guy by the name of [REDACTED] or his other Fake account: [REDACTED]. He fully confessing to Pushing a gay man off a Manly Cliff*

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

and then he told me it was Scott Johnson I went to look at it and found the Sydney Morning Herald link from 2007. Im (sic) only 13 I don't know how to Report this stuff to Police. Can you do it for me? There was one problem the Post he replied on when saying it was Deleted I tryed (sic) getting him to confess but then ill Blocked from posting comments! There some stuff on the Gay Marriage Rights for Australia page where he confess's (sic) to the murder I think. But I bet he has murdered more gays he did say "I have a Gun. I hate gays". Please tell the police to look into this Mans Facebook page and stuff and do what they Can I want him bringed to justice!"

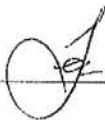
1305. Electronic evidence and interviews identified that the alleged 'confession' was posted in Facebook by 15 year old [REDACTED] who was living with his mother, Ms [REDACTED], in Cromer. On 31 July 2011 police spoke to [REDACTED] in the presence of his mother. [REDACTED] told police that he created the false confession using aliases [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] is diagnosed with Aspergers and his mother told police, inter alia, that he has difficulty showing empathy or understanding consequences, and is vocal in his dislike of, and obsession with, homosexuals. She also said that [REDACTED] is home-schooled and spends a large amount of time on the internet. [REDACTED] was born after the death of Scott. There was no connection found between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

1306. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1307. 2011 Crime Stoppers Report I159755896 re [REDACTED]

1308. As a result of reading an article about Scott's death entitled 'Close to the Edge' in the Australian newspaper dated 17 September 2011, an anonymous caller contacted Police Crime Stoppers on 3 November 2011. The caller nominated [REDACTED] as a suspect in the death of Scott. The caller said that about three years prior (2008) at Kyogle in the northern rivers area of country NSW he overheard [REDACTED] saying, "My idea of sporting events in Sydney was poofter bashing and then throwing them off cliffs". The caller calls [REDACTED] a psychopath who was originally from Sydney.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

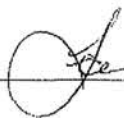


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1309. Mr Johnson had access to this information report via the 2012 inquest and in an email dated 4 September 2012 from Mr Johnson to police he refers to this Crime Stoppers Report and calls [REDACTED] "an admitted gay basher".
1310. [REDACTED] was interviewed by police on 1 April 2014 in northern NSW. He denied making the statement that the caller attributes to him. Prior to 1990 (when he turned [REDACTED] years of age) he lived in Sydney. In Sydney he lived in the north-west suburbs [REDACTED]. When living in Sydney he was [REDACTED].
1311. He was not aware of any gay beats in Sydney and claims to never to have visited Manly or North Head. He has never liked the beach.
1312. He has never targeting gay men for assaults although he has been involved in many physical assaults over the years. He had several gay friends and remembers a friend, Chris, who was gay and who was assaulted for being gay. Chris did not report the assault.
1313. [REDACTED] is living with wife and three children. [REDACTED] suggested that the caller to Crime Stoppers was [REDACTED] who he has been in a personal conflict with since in 2008. [REDACTED] was recently convicted of an assault upon [REDACTED]. This is confirmed via the police records as occurring 31 October 2013.
1314. Police COPS system records indicate that [REDACTED] has a history of assault, livestock and dog offences, domestic violence. His first offence is recorded in 1981 when he was 17 years old and was charged with malicious injury to a car aerial in Parramatta. He has no entries for offences or frequenting the northern beaches area of Sydney.
1315. It should be noted that the police interviewer made an error by referring to Scott's death occurring in 1989. This error did not affect the information gleaned from [REDACTED] who referred to his residences and lifestyle prior to 1990 as a whole.
1316. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT AND INTERVIEW
1317. 2013 Crime Stoppers report I501010729 re [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

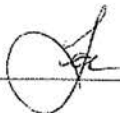


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1318. On 11 February 2013, Crime Stoppers Information Report I501010729 was created. The caller to Crime Stoppers, [REDACTED], nominated [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] as being in a group responsible for gay assaults on the Northern Beaches in the late 1980's and early 1990's.
1319. On 11 April 2013 [REDACTED] was interviewed by police and provided a statement. His statement includes -
1320. He grew up in Narrabeen and lived there [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] He has lived in other areas of the Northern Beaches [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
1321. He went to [REDACTED] then to [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
1322. In the late eighties [REDACTED] started talking about what he and his mates would do on weekends. [REDACTED] went into some detail about how he would 'gay bash' in the Narrabeen area, including the Narrabeen but terminus. He also recalls [REDACTED] mentioning that he and his mates would assault gays at Centennial Park toilet block.
1323. The group would go out at the Rock Lilly nightclub at Mona Vale and then on the weekends they would head out looking for gay men to assault. [REDACTED] told him that the group would meet at [REDACTED]'s place in Warriewood before going out and would prepare themselves for a fight. [REDACTED] said that [REDACTED] would catch people's cats, cut off their heads and store them in his freezer.
1324. On one occasion he mentioned he was with [REDACTED] possibly at Moore Park. [REDACTED] told him that they had gone to the area specifically looking for gays to assault and that [REDACTED] had jumped off a car and onto the chest of a the guy. He thought that [REDACTED] was bragging about it. [REDACTED] thinks that it would have been between 1987 to 1990.
1325. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] was about twenty years old, less than 183 centimetres tall, of medium build with short blonde hair. He thinks that [REDACTED] lived in Warriewood at the time with his parents. He does not remember that [REDACTED] dressed like a [REDACTED] and was more like a surfer.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

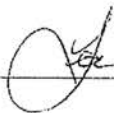


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1326. [REDACTED] knew of [REDACTED] who was from the Northern Beaches area and was about the same age as [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] did not interact with [REDACTED] but heard stories about him [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] was a bit shorter than [REDACTED], shaved head, dark hair, darkish skin. He generally wore [REDACTED] clothes which included jeans, boots and a green bomber jacket.
1327. [REDACTED] heard that another person in the [REDACTED] group was known as [REDACTED] and he thinks that his surname was [REDACTED], but he cannot recall his first name. [REDACTED] was a bit taller than [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and quite muscular. He wore typical [REDACTED] clothes like [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] heard that [REDACTED] lived in Warriewood Road in his mum's place but that he was made to leave by his mother and sister.
1328. [REDACTED] also socialised with [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] was a similar build to [REDACTED], quite muscular, shorter than 175 cm tall, brown hair, shaved head. He was about the same age, or a couple of years younger than [REDACTED] and the others.
1329. [REDACTED] would also mention gay assaults to [REDACTED]. He does not recall any specific conversations with [REDACTED] but knew he was overtly racist.
1330. [REDACTED] read in the Manly Daily some years after [REDACTED] that [REDACTED] was at a party and caught the neighbour's cat which he hung up by the neck, killed it and set on fire. He believes that the police were called and he was charged with animal cruelty.
1331. [REDACTED] did not know Scott and first knew of Scott's death when he read an article in the news paper a couple of months before making the statement. The article made him think that the males he mentions in his statement might have had something to do with Scott's death.
1332. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT
1333. Police conducted inquiries into the persons [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED], which appear later in this statement under [REDACTED].
1334. 2013 Crime Stoppers Report I98069402 re 'Rotten Richards'

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1335. As a result of reading a media article about the death of Scott an anonymous person contacted Police Crime Stoppers and nominated 'Rotten Richards' as being responsible for the death. The callers information is that 'Rotten Richards' grew up in the Manly area, was the leader of a gang in the 1980's, and was known for gay assaults. The caller says that 'Rotten' is the nickname of the person and that they are not aware of the proper name.

1336. A person with the name 'Rotten Richards' or similar is not identified in police records. There are four people with the nickname 'Rotten' but none are associated with the Manly area. It is not possible to identify the person nominated from the information provided.

1337. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1338. 2013 Crime Stoppers report I50589304 re [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]
[REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]

1339. The Crime Stoppers Information Report names males who were involved in assaults on gay men around Manly, Narrabeen bus terminal and Surry Hills. The people named are [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED], and [REDACTED].

1340. On 5 April 2013, police met with [REDACTED] who made the report to Crime Stoppers. His statement includes -

1341. [REDACTED] was born and raised on the northern beaches of Sydney [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED].

1342. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Witness:

Signature:

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1343. There were a group of youths [REDACTED]
They included [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]
and [REDACTED]. The group called themselves the [REDACTED]

1344. He knew [REDACTED] well [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. He describes [REDACTED] as a really nice guy who he was not close
to but would talk to.

1345. When [REDACTED] was in Year 8, he told [REDACTED] that he started taking
steroids with [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]
They started growing physically bigger. The group also broke out in acne and
[REDACTED] thought that it was probably because of the steroid use. He did not see
[REDACTED] or the others taking steroids and he did not know them to be into
any other drugs. At this time the group started getting into fights at school. They
became 'bullies' at the school and also drank a lot of alcohol.

1346. On Friday nights they went to the Narrabeen bus terminus which was on
Pittwater Road Narrabeen. [REDACTED] would often see them there when he passed by
with other friends.


1347. They all shaved their heads and wore Doc Marten boots which were knee
high lace up boots. They also wore braces that were either white or black
coloured. The braces were connected to the front of their jeans and went over
their shoulders and connected to the back of their jeans. By the time they were
17 years old, they started getting tattoos but [REDACTED] does not remember anything
specific about the tattoos.

1348. [REDACTED] recounts memories of [REDACTED] [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. He describes him as a violent even in his teenage years. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Witness:



Signature:



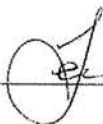
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

██
 ██
 ██

1349. █████ states that █████ lived in █████ with his brother, █████. He had been to the █████ house about three times when there were parties there. Out the back there was a boxing bag hanging off one of the trees and one time there was a swastika flag hanging up out the back. █████ and the group used the area for bare knuckle fights with each other until someone was nearly unconscious.
1350. █████ and █████ asked him twice to go 'fag bashing' with them. The first time they asked was when he was almost 18 years old and was in May or June in 1988. █████
 █████ does not remember who said what but one of the three asked him to 'fag bash'.
1351. One of the three said, "...we've got to get teach them a lesson". They said that they were going to the Narrabeen bus terminus, get a case of beer and then drink it on the bus on their way to Surry Hills. When they got to a Surry Hills toilet block they would assault men who they thought were gay.
1352. At a time in either the end of 1988 or the beginning of 1989 █████ states that he was at the Narrabeen RSL Club to watch televised boxing, either a Jeff Fenech or Mike Tyson fight. He went there about 8pm as the boxing usually went from 8pm to midnight.
1353. █████ left the club on his own about 12.15am. He was walking back to his car along a street that is called Nareen Parade Narrabeen. The street is the one that the RSL Club is in and is also the street that █████ lived in. █████ and █████ came jogging up to him. Both were wearing Doc Marten boots, jeans and braces. About a minute after they met █████ he jumped up on a parked car boot then onto the roof and started jumping up and down which dented the car significantly. █████ describes the location and a row of parked cars in detail.

Witness:



Signature:

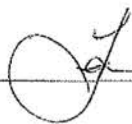


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1354. [REDACTED] joined in damaging the car and then [REDACTED] jumped onto the next car.
[REDACTED]
Either [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] said something like, "We went fag bashing at Surry Hills tonight. And we smashed the crap out of this guy and jumped on his head. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] smashed a long neck bottle and stabbed the guy in the throat when he was on the ground. We just left him there". They both seemed happy and drunk. [REDACTED] says that he was 'fairly drunk' as well.
1355. [REDACTED] then said words like, "Sometimes we go to a gay beach in Manly looking for guys there to bash". [REDACTED] said words like, "The other day when [REDACTED] [REDACTED] was with us and we were walking along the track we came across a guy that was lying naked. He was lying naked in a little clearing and he was wanking himself. We jumped on him and bashed the crap out of him, kicked him in the head. He was an American faggot. He got up and got away from us". They did not tell [REDACTED] what happened after the man got away from them.
1356. In February this year [REDACTED] watched the Scott story on ABC television *Australian Story*. He heard on the show that Scot Johnson's body was found naked, also that he was a gay man and that it happened at the end of 1988. He believes that this is what [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] told him about [REDACTED].
1357. On 8 April 2013 police received a phone call from [REDACTED] who stated that he made enquiries regarding the date he attended the Narrabeen RSL club and afterwards heard the conversation of the 'American faggot'. [REDACTED] determined that the date correlated with a Jeff Fenech fight on 30 November 1988.
1358. [REDACTED] recalls that in the 1980's that [REDACTED] resided in [REDACTED] [REDACTED] Warriewood. Police COPS system and RTA data records that [REDACTED] [REDACTED] resided at [REDACTED] Warriewood from the 9th of January 1989 to the 8th of December 1994.
1359. [REDACTED] recalls that in the 1980's [REDACTED] lived in Bilgola Plateau [REDACTED] [REDACTED]. Police COPS system and RTA data

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

records indicate that [REDACTED] resided at numerous locations [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. There are no records for Bilgola Plateau.

1360. [REDACTED] recalls that [REDACTED] lived in [REDACTED] Narrabeen [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. Police COPS system and RTA data records indicate that this is an accurate recollection.

1361. Boxing website archives record that the Mike Tyson v Michael Spinks fight was on Monday 27 June 1988. This fight pre-dates the death of Scott; the Jeff Fenech v Georgie Navaro fight was Wednesday 30 November 1988. This fight pre-dates the death of Scott; the Mike Tyson v Frank Bruno fight was Saturday 25 February 1989. If this is the fight that [REDACTED] recalls, then [REDACTED]'s reference to assaulting the 'American faggot...the other day' is displaced by several weeks; the Jeff Fenech v Marcos Villasora fight was on Saturday 8 August 1989. If this is the fight that [REDACTED] recalls, then [REDACTED]'s reference to assaulting the 'American faggot...the other day' is displaced by several months.

1362. On 16 April 2013 the General Manager of the Narrabeen RSL Club advised police that they no longer retain membership or sign-in slips prior to 1990.

1363. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT AND STATEMENT

1364. Inquiries were conducted into [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED],
[REDACTED], [REDACTED] and are recorded later under [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

1365. 2013 Crime Stoppers Report I98085102 re brothers at the Tattersall's Club

1366. On 13 February 2013 anonymous information was received at Police Crime Stoppers that investigators in the Scott case should talk to two brothers who worked at the Tattersall's Club in Sydney. No further information was provided and the information was not investigated.

1367. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1368. 2013 Crime Stoppers Report I51426953 re [REDACTED] of Australia Post

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

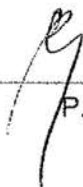
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1369. Mr [REDACTED] called Crime Stoppers on 13 February 2013 and nominated [REDACTED] from Australia Post as being a suspect in the death of Scott. He told Crime Stoppers that [REDACTED] came to work [REDACTED] at Australia Post for a few months in 1999 or 2000.
1370. Police contacted [REDACTED] [REDACTED] [REDACTED]. Sometime around 1998 or 1999, [REDACTED] an employee called [REDACTED] boasted to him about 'gay bashing'. [REDACTED] said something to him like, "We used to go gay bashing every weekend", and mentioned doing the assaults at Kings Cross.
1371. There is insufficient information to identify the person named. The relevance of the information in relation to the death of Scott in 1988 is doubtful. The information was not further investigated.
1372. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT
1373. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I49829620 re [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]
1374. On 14 February 2013 Crime Stoppers was contacted by [REDACTED] who nominated a person called [REDACTED] as a suspect in the death of Scott. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] is named in the report as a co-offender of [REDACTED]. Police contacted [REDACTED] who stated that [REDACTED] expressed to him a hatred of gay men [REDACTED] [REDACTED]. On one occasion [REDACTED] had brought a metal sling shot [REDACTED] in the summer of 1987 or 1988 which he said he used to shoot marbles at prostitutes at 'The Wall' in Kings Cross. [REDACTED] has a recollection that [REDACTED] was a member of a [REDACTED] group at Narrabeen. He does not know [REDACTED]'s surname.
1375. [REDACTED] also named [REDACTED] when he called Crime Stoppers based on talk about him assaulting gay men that arose when he was murdered by his brother.
1376. [REDACTED] had no information relating to the death of Scott.
1377. Inquiries were conducted of [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and are recorded later under [REDACTED].

Witness:



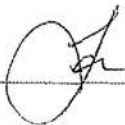
Signature:


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1378. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT
1379. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I51487408 re [REDACTED]
1380. On 16 February 2013 Police Crime Stoppers was called by [REDACTED] [REDACTED] who nominated [REDACTED] and his group for assaults in areas around Manly. [REDACTED] was contacted by investigators and he said that in the 1980's he resided [REDACTED] in Warriewood. [REDACTED], who also lived in Warriewood, had a reputation for gay hate and assaults. [REDACTED] was part of a group but he does not know the members.
1381. In those years [REDACTED] heard that [REDACTED] stabbed a priest in the church on North Head, and that [REDACTED] and his group assaulted a number people by stalking them in the Narrabeen bus terminus toilets.
1382. [REDACTED] recalled that [REDACTED] was charged with assault [REDACTED] [REDACTED]. This was an apparently unprovoked attack and not a gay related one. This is verified by [REDACTED] and police records. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are unable to provide information specific to the death of Scott.
1383. The police report of the matter records that on the afternoon of 18 August 1987, an assault occasioning actual bodily harm was committed by [REDACTED] on [REDACTED], 16 years old, who received facial and rib bruising. [REDACTED] was walking home with friends and it appears that [REDACTED] took exception to what [REDACTED] said to him when he was changing a tyre. When interviewed [REDACTED] suggests that [REDACTED] and/or his friends called him a 'wog'.
1384. Inquiries were conducted into [REDACTED] and are recorded later under the [REDACTED] Group'.
1385. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT
1386. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I51549916 re [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].
The caller wanted us to be aware of the murder of Mr Krichakorn Rattanjaturathaporn in 1990 at Bondi for which the [REDACTED] brothers and [REDACTED] were convicted.
1387. This crime and convicted persons are referred to later under the heading '*Events Linked by Crime Characteristic*'.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1388. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1389. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I51501065 re [REDACTED]

1390. An anonymous caller contacted Crime Stoppers on 20 February 2013 and nominated [REDACTED] as a suspect in the death of Scott. The caller indicated that [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] worked [REDACTED] in Queensland in 1992 and was a supervisor. [REDACTED] owned a boat. [REDACTED] told people that he had moved [REDACTED] to get away from 'something'.

1391. The caller believes that the 'something' is [REDACTED]'s involvement in assaulting gay men in Sydney because [REDACTED] also allegedly said that he used to go to parks in Sydney with a group and go 'gay bashing.' [REDACTED] is alleged to have said in relation to one of the assaults that he could not believe one of his victims had 'put up a fight' and further that another victim had 'got away'. [REDACTED] is described as 'scary and aggressive' by nature.

1392. No other information is provided about assaults or the circumstances in which the caller came to know the information. Other details provided are that [REDACTED] owns a boat and that his mother may currently reside [REDACTED] in Queensland.

1393. There is insufficient information to identify the person named. The reliability and relevance of the information in relation to the death of Scott in 1988 is doubtful. The information was not further investigated.

1394. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1395. 2013 anonymous letter re [REDACTED]

1396. On 25 February 2013 an anonymous letter was received by police which alleges that [REDACTED] is a suspect in the murder of Scott. The letter identified him as having been employed by the Royal Australian Army at the School of Artillery at North Head. The letter writer describes him as violent, aggressive, having an intense hatred for homosexuals, an alcoholic with sociopathic tendencies.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

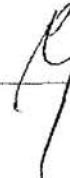
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1397. On 25 July 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] stated that he was in the army [REDACTED]. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED] He attended the North Head School of Artillery from 8am to 4pm most shifts however on some occasions he worked on guard duty from 5pm-7am.
1398. [REDACTED] stated that he was unaware that there was a gay beat in the North Head area and at no stage did he see men walking around in the bushes there. He quite often saw fishermen walking through the rough terrain towards the water. He also saw cars parked in the streets leading up to the School of Artillery. He assumed that many people who drove to the area were couples who went 'parking'.
1399. [REDACTED] regularly went for a run around the North Head as part of a nine kilometre army group training run. He stated that he had not heard any rumours of a gay beat and it was never brought to his attention that members of the army were assaulting gay men.
1400. [REDACTED] stated that the area around the School of Artillery on North Head was extremely dark at night and there was little or no lighting in the area. As such army personnel would never exercise at night. [REDACTED]'s nickname was [REDACTED] due to his small stature. He claimed to have no issues with homosexuals and has no knowledge of the death of Scott.
1401. I PRODUCE THAT ANONYMOUS LETTER
1402. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I196746295 re assaults in Manly
1403. On 4 March 2013 [REDACTED] contacted Police Crime Stoppers and said that in the winter of 1988 or 1989 seven men were known to have kicked a man at North Head and that two of the men kicking the male were life savers from Manly Surf Club. [REDACTED] proposes that the male victim may have been Scott.

Witness:



Signature:

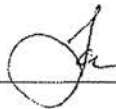


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1404. Police spoke with [REDACTED] who said that he did not know Scott and first heard about his death after watching Australian Story. In the 1980's [REDACTED] lived in Newcastle and visited his friend, Wayne Tonks, at his home at Artarmon in Sydney. Together they used numerous gay beats in the northern and eastern beach areas.
1405. [REDACTED] knew that a gay beat operated at North Head but he never went there. He recalls that in the winter of, most probably, 1989 he and Wayne Tonks visited a known gay beat in the public toilet block near The Steyne Hotel at Manly. [REDACTED] acted as a look-out and Wayne went inside. A short time later Wayne came running out and pushed [REDACTED] away from the area. Wayne told [REDACTED] that a group of men were waiting inside the toilets to assault gay men. Wayne later told [REDACTED] that he recognised one of the men as a lifesaver however Wayne did not tell [REDACTED] which surf club the man belonged to. No descriptions are available from [REDACTED].
1406. Police records indicate that Mr Wayne Tonks was murdered in 1990 inside his home unit in Artarmon. The circumstances of the murder include binding and gagging the victim and two people were convicted of the murder.
1407. The location of the alleged offence reported by [REDACTED] to Crime Stoppers changed from North Head to toilets in Manly business district. No description of the offenders is available. The information did not require further investigation.
1408. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT
1409. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I50778764 re [REDACTED]
1410. On 2 April 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] regarding his report to Crime Stoppers on 13 February 2013. He told police that [REDACTED] [REDACTED] a male, previously unknown to him, named [REDACTED] [REDACTED].
1411. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] allegedly told [REDACTED] of his dislike for homosexuals and that he was part of a group known as the 'Board Riders Club' who targeted gay men. [REDACTED] told [REDACTED] that his group was responsible for assaulting

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

men that were thought to be gay and throwing them off cliffs. ██████ thinks the group was based at Maroubra or Bondi though ██████ did not tell him this. The group allegedly would attend gay beats and use the best looking guy in the group to lure the gay men into a toilet block. The group would then follow them into the toilet where the male would be assaulted.

1412. ██████ said that ██████ has an extreme dislike for homosexuals and has spread it "around town" that he, ██████, is a paedophile because he is an openly gay man. ██████ has come to know where ██████ lives but did not want to tell the police. He said he would contact police if he received more information. He has not made further contact.

1413. ██████ has not been identified by police. The information provided by ██████ is considered to be unreliable.

1414. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1415. 2013 Crime Stoppers Information Report I98708101 ██████ and ██████

1416. On 10 April 2013 a woman contacted Police Crime Stoppers and said that that in 2010 ██████, who lives in Richmond/ Windsor in outer western Sydney, was heard to 'brag' about a murder he committed with his friend ██████. ██████ bragged that they picked up two gay men from a truck stop at Wilberforce and took them to ██████'s property where they were force to jump off a cliff into a river. One of the men died and one escaped. The caller thinks it occurred in 2009 or 2010. The caller describes the men as "gay haters" and "very homophobic". The caller had watched the ABC television program 'Australian Story' on the death of Scott and thought the cases were similar.

1417. People with these name have been identified as residents of the Richmond area. ██████ has no criminal history. He has a long history of domestic incidents as both the alleged victim and offender. He is not known for violence or gay hate activity. ██████ has no criminal or intelligence records at all. ██████ was 16 years old in 1988. No offence as described by the caller has been identified. The alleged crime reported by the caller cannot relate to Scott. The information was not investigated further.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


1418. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT

1419. 2013 Information Report I53906080 re [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]. This relates to a call made on 22 July 2013 to Manly Police by [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] nominated [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] (entered incorrectly as [REDACTED] in the report) for assaults on gay men in Manly, including North Head, in the late 1980's early 1990's.
1420. Police systems record [REDACTED] as a resident of the Northern Beaches. He has conviction and intelligence records for drug possession, larceny, shop lifting, domestic related assault, and a break and enter as a juvenile. He is recorded as being seen in the company of [REDACTED] in 2001. He is not recorded as having committed any offences with the other males named. No gay-linked or gay-motivated offences are recorded. No offence or frequenting is recorded for [REDACTED] relative to North Head.
1421. Police systems record [REDACTED] as a resident of the Northern Beaches. He has convictions for larceny, offensive behaviour and break and enter as a juvenile. He is not recorded with any offences or links with the other people named. No violent offences are recorded. No gay-linked or gay-motivated offences are recorded. No offence or frequenting is recorded for [REDACTED] relative to North Head.
1422. Police systems record [REDACTED] as a resident of the Northern Beaches. He has convictions and intelligence for armed robbery, larceny, domestic violence, and offensive manner. He is not recorded with any offences or links with the other people named. No gay-linked or gay-motivated offences are recorded. No offence or frequenting is recorded for [REDACTED] relative to North Head.
1423. Police systems relative to [REDACTED] do not record any convictions or intelligence.
1424. Police systems record [REDACTED] as a resident of the Northern Beaches. He has convictions and intelligence for drug possession and supplying, possession of a firearm, goods in custody, fraud, intimidate a witness, and sexual assault of a female.

Witness:




Signature:


_____ P.S. Young

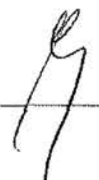
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1425. In 2004 he was living in a Northern Beaches house with other apparent drug addicts and street level drug suppliers, who were later charged with the murder of a woman [REDACTED]. The victim was also a drug user and street level supplier and her death was linked to apparent arguments over drug debts and rivalries.
1426. [REDACTED] is recorded as having been the victim of an act of indecency [REDACTED]. More recently during drug investigations local police found [REDACTED] in premises containing gay pornography.
1427. [REDACTED] was interviewed on 11 April 2013. He was [REDACTED] years old in 1988. He told police that he had no knowledge of specific assaults in the 1980's, including gay assaults, though he remembers general talk about 'poofter bashing' as a young person. He related being significantly affected by the assault on him as a child and remembers another man who was suspicious as he stayed around the children at the Manly Wharf. He was asked his knowledge of gay beats in the 1980's and he said he knew toilets generally were used by gay men. He said that due to having been assaulted himself that places where gay men went were the 'last place' that he would go. He did not know of any group called 'Da Manly Boys'.
1428. A statement was obtained from the caller, [REDACTED], who told police that he knew the persons he had named [REDACTED]. He changed the version he had given to Crime Stoppers and told police that he had not heard any member of the group talk about committing crimes, he did not have any knowledge of matters relevant to Scott or crimes at North Head. The knowledge he had was from the media, and he had contacted Crime Stoppers in an effort to be helpful. [REDACTED] is described by interviewing police as eccentric.
1429. There is nothing in the criminal or intelligence profiles of the named persons to link them to the death of Scott or gay-hate matters. The information provided is unreliable.
1430. 2013 email re [REDACTED]

Witness:



Signature:

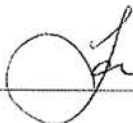


 P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1431. In August 2013 police received information from a person whose name is known to the police via Mr Rick Feneley of Fairfax Media. The person nominates [REDACTED] as having been vocal about "bashing gays". He knew [REDACTED] during the late 1980s, early 1990's and thinks that he attended [REDACTED]. He calls [REDACTED] an acquaintance rather than a friend. He recalls [REDACTED] openly talking about assaulting gays on one or two occasions. He does remember when or in what circumstance he heard [REDACTED] talk about the assaults and does not remember any more details of what [REDACTED] said.
1432. COPS and RTA system inquiries have failed to identify the particular [REDACTED] that the person nominates. There are no other nominations of [REDACTED] or a person similarly named in this investigation. No further action was taken on this information.
1433. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL
1434. 2013 Crime Stoppers Report I51862120 re [REDACTED]
1435. In September 2013 [REDACTED] contacted Crime Stoppers and Mr Johnson to nominate [REDACTED] as a suspect in the death of Scott. Police contacted [REDACTED] who stated that in the 1980's he lived with his parents [REDACTED]. He stated that [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and other Lalor Park youths namely, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], may have killed Scott. [REDACTED]'s belief is that during a Christmas period in the late 1980's the group told him that they went to Bondi and 'helped' a male fall off a cliff. [REDACTED] describes [REDACTED] as being "mean" but is otherwise unaware of a specific motive he may have to commit assaults.
1436. The nominated person has been identified by police as [REDACTED]. COPS system records of [REDACTED] indicate domestic violence (both victim and offender), and cannabis use only. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. COPS records indicate that [REDACTED] has mental health issues which includes a belief that soundwaves

Witness:



Signature:



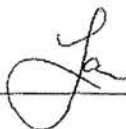
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

enter his brain. He has also been a frequent caller to the National Security Hotline. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

1437. COPS records identify a [REDACTED] from the Lalor Park area as having no adverse records. A [REDACTED] from the Lalor Park area also has no adverse entries. [REDACTED] is unable to be identified.
1438. [REDACTED] claims to have provided the same information in the 1990's anonymously to Crime Stoppers. He told the police that his motivation for nominating [REDACTED] was to provide resolution to the family of Scott and to claim the reward that he has seen published.
1439. The information was not investigated further due to the nominated location for the alleged offence is Bondi, [REDACTED]
[REDACTED], [REDACTED]'s [REDACTED] fixation which goes to veracity, and the fact that the persons identified have no adverse entries.
1440. I PRODUCE THAT INFORMATION REPORT
1441. [REDACTED], provided information to police on 13 August 2013 after being referred to police by [REDACTED] (the witness who identifies a gay beat at North Head as recorded earlier). [REDACTED] owned the Signal Bar at Darlinghurst from 1979 to 1986. [REDACTED] stated that his memory is not good but he recalls a person named Scott Johnson coming into the bar on one occasion over the years that he owned the bar. [REDACTED] remembered the person by his surname, and not so much by his first name, as he had two staff with the same surname. He remembers that when Scott Johnson was at the bar that he was with a male who he does not know.
1442. Records indicated that Scott first arrived in the country on 4 May 1986. This information has limited application and is unable to be verified.

Witness:



Signature:

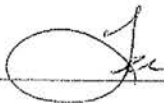


P.S. Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1443. **Linked Events**
1444. NSWPF database searches for linked events
1445. In 2012, 2013 and 2014 police intelligence and crime data has been searched for matters relevant to Scott's death. In 2012 as part of the Unsolved Homicide Team review a search for Manly Police occurrence entries at a NSW State Government archive facility was conducted. In 2013 and 2014 searches for crime reports held in the corporate database as archived microfiche were conducted by the NSWPF Business Technology Systems.
1446. The search period for occurrence pad entries was for 1 January 1987 to 31 December 1989 inclusive, and for other records the search period was from 1 January 1986 to 31 December 1989 inclusive.
1447. The search criteria was for (i) crimes and incidents (including death) at North Head and environs (ii) crimes of personal violence in the Manly Police area (iii) crimes at gay beats in the Manly Police area.
1448. Over 13,000 records were returned and require manual review. Documents reviewed included Manly Police Station Occurrence Pad Entries, Police Incident Reports (P40), Person of Interest Reports (P41), Police Incident & Arrest Reports (P42), and Juvenile Reports (P83).
1449. No group name or related 'tags', including 'Da Manly Boys' or versions of it, have been found in that search.
1450. It may be helpful to demonstrate the policing environment at Manly in the month of December 1988 leading up to and after the death of Scott. Incidents and are briefly categorised below.
1451. On Thursday 1 December 1988:
1452. Three women and three men were victims of separate break, enter and stealing offence.
1453. Richard Baker committed the offence of offensive conduct (language) near the police station.
1454. Two woman had their handbags stolen in commercial premises
1455. On Friday 2 December 1988:
1456. There were 6 break, enter and stealing offences.

Witness:



Signature:


P.S. Young

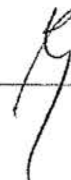
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1457. Mr John Kelly was assaulted by an unknown person who struck him with a hard object to the back of the head in Lagoon Park, Queenscliff at 11.30pm. Lagoon Park is an open park in a residential area in the next suburb north of Manly. Mr Kelly was not verbally abused and no property was taken from him.
1458. Two handbags were stolen
1459. An Australian flag was stolen
1460. Two bicycles were stolen
1461. On Saturday 3 December 1988:
1462. There was 1 break enter and stealing offence
1463. At 12.50pm a woman parked her car at the Shelley Beach North Head car park and it was broken into and property stolen.
1464. One man lost a chain on the Manly beach
1465. A parked car was broken into
1466. Male clothes were stolen from a clothes line
1467. A bicycle was stolen
1468. A man lost his wallet when he drove off with it in the roof
1469. A man lost his wallet in a supermarket
1470. On Sunday 4 December 1988:
1471. There was 1 break enter and stealing offence
1472. A female was assaulted and a man charged
1473. There was a robbery at Pizza Hut
1474. On Monday 5 December 1988:
1475. There were 3 break enter and stealing offence
1476. A man left his camera in the Manly Tourist Centre change room and returned to find it had been taken.
1477. A man lost his wallet at the Steyne Hotel
1478. A woman had her wallet stolen when at McDonalds
1479. A bicycle was stolen
1480. On Tuesday 6 December 1988:
1481. There were 4 break enter and stealing offence
1482. A bicycle was stolen
1483. A car in a residential street was broken into

Witness:



Signature:

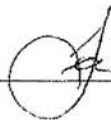


P.S.Young

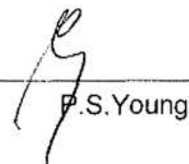
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1484. On Wednesday 7 December 1988:
1485. There was 1 break enter and stealing offence
1486. Two cars in a residential streets were broken into
1487. A woman had her wallet stolen in a supermarket
1488. On Thursday 8 December 1988:
1489. A car in a commercial street was broken into
1490. A woman lost her watch in the street
1491. A woman had her jacket stolen from a restaurant
1492. On Friday 9 December 1988:
1493. There were 3 break enter and stealing offences
1494. A man lost is camera in the street
1495. A man lost his wallet at a bank
1496. A woman lost her wallet in the street
1497. On Saturday 10 December 1988:
1498. A car was broken into in a commercial street
1499. \$12 cash was stolen in the street
1500. Two women had their bag stolen
1501. Malicious damage was done to the Manly Soccer Club and a woman's home
1502. On Sunday 11 December 1988:
1503. There were 2 break enter and stealing offences
1504. A women had her bag stolen
1505. A man had his fishing tackle stolen
1506. A man lost his wallet
1507. A woman was assaulted at a hotel
1508. A car was broken into and Leon Parnell was charged
1509. A car was broken into
1510. Offensive language was used in a hotel
1511. On Monday 12 December 1988:
1512. There were 5 break enter and stealing offences
1513. A woman's car was broken into
1514. A woman lost her wallet in the street
1515. A man lost his wallet in the street

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

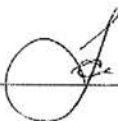


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1516. A dinghy was stolen
1517. A bicycle was stolen
1518. Shane Walder was charged with stealing from a dwelling
1519. Aaron Huriwaka was charged with break and enter
1520. A man in a car was assaulted and robbed by unknown youths
1521. On Tuesday 13 December 1988:
1522. There was 1 break enter and stealing offence
1523. A man lost his wallet in the street
1524. A woman had her car broken into
1525. A bicycle was stolen
1526. On Wednesday 14 December 1988:
1527. There were 3 break enter and stealing offences
1528. A man lost his wallet in the street
1529. A missing person was located
1530. A woman had her camera stolen
1531. On Thursday 15 December 1988:
1532. There was 1 break enter and stealing offence
1533. A bike was stolen and a person charged
1534. A woman had her wallet stolen in a hotel
1535. Reece Kirby was charged with malicious damage of a window
1536. On Friday 16 December 1988:
1537. There were 6 break enter and stealing offences
1538. A man had \$80 stolen from his wallet at a club
1539. \$98 was stolen from a school
1540. A woman had her wallet stolen
1541. A car was broken into in a residential street
1542. Jeremy Howell and Shane Riley were charged with stealing from a woman
1543. Robert Foster Henderson was charged with assault and assault occasioning actual bodily harm at a pub.
1544. Neil Challis, a 21 year old English citizen on holiday is reported missing. On 10 January 1989 he is located safe and well after holidaying with a female friend in Western Australia.

Witness:



Signature:

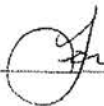


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1545. On Saturday 17 December 1988:
1546. There were 1 break enter and stealing offences
1547. Two men lost their wallets in the street
1548. There was a malicious damage to a car in a commercial street
1549. A female was charged with deception offences
1550. On Sunday 18 December 1988:
1551. A clothing bin at Totem Shopping Centre, Balgowlah, was damaged
1552. A similar pattern of reports occur for the remainder of December 1988, with the below reports being noted due to offence type or location.
1553. Between 12am and 4.45am on Thursday 22 December 1988, 37 year old Mr John Darcy-Smith reported to Dee Why police that he had been in a car with an unknown male who punched and kicked him. Mr Darcy-Smith reported that he had met the male about 12am at an unknown hotel in Chatswood. He reported that his Rolex watch and wallet with \$100 cash was stolen.
1554. About 12 midday on 23 December 1988, police arrested Mark Patrick Parker in public toilets at Manly when he admitted to using a syringe to self administer drugs.
1555. Between 3pm and 5pm a Mr Andrew Cross and Ms Kim Gavin parked a vehicle in the Shelly Beach car park. On returning to the car their concealed wallets and contents had been stolen from it.
1556. **Events Linked to North Head**
1557. An entry here does not suggest that the crime is linked to gay-hate or gay-activity. The reports were this is evident include the details of that gay link. Crimes inside licensed premises or of a domestic nature with no discernible gay-hate link are not included.
1558. Events recorded elsewhere in this statement may not appear here.
1559. There are no reports of gay-hate crimes or suspected gay-hate crimes at North Head. There is one report of a gay-linked (not gay-hate) crime, that being the stabbing of [REDACTED] by [REDACTED] on 4 February 1986 and which is referred to later in this statement.
1560. On 10 September 1985 about 10pm, three 17 year old soldiers from North Head Barracks, Mr Paul Lord, Mr Michael Jenks and Mr Martin OConner, were in

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Darley Street, Manly, walking back to the North Head Army Barracks when a fight broke out with up to 8 youths and men, some on BMX bikes. Loose house bricks were also used by the offenders. Mr Lord received fractured thumb, Mr Jenks received a deep cut to the forehead and both were treated in hospital.

1561. On 22 March 1986 about 6.15pm, a woman parked her car at Manly Public Hospital, North Head, and when she returned she found it had been broken into and her handbag and camera stolen.

1562. On 28 January 1987 about 9.30pm, Mr Scott Westerman of the North Head School of Artillery was walking in the Manly Wharf area when he was hit to the head from behind by two male offenders who took his backpack and wallet. Descriptions of the offenders are not available.

1563. On 29 November 1987 the death at North Head of a 46 year old male whose name is known to police is recorded. His body was found floating in the ocean beneath the public lookout at the southern end of North Head. His vehicle was located in the public car park nearby. A statement from his wife included that he had been in a nervous and uptight state when she last saw him earlier that day. He had previously attempted suicide by jumping and his family history also included suicide. He did not leave a suicide note. The body was positively identified at the morgue by a family friend. (ref. occurrence entry)

1564. On 3 December 1988 at 12.50pm, a woman parked her car at the Shelley Beach North Head car park and it was broken into and property stolen.

1565. On 10 December 1988 the finding of the body of Scott is recorded (ref. occurrence entry).

1566. On 18 December 1988 between 3pm and 5pm, a man and a woman parked their vehicle in the Shelley Beach car park. On returning to the car their concealed wallets and contents had been stolen from it.

1567. On 7 January 1989 about 3.15am, 21 year old John Belfield was arrested at the North Head Sewerage Treatment Works when he attempted to steal a motor vehicle. He has no other criminal or intelligence records.

1568. On 11 March 1989 about 6.15pm, a woman parked her car at the North Head lookout and when she returned she found it had been broken into and her handbag stolen.

Witness:



Signature:




P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1569. On 14 April 1989 about 1pm, a man parked his car at the North Head lookout and when he returned he found it had been broken into and his wallet stolen.
1570. On 23 April 1989 about 1.45pm, a woman parked her car at the North Head lookout and when she returned she found it had been broken into and her handbag stolen.
1571. On 17 June 1989, about 4pm a woman parked her car at the North Head lookout and was away from it until 4.30pm when she returned to find the window broken and he handbag stolen.
1572. On 3 June 1989 about 3pm, Mr Ronald Jerochim parked his car at the Shelly Beach car park and returned to find his wallet had been stolen from the car.
- 1573. Events Linked to Manly**
1574. An entry here does not suggest that the crime is linked to gay-hate or gay-activity. The reports were this is evident include the details of that gay link. Crimes inside licensed premises or of a domestic nature with no discernible gay-hate link are not included.
1575. On 2 November 1986 about 7.30pm, 48 year old Mr Ian Duncan McIntyre, was seated on a public pathway at Fairy Bower, Manly, when an offender asked him for money. When he declined, the offender punched him to the face a number of times, chased him on the pathway, and kicked him on the ground. The offender ran off towards the Manly commercial area. Mr McIntyre drove himself to Manly Hospital and was treated for a fractured jaw. No description of the offender is recorded in the report. In 1997 a Mr Ian McIntyre with the same date of birth is recorded by police for soliciting a 20 year old male prostitute at Darlinghurst. This may suggest that the incident in Manly was linked to gay activity and/or a gay-hate crime.
1576. On 8 November 1986 about 6.40pm, 33 year old [REDACTED] was in the public toilets at the Manly Tourist Information Centre when an offender kicked open his cubicle. The offender punched and kicked the victim to the head and body. [REDACTED]'s tooth was broken and he received sutures to his lip. A short time later, the offender, 14 year old [REDACTED], was arrested by police in The Corso and charged with assault occasioning actual bodily harm for which he received 12 months recognisance.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

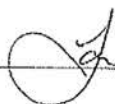


P.S. Young

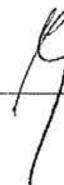
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1577. [REDACTED] has an extensive drug, break and enter, assault and resist arrest history in Manly, on the Northern Beaches and more recently in Liverpool. Beginning in his youth, he operated in the Manly Wharf and The Corso areas and he targeted a broad range of victims. During an unrelated neighbour dispute in 2013 he is recorded as having [REDACTED]. His records indicate that he commits crimes alone or with inconsistent co-offenders. He has no links to other convicted gay-hate offenders.
1578. On 12 December 1986 about 5.30pm, 35 year old [REDACTED] went into the Manly Tourist Information Centre public toilets. He was followed by two men who said "You're a poofter aren't you?" and then punched and kicked him before leaving. He suffered a swollen face. The victim is able to describe one offender as about 20 years, 170 centimetres tall, medium build, fair hair with a fair complexion, and Caucasian. His hair was untidy he wore a white sloppy joe with grey track suit pants.
1579. On 30 December 1986 about 11.10pm, 58 year old [REDACTED] used the public toilets at the Manly Wharf. Two males punched and kicked him and demanded his wallet which they left with. [REDACTED]'s false were broken and the received abrasions and bruising. The offenders are described as about 17 years old, 180 centimetres tall, with solid builds, fair complexions, short black hair, and Caucasian appearance. They both wore shorts. On 7 January 1987, 16 year old [REDACTED] was charged with this offence of assault and robbery.
1580. On 1 January 1987 about 7.15am, 21 year old [REDACTED], who had been drinking heavily, was assaulted and robbed of his wallet in The Corso at Manly by five youths whom he was unable to describe.
1581. On 12 April 1987 about 2am, [REDACTED] was assaulted and robbed of his wallet, watch and shoes as he walked through Ivanhoe Park a council park in the Manly commercial area. He was already affected by alcohol when he was punched to the head. He was interviewed by Manly detectives but was unable to describe the offender/s.
1582. On 10 May 1987 at night, [REDACTED] went from the Manly Hotel to the Manly Wharf area with a man who he had argued with at the hotel. The man was then joined by two other men and the three offenders punched and kicked

Witness:



Signature:



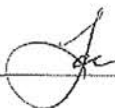
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

him. [REDACTED] could describe the main offender as 20 to 24 years of age, 175 centimetres tall, olive complexion, black hair and of Mediterranean appearance. He received a fractured leg.

1583. On 10 January 1988 records that a male victim (whose name is known to police) reported to police that about 3.50am he went into a cubicle at the Manly Tourist Information Centre public toilets. Whilst in the cubicle the outside of the door was kicked and the offender called out "poofter". On leaving the toilet block the offender took hold of the victim's throat and accused him of being gay. The victim broke free and ran into the Manly police station pursued by the offender. The offender was arrested by police at the station and charged. The offender was 19 year old [REDACTED]. (Ref. Occurrence Entry 1/43). Births, Deaths, and Marriages records that [REDACTED] died on 12 August 1988 and thereby he cannot be responsible for the death of Scott.
1584. On 18 April 1988 about 11.15pm, 31 year old [REDACTED] was walking through school grounds near Pittwater Road at Manly when he was punched and kicked by two offenders. Twenty dollars was stolen from him. After the assault he walked to his friends home, that being, Mr Bernard King (a gay television chief). Ambulance attended and he was treated for a cut thought to have been inflicted by a glass bottle. (ref. Occurrence Entry 4/55)
1585. On 23 April 1988 about 4.40pm, 22 year old [REDACTED] who was holidaying from Germany, was assaulted and robbed by a man he had met earlier at the Manly Park Royal Hotel toilets.
1586. On 1 May 1988 about 12.30am, 43 year old [REDACTED] in [REDACTED] south Manly, walking home from a party when he was assaulted by 3 or 4 Caucasian youths. They hit him with an object, punched and kicked him and fractured his ribs before running towards the Manly commercial area.
1587. On 11 May 1989, 16 year old [REDACTED] was arrested at the Totem Shopping Centre, Balgowlah, for numerous stealing from motor vehicle offences
1588. On 9 July 1988 records that a family (whose name is known to police) reported having found a note written by a 46 year old male next of kin which stated his intention to suicide by jumping from North Head. Police and family

Witness: _____



Signature: _____




P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

searches resulted in the man being located alive in bushes at North Head. (ref. occurrence entry)

1589. On 3 June 1989 (follow-up record on 7 June 1989) police record that a deceased male body was located floating in the ocean at the southern end of Manly Beach by a surfer. The flesh on three limbs was absent and the body was partly clothed in jeans, belt, a hiking boot and a sock. Local and crime scene police attended. At post mortem the age was estimated between 20 and 30 years old. No fractures, missing teeth or defensive injuries were identified and consistency with drowning was noted. (ref. occurrence entries)
1590. On Friday 23 June 1989 about 6.30pm, 38 year old [REDACTED] was in the public toilet at the Manly Tourist Information Centre when an unknown male pushed the door open and punched the victim repeatedly to the head. The offender dragged the victim from the cubicle and told him that he was a police officer and showed him a badge. The offender said that he was going to search [REDACTED], and demanded his wallet which was handed to him. After he was searched the wallet was handed back to him. [REDACTED] saw the offender then leave with a female who had been standing at the door to the toilets.
1591. [REDACTED] reported the matter to Manly Police that day. The male offender is described as 186cm tall, solid build, black hair, fair complexion, and Caucasian, wearing a dark blue jumper. The female offender is described as 186cm tall, solid build, brown hair, fair complexion, and Caucasian, wearing a dark blue jumper. No ages for either offender are recorded.
1592. [REDACTED] was interviewed further by Manly detectives on 26 June 1989. He gave additional information that also with the male and female offender, there was another long-haired person who did not look like the purported police officers. The blue jumpers are described as high-necked with no police insignia. [REDACTED] was shown a real police badge and identification and he said that it was not the same as what he had been shown by the male offender.
1593. There are several other stealing from motor vehicles at Shelly Beach and North Head car parks in 1989. Victims are both women and men. On 24 September 1989, 23 year old [REDACTED] and co-offender 33 year old

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

██████████ were arrested for a number these offences. Both offenders resided in the Central Coast.

1594. Events Linked to a Northern Beaches Location

1595. An entry here does not suggest that the crime is linked to gay-hate or gay-activity. The reports were this is evident include the details of that gay link. Crimes inside licensed premises or of a domestic nature with no discernible gay-hate link are not included.

1596. Events recorded elsewhere in this statement may not appear here.

1597. On 7 May 1985 about 11pm, 18 year old ██████████ was walking with his flatmate of two weeks, offender, 16 year old ██████████, in bushland off Gloucester Street, North Balgowlah. While in the bush ██████████ struck ██████████ to the head several times with his fists or an iron bar before leaving the scene. ██████████ went to a nearby house and was taken by the occupant to Manly Hospital, then conveyed to the Royal North Shore Hospital for treatment of a fractured jaw and cheek, lacerations and bruising. When he arrives at the nearby house, it appears that ██████████ only had a top on. He reported that his running shoes, jeans, underpants, socks, wallet and \$20 were missing or had been stolen in the assault. He was interviewed a number of times but was unable to explain the circumstances further. Detective and crime scene police responded. On 13 May 1985, ██████████ was charged by Manly Police with assault occasioning actual bodily harm. He was sentenced at Bidura Children's Court to a \$250 fine or 14 days detention.

1598. ██████████ and ██████████ have no other police history indicative of potential gay-hate.

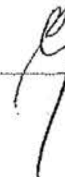
1599. On 16 August 1985 about 11.40pm, 15 year old ██████████ was with friends in the vicinity of the Narrabeen Bus Terminus. A fight broke out with another male and ██████████ was punched to the head and received cuts and a bleeding nose. The offender left the scene and a description of him does not appear in the report.

1600. On 25 August 1986 at 12.15am, ██████████ and co-offenders – 16 year old ██████████, and 16 year old ██████████ went to the Totem Shopping Centre in Condamine Street, Balgowlah. The toilets at the front of this centre were known

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

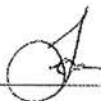
to police as a gay beat. The victim ([REDACTED]), an adult male went to those toilets and when he was in a cubicle and offenders threw a glass light bulb into the cubicle. As the victim tried to leave the toilet he was abuse and threatened. [REDACTED] chased him to his car and took hold of him and started to punch him to the body. [REDACTED] called to [REDACTED], "Where is your knife?" and a knife was thrown to [REDACTED]. On hearing this the victim dropped his car keys as he ran away, [REDACTED] and the co-offenders took the victims car and drove it to Narrabeen. [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] were arrested later that day and charged with robbery with striking and take and use conveyance. [REDACTED] is the subject of a separate entry in this statement. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] have no other criminal or intelligence records.

1601. On 29 September 1986 about 12.45am, [REDACTED] picked up three male hitchhikers from Mosman and when they were in the vicinity of the Totem Shopping Centre, Balgowlah, [REDACTED] was hit to the head and had his wallet and \$20 cash taken. No description of the offenders is provided. An identity matching [REDACTED] is linked by intelligence to a child pornography website.

1602. On 3 January 1988 about 2.30am, 36 year old [REDACTED] was assaulted in the vicinity of the Totem Shopping Centre at Balgowlah. Manly Police occurrence entry includes that the victim reported to police that he was standing in the street when he was approached by teenage males with dark coloured skin. He was asked for a cigarette, called a "poofter", and kicked in the stomach. The victim was able to describe one offender as wearing punk-like clothes. He was unable to describe the second offender. Police responded, and patrolled the area during which time they spoke with three youths they identified as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]. These youths were not dressed in punk-like clothes and each had fair skin Caucasian. Their involvement was discounted based on the description given to police by the victim.

1603. On 13 February 1988, [REDACTED] was discovered at his Freshwater home suffering fatal head injuries from a masonry hammer. In 1999 [REDACTED] of Allambie Heights was charged with the murder. [REDACTED] was 19 years old at the time of the murder of [REDACTED]. He has no links t known gay-hate offenders. [REDACTED] is believed to have been a homosexual [REDACTED].

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

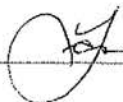


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1604. On 24 June 1988 about 6.30pm, a 19 year old male victim was walking to his home through Woolgoolga Reserve at North Balgowlah when he was threatened with a knife by one offender who demanded in his money. The victim gave money to the offender who then ran away. The offence was circulated via police radio. The offender is not described within the occurrence pad entry. The reserve is a park bounded by residential houses. (ref. occurrence entry)
1605. On 18 September 1988 records that the victim (whose name is known to the police) reported to police that he was sexually assaulted in his home by a man about 1.30am. The victim had been walking in the vicinity of his Balgowlah home when he was offered a lift by a male stranger. The victim invited the stranger into his home and he was then hit to the head with an object, had his hands and feet tied, and was then anally sexually assaulted with the fingers of the offender who masturbated himself. He was found by flatmates when they returned home about an hour and a half later. He also found a shoe lace had been tied tightly around his genitals. He was treated at hospital for soreness to the head and anus. A sexual assault medical evidence kit was completed. The offender was described in detail including Caucasian, 30 to 35 years old, ginger coloured hair, freckled complexion, green eyes, and with a tattoo of the snake on his arm. (ref. occurrence entry)
1606. On 7 August 1989 about 9.45pm, 33 year old [REDACTED] was assaulted at the Totem Shopping Centre public toilets at Balgowlah. The offenders called [REDACTED] a "poofter" and punched and kicked him. One of the offenders was [REDACTED] (see offence against [REDACTED] on 8 January 1986). The other offenders were [REDACTED], 19 years old, who has an extensive intoxicant and street offence history: [REDACTED], 23 years old, whose history includes assaults and frequenting the Manly Wharf Fun Pier; [REDACTED], 22 years old, whose history includes domestic related assaults. They were each charged with assaulting [REDACTED]. None have links to other convicted gay-hate offenders.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1607. Events Linked by Characteristic

1608. Police records indicate several gay-hate or gay-linked crimes or suspected crimes of violence in the 1980's and 1990's. Records of gay-hate violence have been accessed via police systems and archives, and coronial records. Records of gay-hate crimes in Sydney city east and the eastern suburbs are the most numerous.

1609. By 1991 police investigations in east Sydney had convicted several east Sydney youths for gay-hate crimes of violence and suspected the same youths and others, including adults, of committing gay-hate crimes for which there was insufficient evidence to charge. From 2001 to 2002 police investigation Strike Force Taradale ('Taradale') added to the existing body of intelligence about gay-hate culture in the 1980's and 1990's.


1610. In 2005 Deputy State Coroner Milledge held an inquest ('Taradale Inquest') into three gay men, being the missing person, Mr Gilles Mattaini (1985), missing person, Mr Ross Warren (1989), and deceased person, Mr John Russell (1989). The offences for which persons had been charged was combined by Taradale with their intelligence and put before the Coroner. The Coroner linked each of these cases to Marks Park, an ocean-side cliff park and gay beat in the east Sydney suburb of Bondi.

1611. The Coroner found that Mr Russell died having been "thrown from the cliff onto rocks" at Bondi, that Mr Warren whose body has never been found, "was a victim of homicide" linked to the same Bondi area. Regarding the third man, the Coroner opined that Mr Mattaini, whose body has never been found, died in similar circumstances to Mr Russell and Mr Warren.

1612. No person was charged by Taradale or referred by the Coroner to the Office of the Director of Public Prosecutions. The Coroner did however express the view that Taradale "*will provide an excellent source of evidence should other matters come to light*".³⁴

³⁴ Mattaini, Russell and Warren coronial findings 9 March 2005

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



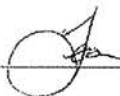
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1613. For the purpose of comparing Scott's death to known or suspected violent crimes, gay-hate crimes committed in the vicinity of Marks Park at Bondi are the most closely aligned due to the gay status of the victims, and their occurrence at an ocean side gay beat.
1614. The following crimes or suspected crimes of violence against known or suspected gay men are included here for comparison to the circumstances of Scott's death.
1615. 1985 Mr Gilles Mattaini; Mr Mattaini was a 27 year old gay man who was last seen in the vicinity of Marks Park, Bondi in September 1985. His body has never been found. It appears that some miscommunication between his friends led to a mistaken belief that he had been reported missing to the police. It was not until 2002 when his friends saw media regarding violence in the area that his disappearance was reported to police³⁵ although not even his friends thought he would use a gay beat. Mr Mattaini was a French citizen who was in Australia on a working visa. Mr Mattaini's mother thought it was possible that her son had suicided due to two prior suicide attempts a few years prior to 1985 in France, one being by way of drug overdose when he was in the army and one being in the family home by way of drugs and self-harm. At his father's instigation, Mr Mattaini and his son were estranged from each other. However, his friends in Australia described him as having a positive outlook at the time of his disappearance, though he was concerned about being an illegal immigrant due to the expiration of his visa.
1616. The 2005 findings of Coroner Milledge in this case are; *"I cannot make a finding that Mr Mattaini met his death at the hands of another person or persons' and, '...there is a strong possibility that he died in similar circumstances to (Mr Warren and Mr Russell – see below), and, "I find that Giles Jacques Mattaini died on or about the 15 September 1985 in Sydney. The cause and manner of his death remain undetermined..."*

³⁵ Taradale Inquest transcript W1894 116/03 YG-A page 11

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1617. 1987 [REDACTED]: In 2002 after seeing Taradale related media³⁶, [REDACTED] reported an assault upon himself and his then boyfriend, [REDACTED], at Marks Park, Bondi, which occurred in October 1987. Around the middle of the day they went to Marks Park where they were offered cannabis by two male strangers. They went with the men to a discreet area in the park which was close to the cliff edge. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were then assaulted with punches and kicks. [REDACTED] fell to the ground. His head fell over the edge of the cliff and an offender stomped on his head. The offenders did not threaten or attempt to throw them over the cliff. [REDACTED] was robbed of money. Medical records verify that he was treated in hospital casualty for a facial fracture and a knee injury. The facial fracture later required surgery. The two offenders are described as being 30 to 35 years of age.
1618. 1988 [REDACTED]: [REDACTED] was a 50 year old man who the police believed was gay died in his home at Alexandria from a head injury in December 1988. He also suffered a puncture wound to his hand. Police suspect that he received the injuries at Alexandria Park, Alexandria, when he attended the public toilets at the location for a gay sex. There is some evidence from 1990 covert investigations by the Major Crime Squad South that indicate the offence may have been committed by a group of youths and/or associates who in 1990 were charged with the murder in Alexander Park of Mr Richard Johnson (no relation).
1619. 1989 Mr Ross Warren: Mr Warren was last seen about 2.30am on 22 July 1989 in Oxford Street, Sydney. His body has not been located. He was a 25 year old gay man who was reported by a friend to be an infrequent user of Marks Park for gay sex. Property belonging to him was found in the vicinity of Marks Park at Bondi and included his keys, including a car key, which were found placed in a rock shelf of the park side cliff. His locked car was parked nearby and contained his wallet and cash. About two weeks prior to his disappearance Mr Warren had made a comment to a friend that he was feeling a "bit depressed" and could "slash his wrists" after which he laughed. Apparently he had frustrated relationships with a boyfriend and a girlfriend at the time. Another former work

³⁶ Taradale records

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

colleague told police that within the two weeks prior to his disappearance Mr Warren told him that he was "keeping a low profile" after being caught having a relationship with the woman who was already in a relationship³⁷.

1620. Nonetheless, those close to him described him as having positive life plans at the time of his disappearance and that he was likely to have visited Marks Park on 22 July 1989 for a gay sexual liaison. Weather conditions were recorded as poor with rough seas. The initial police concluded that Mr Warren had fallen into the water most likely by accidental means.

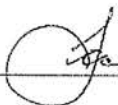
1621. In 2005 Coroner Milledge found, *"I find that Ross Bradley Warren died in Sydney on or about 22 July 1989. Whilst and manner of death are unknown, I am satisfied that the deceased was a victim of homicide perpetrated by person or persons unknown."*

1622. 1989 Mr John Russell: Mr Russell's deceased body was located on a rock shelf at sea level at the base of Marks Park, Bondi, on 23 November 1989. Mr Russell was a 31 year old gay man who lived in Bondi. He is described as having positive life plans after inheriting \$100,000 at the time of his death. A friend of thirteen years last saw him alive when they socialised at the Bondi Hotel on the night prior to his body being discovered. That friend told police that Mr Russell was not a user of gay beats as he was cautious about potential assaults and health risks. Toxicology analysis detected an alcohol concentration of 0.255 at post mortem which supported a proposition of misadventure. At the Taradale Inquest there was new conjecture, apparently accepted by the Coroner, as to putrefaction effects on that high reading.

1623. Mr Russell's body was located on rocks about 11.6 metres below a nearby popular walking path which boarded Marks Park. Loose coins were found nearby his body as well a packet of Peter Stuyvesant cigarettes which Mr Russell was known to smoke. He apparently lost his wallet in the days prior to his death. Leading up to the Taradale Inquest, Taradale gathered information that at Marks Park gay men would rattle coins to communicate a willingness to engage in a

³⁷ Stm of Andrea/Page para.210

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

homosexual act. Crime scene investigators attended the scene and loose hair strands which were resting on the back of Mr Russell's hand were collected. Police media releases after the body was located resulted in two witnesses coming forward, one being [REDACTED] his friend of 13 years, and a person who thought that he may have seen Mr Russell walking in Marks Park, but this remained unconfirmed³⁸.

1624. The police investigation did not identify suicide as a possible cause of death. It was open to either misadventure or violence, but more incline to misadventure due to several factors including the existing wet conditions, unlit conditions, the unfenced path, and the alcohol data. The police case officer concluded that the death was accidental³⁹. In July 1990 an Inquest had been held into the death and found that Mr Russell had died from multiple injuries sustained when he fell from a cliff onto rocks below. The cause of the fall was unable to be determined.

1625. In 2005 Coroner Milledge found, *'I find that John Alan Russell died at Marks Park North Bondi between 22 or 23 November 1989. The cause of death is multiple injuries sustained when he was thrown from the cliff onto rocks, by a person or persons unknown.'*

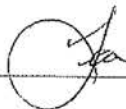
1626. 1989 [REDACTED]: [REDACTED] was assaulted in Notts Avenue, Bondi, about 10pm on 18 December 1989. Notts Avenue is just south of Bondi Beach and a short distance walk from Marks Park. [REDACTED] reported that in that street he had been approached by three youths who asked him if he was gay and demanded his car keys, watch and wallet. They punched and kicked him. They searched his car and threw his keys into the water. The assault continued with chasing, and being hit with a skateboard. [REDACTED] was treated in hospital for nose and rib fractures.

1627. [REDACTED], a 16 year old resident of Waterloo, was charged with robbery in company after he was positively identified from photographs by [REDACTED] during an investigation by Bondi Police. Based on a known association and

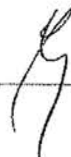
³⁸ Stm of [REDACTED] /Page para.83

³⁹ Stm of Dunbar/Page para.63

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

description police suspected that one of the other two co-offenders was [REDACTED], a 17 year old resident of Bondi. The third co-offender remained unknown.

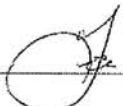
1628. 1989 [REDACTED]: [REDACTED] reported an assault and robbery upon himself at Centennial Park, 8pm on 21 December 1989 by up a group of youths with a metal pipe. He was treated in hospital for concussion and reported the matter to police. Two of the youths were later identified by [REDACTED] and charged by local police. The youths both resided in the inner western suburbs and their surnames are [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]⁴⁰. In his 2003 Taradale inquest evidence [REDACTED] explains that just prior to the assault he had met a male friend in the park who did not want to be mentioned to police when it was reported by [REDACTED].

1629. 1989 Mr [REDACTED]⁴¹: [REDACTED] reported an assault and robbery upon himself on the public pathway in the vicinity of Notts Avenue and Marks Park about 10.30pm on 21 December 1989. He reported the matter to police that night. [REDACTED] was a 24 year old gay man and resident of Bondi. He was jogging when he saw ten to twelve youths and teenage girls who attempted to engage him in conversation and asked for money. He kept jogging and when he was on another section of the pathway the same youths grabbed hold of him and kicked and punched him to the grass park beside the pathway. Words of "pooffer" and "you're gay" were directed at him. He was yelling for help. His shoes were removed and they repeatedly demanded money. He kept being hit about the head. The offender who attempted to engage him in conversation on the pathway earlier was the angriest of the group and kept telling him to "shut up". This offender took hold of him by the shoulders and dragged him about thirteen (13) metres along the pathway towards the water. The offender said twice, "I'm gonna throw you over the side." At a position at the top of a set of steps that led to a five metre ledge drop on the water side, [REDACTED] broke free and successfully ran from the group and returned home. The assault had continued


⁴⁰ E904469000157

⁴¹ Stm of Victim [REDACTED] 03/01/1990 & 1/08/90

Witness:



Signature:

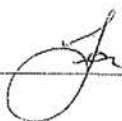

 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

for up to fifteen minutes. Property stolen from him during the assault was a diamond earring, gold signet ring, running shoes and a cigarette lighter.

1630. He reported the matter to police when he got home and police attended his home. He remembers being treated in casualty for cuts and bruises, loose teeth, sore ribs, swollen fingers, and a severe headache. Limited hospital records show that [REDACTED] was treated in casualty on 22 December 1989 for a head injury.
1631. In written statements he described the offender who dragged him as male, being possibly 17 years old, 168cm to 172cm tall, slim build, blonde hair that was longer on top, fair to lightly tanned skin, Australian accent and reasonably well spoken. Another main offender is described as male, Maori, possible 17 years old, 168cm to 172cm tall, solid build, round and solid face, carrying a little body fat, olive complexion, with black hair.
1632. [REDACTED] took part in a number of procedures to identify the offenders but was unable to positively identify any person. Suspicions again pointed at [REDACTED] and are described here. From [REDACTED]'s information and local police knowledge early suspicion arose around members of an anti-social group known locally as the 'Bondi Boys'. The group leader was suspected to be [REDACTED] who was also suspected in the assault of [REDACTED].
1633. In early 1990 police identified that a large number of that group was gathered at Bondi Beach. With police, [REDACTED] took up a discreet position in an attempt at a 'crowd scene' identification process but he was unable to recognise any person. From his own comments at the end of his statement of 1 August 1990, it appears that at the time of reporting the offence in December 1989 he was shown local police photo books of assorted offenders that included an image of [REDACTED] but he did not recognise his image on that occasion.
1634. On 30 July 1990 Major Crime Squad South Region investigators showed [REDACTED] a number of photographs and he told them that the image of [REDACTED] was "similar" to the offender who had dragged him towards the water.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

██████████ did not feel sufficiently confident to commit that recognition by way of signing the photograph at that time.

1635. The next day, 1 August 1990, ██████████ went to Waverley Police Station and asked to see the same photographs again. On this occasion he signed the back of the photograph of ██████████ saying that, "...I feel (he) was the one who assaulted me". He says that between the first photograph identification (appears to be in December 1990) and the one on the 30 July and 1 August 1990 that he has seen the offender in public and adds, "I feel that it is the one in the photograph I (just) signed".

1636. On 30 August 1990 Mr McMahan viewed more photographs at Bondi Police Station and identified ██████████ born 29/07/1970 as "very similar" to the offender he described as Maori, and ██████████ born 08/11/1974 as having "similar hair" to another offender.

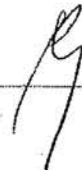
1637. Eleven years later on 31 August 2001 Taradale again showed ██████████ a number of photographic images and these images included ██████████. ██████████ identified to police that four of the images "trigger" his mind. One image chosen by ██████████ is of ██████████ and he says, "I don't know it's something that really, I don't know whether it's the arrogance in his face or what..." The other three images chosen by ██████████ were chosen at random by police from State-wide holdings and are not connected with any related offence.

1638. Taradale decided to re-interview ██████████ in 2001 by way of audio and video recording at the scene of the crime. This was after media coverage of several offences which was instigated by Operation Taradale to generate information from the public. In that interview ██████████'s account varies from his original statement. The video shows him indicating that he was dragged over a much longer distance than the original thirteen (13) metres, and rather than the offender saying "I'm gonna throw you over the side", the offender now says, "gonna do (to you) what we done to everyone else". When his shoes were removed he now remembered that one of the shoes was thrown towards the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

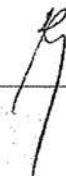
ocean (keys were thrown into the water in the assault on [REDACTED]). Also one of the offenders now is recorded as having a stick (one was used in the death of Mr Rattanajurathaporn which occurred in July 1990) and attempting to insert it into [REDACTED]'s anus.

1639. 1990 [REDACTED] [REDACTED] (now deceased) was a gay man who was sexually assaulted in Marks Park on 12 January 1990. He had made a brief report to police on 14 January 1990 telling them that he had been the victim of a gay-hate assault but otherwise he did not mention the sexual assault or provide a statement. In 2001 he was contacted by Taradale as he had been associated with Mr Ross Warren. He then provided a statement to Taradale of a robbery offence at Bondi and a sexual assault at Marks Park that occurred in 1990.
1640. In his statement he describes himself as a 'drag queen' with long hair and a stage name of [REDACTED]. He told police that he had been a frequent user of Marks Park as a gay beat and described the bush and rock cavern areas to the side of the public walkway where he would have sex with men.
1641. [REDACTED] describes being assaulted and robbed at his front gate at Bondi by three offenders whom he was unable to describe due to being hit to the head from behind and landing on the ground. He thinks that this occurred in January 1990 and he reported the matter to police.
1642. About February 1990 [REDACTED] describes walking to Marks Park after 1am and being joined by an adult male unknown to him. [REDACTED] was led by the man into nearby bushes and [REDACTED]'s intention was to have consensual sex with the man. Once in the bushes [REDACTED] undressed so that he was completely naked. About then two other men joined the first man and it was apparent that they knew each other. [REDACTED] was then repeatedly sexually assaulted by the three men. He was kicked and the hair on his scrotum, his nipple and thigh were burned by the offenders during the assaults. He was urinated on. He was treated in hospital for multiple fractures and other injuries but says that he did not disclose the offence to medical staff or police as he feared retaliation by the offenders.

Witness:



Signature:



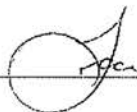
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


Records from hospital and police systems indicate that on 12 January 1990 [REDACTED] [REDACTED] received injuries consistent with his report in 2001.

1643. The three offenders for the sexual assault were all Caucasian and without accents. One male is described as being about 25 years old with more body hair than the others. [REDACTED] was unable to describe the three men in further detail. No other similar offences, or offenders with this modus operandi are recorded in police systems or in police recollection.
1644. 1990 Mr Richard Johnson: Mr Johnson (no relation to Scott) was a gay man who was fatally assaulted on 24 January 1990 at Alexandria. Mr Johnson had placed his phone number in a public toilet in Park Street, Alexandria. On 24 January 1990 he accepted an offer of gay sex at the toilets which was made to him over the telephone. When Mr Johnson arrived after 10pm he was fatally assaulted by a group of youths
1645. Investigations by the Major Crime Squad South led to 8 youths being charged with the murder of Mr Richard Johnson. They are identified here by as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. Peripheral group associates are identified as [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].
1646. 1990 Mr Wayne Tonks: Mr Tonks, was a 35 year old gay man who was found bound, assaulted and asphyxiated in his home at Artarmon on 19 May 1990. Mr Tonks' phone number was located in public toilets in Naremburn and Chatswood. Investigations by the Major Crime Squad North led to two youths, identified here as [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], being charged with the murder based on fingerprint and confessional evidence.
1647. Incidentally Mr Tonks was a teacher at the Cleveland Street High School where a number of the offenders charged with the 1990 murder of Richard Johnson attended.
1648. Mr Tonks and/or the offenders were found by the Major Crime Squad North and South to have no connection to any individuals, groups or locations identified

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

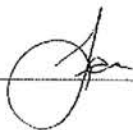
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

for gay-hate offences in the environs of Alexandria, Bondi, and the inner city⁴², including those responsible for the murder of Mr Johnson in January 1990.

1649. 1990 Mr Kritchikorn Rattanajurathaporn and [REDACTED]: Mr Rattanajurathaporn was a gay man and was murdered in the vicinity of Marks Park at Bondi on 20 July 1990 by three offenders. At that location he was in the company of [REDACTED] who was assaulted by the same offenders. The accepted facts at trial were that the offenders stated motive was to assault and rob and they armed themselves with a hammer and stick for that purpose. The assaults of both victims commenced in the park proper and included punching, kicking, and hitting with the stick. Mr Rattanajurathaporn was chased to within metres of the cliff edge and left there injured. The next day his deceased body was found in the water beneath the cliff. The post mortem was able to distinguish injuries that he had suffered in the assault, during the fall and upon drowning. Some of the assault injuries were caused by a blunt instrument which may be consistent with being hit by a hammer.
1650. The police investigation by the Major Crime Squad South resulted in the three youths being charged relative to both victims. Youths charged with the murder of Mr Rattanajurathaporn and the assault of [REDACTED] are identified here by surname as two [REDACTED] brothers and [REDACTED].
1651. 1991 [REDACTED]: [REDACTED] was a gay man who was assaulted at Darlinghurst in May 1991 when he was leaving work. [REDACTED] was seen kissing another male in the street and was verbally insulted by a group nearby. A member of the group and [REDACTED] exchanged verbal insults before he was punched and kicked by three youths. The offenders tried to steal his jacket. Darlinghurst Police came to the aid of [REDACTED] and arrested [REDACTED] but two offenders escaped and remained unidentified.
1652. 2002 [REDACTED]: [REDACTED] was assaulted at Moore Park on 20 March 2002. He is a gay man and reported to police that when he stopped at Moore Park to urinate he was assaulted by up to eight youths who punched and kicked

⁴² Taradale & Homicide Squad holdings

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

him. He saw one youth was carrying a bat. Another youth said. "We'll get rid of all you poofers". He was treated in hospital. An investigation by local police resulted in the charging of 6 youths who are identified here by surname as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]

1653. Additional events for consideration

1654. The following matters are included here as evidence that offenders who are known or suspected of committing gay-hate crime also commit non-gay-hate related violence in similar areas.

1655. 1989 [REDACTED] was walking in the evening in Bondi CBD when he was chased and assaulted by a large group of youths and young females. [REDACTED] immediately reported the matter to police. [REDACTED] identified four (4) of the youths as being [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] who were each charged.

1656. 1996 [REDACTED] died as the result of an assault in Campbell Parade, Bondi. Campbell parade skirts the Bondi CBD area and is not in the vicinity of Marks Parks. [REDACTED] was walking with his girlfriend when assaulted by two males during which he was hit by a bus and received fatal injuries. The Major Crime Squad South charged [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] with the offence. [REDACTED] was convicted of murder and [REDACTED] was convicted of being an accessory after the fact of grievous bodily harm.

1657. 1988 [REDACTED] reported in 2001 that around 1988 he was chased by youths in Marks Park and offensively turned away by local police when he tried to report it. This together with his apparent and previously unreported recollection that he had in fact met Mr Russell in Marks Park, led to him being given two opportunities as a voluntary witness at the Taradale Inquest. [REDACTED] commented at length and arguably 'in the guise of evidence' before, in the initial stages of clarification questions by counsel, he called counsel a "grub" and left the witness box.⁴³ [REDACTED] was allowed to return to the witness box on another

⁴³ 2005 Taradale inquest transcript

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

day and provided commentary only. The facts of his allegations remain unknown and do not assist the current investigation.

1658. Offenders and suspects in the east Sydney investigations

1659. Members of the so-called 'Bondi Boys' for gay-hate offences. Group members are identified by surname as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]. A possible leader of the so-called 'Bondi Boys' was [REDACTED], and intermittent associates were [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]⁴⁴. None of these people are linked by NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly by way of offence or association.

1660. Members or associates of the 'Bondi Boys' were found in possession of what police identified as tags, being apparent anachronisms 'PSK'⁴⁵, 'PTK' or 'BB' (Bondi Boys). Taradale refers to 'PSK' as standing for 'Park Side Killers'⁴⁶. Two sources of the meaning of the 'tag' were high school students [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. [REDACTED], an [REDACTED] student at Cleveland Street High School, is not identified as a member of any group but says in a statement in May 2002 that he heard the tag phrase from [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]⁴⁷. [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and others had been charged with the murder of Mr Johnson at Alexandria. [REDACTED] and others came to the notice of academic Ms Sue Thompson as having anti-gay sentiments during a school presentation she gave in 1990 on gay-hate crime⁴⁸ when [REDACTED] and others marked presentation papers with 'PSK'.

1661. [REDACTED] was charged along with co-offenders with the assault of [REDACTED] in Moore Park in March 2002. [REDACTED] and his associates are not linked by NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly by offence or association.

1662. [REDACTED] also came to the same notice of Ms Thompson and in a statement to police in May 2002 he told police that 'PSK' was used by a group

⁴⁴ Stm of Page para.418,419

⁴⁵ Stm of Sue Thompson/Page para.39

⁴⁶ Stm of [REDACTED]/Page para.641

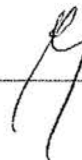
⁴⁷ Stm of [REDACTED]/Page para.468

⁴⁸ Stm of Sue Thompson/Page para.465-468

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

from Randwick/Coogee and that he did not know what it stood for⁴⁹. [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED] is not linked by NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly by offence or association.

1663. A search of police systems for the 'tags' or phrases associated with Manly, including 'Da Manly Boys' did not identify any.

1664. There is no evidence or information in Taradale holdings that the 'Bondi Boys' frequented the Northern Beaches or Manly areas. [REDACTED], a person convicted of Mr Rattanaajaturathaporn's murder in 1990 at Bondi, made a statement at the 2003 Taradale inquest that as a youth he mainly surfed in the Bondi/Tamarama and Wollongong areas and makes a general comment about having surfed everywhere on the eastern seaboard, which may include Manly.

1665. In the 1980's and 1990's [REDACTED] was known to local police as a high risk offender of crimes of violence upon a broad range of victims. He associated with members of the so-called 'Bondi Boys' and Taradale proposed that he was a group leader. Taradale suspect him in the serious assault, recorded earlier, on [REDACTED] in 1989 and the assault of [REDACTED] at Darlinghurst in 1991.

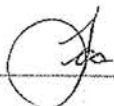
1666. In 1996 [REDACTED] was charged by Bondi Police with being an accessory after the offence of the murder, recorded earlier, of [REDACTED] at Bondi a non gay-hate motivated offence. The offence occurred on a street in an apparent unprovoked assault and [REDACTED]'s girlfriend was a witness. [REDACTED] died from being hit by a bus in the course of the assault.

1667. [REDACTED] has not been charged with a gay-hate crime. [REDACTED] is not linked by NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly by offence or association.

1668. [REDACTED] is an associate of [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] was investigated and charged by local police for the assault of a gay man, [REDACTED], at Darlinghurst in 1991.

⁴⁹ Stm of [REDACTED] /Page para.470

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



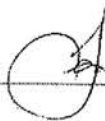
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1669. [REDACTED] is not linked by NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly by offence or association.
1670. [REDACTED] 18 old, and his co-offenders [REDACTED], 18 old, and [REDACTED], 17 old, were arrested in July 1988 for a robbery with a knife of a man on a train in the Newcastle area. They stole \$15 from the victim and returned \$5 to him at his request. This was [REDACTED]'s first charge. During that arrest [REDACTED] told police that he was part of a group whose members originated in the Hornsby area and who identified themselves as the so called 'Blacks Have Style' ('BHS') group. Group members had to be of Aboriginal or Islander heritage and used knives to threatened victims. [REDACTED] told police that over the past two months the group had frequented the public toilets in Fitzroy Gardens, Kings Cross for the purpose of robbing gay men. Information provided by [REDACTED] did not allow police to identify any victim and he purportedly only knew the other gang members by nick names⁵⁰. [REDACTED] and his named associates are not linked by NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly by offence or association.
1671. Investigations by Taradale included re-interviews and covert operations reaffirming known intelligence that in the late 1980's and early 1990's groups were involved in multiple unidentified assault and robbery offences in and around Bondi and the city on a broad range of victims. Their victims included gay men, and members of the group expressed anti-gay sentiments, and frequented the Marks Park area. The group was known to regularly congregate and commit crimes in Bondi beach, streets and park environs, Darlinghurst, Kings Cross.
1672. The officer in charge of Taradale, retired Detective Sergeant Stephen Page (Mr Page) wrote a report for the Johnson family which includes that offenders that came to the attention of Taradale were not known to offend in the northern beaches. This report is included later in this statement.

⁵⁰ P342 General Information Form 18/07/88

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1673. Observations of the Taradale and related investigations

1674. Taradale and the Taradale inquest are relied upon heavily by the Johnson family in promoting the case that Scott was murdered and that gay-hate crimes were routinely neglected by police and ignored by the community in the 1980's and 1990's. Correspondence in which these beliefs are apparent are referred to later in this statement. The Johnson family have informed us that they have access to over 3000 pages of Taradale documents. They are not an interested party in that matter and how they came to have the documents is unclear.

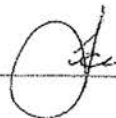
1675. Key witnesses in Taradale, Mr Page, Ms Sue Thompson, and Mr Tomsen, are part of what Mr Johnson refers to as his 'investigation team'. They have each produced documents and appeared in media in support of the Johnson family's belief.

1676. Taradale and its purported connection to the death of Scott has fuelled many sensational headlines and media stories. Some inaccuracies, misrepresentations and uninformed criticism has resulted and increased community fear.


1677. It is for these reason that it is relevant to look more fully into aspects of Taradale.

1678. The 2005 coronial findings assert that, "*Marks Park was a known area for brutal attacks on homosexual males*". Presuming that this refers to the time of Mr Warren's disappearance and Mr Russell's death 1989, the actual evidence is that by November 1989 when the body of Mr Warren was discovered, the only violent offence identified is the assault upon [REDACTED]. It is relevant to note that it is not recorded as a gay-hate assault as [REDACTED] did not identify as a gay man and did not report any gay-hate words or actions by the two adult offenders. It of course may be case that [REDACTED] was actually gay and/or presumed to be gay by the offenders. However, if there are no indicators of a gay-hate motive then how are police at that time to know that Marks Park is a place of attacks on homosexual males?

Witness:

_____ 

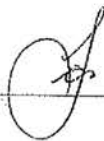
Signature:

_____ 
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1679. Similarly, the 1989 knowledge of police regarding Mr Mattaini's 1985 disappearance, was that he was a reported missing person, with positive evidence of suicidal ideation on two occasions. There was a suggestion that he trained in the area of Marks Park, though his friends did not believe that he used gay beats. The 2005 coronial inquest was not able to specify the place of his disappearance/presumed death and did not find that it resulted from gay-hate violence in Marks Park.
1680. By the time of that inquest findings being delivered in 2005 however, a pattern of violence in east Sydney and Marks Park, Bondi, had emerged and been investigated by police. Perhaps it is the later knowledge that the Coroner refers to in her statement and which was relied upon to make her findings of probable violence.
1681. The coronial findings also state, *"Many of the Marks Park victims that reported to police, told of hearing their assailants threatening to throw them off the cliff face."* Evidence of this occurring is the occasion of the serious assault and robbery by [REDACTED] in December 1989.
1682. This is not an insignificant matter when the statement by the Coroner continues in these terms, *"There is no doubt that at the time of Mr Warren's and Mr Mattaini's disappearance, and Mr Russell's death , that (throwing victims off cliffs) was a modus operandi of some gay hate assailants. This strongly supports the probability that Mr Warren, Mr Mattaini and Mr Russell met their deaths this way."*
1683. When Coroner Milledge heard the evidence in 2003 and delivered her findings in 2005 she was critical of the original investigations. The Johnson family and media have drawn a parallel between those criticisms and what they observe as the investigation into the death of Scott. Simply put, there is a belief that if Mr Warren's and Mr Russell's investigations were as poor as the Coroner described then might this be true of Scott's investigation? Furthermore, are those investigations proof that in the late 1980's there was a systematic failure of police

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

attitude and procedure towards gay-related crimes? To lend some perspective on these comparative concerns, the following information is provided.

1684. Regarding the 1989 investigation into the missing person Mr Ross Warren, the formal destruction of documents and a lack of records pertaining to their destruction were unable to be located for the Taradale Inquest which frustrated the inquest process. The circumstances of Mr Warren disappearance and records available to the court included: the formal missing persons report when Mr Warren's friends reported him missing at Paddington Police; the broadcast of a State-wide police message of the disappearance; the submission of a Crime Information Report to central records for trend analysis; the release to the media of information and a photograph of Mr Warren; the formal recording of property seized by police; the collection of formal statements about Mr Warren's last movements, associations, emotional wellbeing (which included opinion statements by friends that included both a disinclination to suicide ideation and a statement by him that he felt like "slashing his wrists"), relationship problems, and inquiries by police described as "thorough" by inquest counsel of apparently unreliable reports of Mr Warren being alive⁵¹.

1685. Also canvassing was conducted in the area of Marks Park and the location of Mr Warren's car; a search was conducted of Mr Warren's flat in Wollongong; his vehicle and relevant contents was seized for fingerprinting but only the fingerprints of Mr Warren were located on items. His health and dental records were also obtained. 1989 records of searches by police rescue, air-wing and water police were unable to be located for the Taradale Inquest.

1686. There is no record of this matter having been reported to the Coroner as a missing person presumed to be dead by police and therefore a timely inquest did not take place. Efforts by Mr Warren's mother to finalise her son's estate led to the coronial process in 2003. The Coroner concluded with very strong criticism of this investigation and the proposition that a more adequate investigation into the

⁵¹ Inquest transcription W1894 116/03 YG-A page 14 & 15.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

death of Mr Warren may have prevented the death four months later of Mr Russell.

1687. The investigation into the death of Mr Russell also drew criticism from the Coroner Milledge when she gave her findings in 2005. No fingernail scrapings were taken during Mr Russell's post mortem and no transcription of the first inquest proceeding in 1990 was available.
1688. Hair strands collected by police at the scene from the back of Mr Russell's hand were thereafter unable to be located. At the Taradale Inquest, photographs of the hair strands in situ on the back of Mr Russell's hand and photographs of his head showing his own hair growth were reviewed by another Forensic Pathologist, Doctor Cala, who was called to give evidence in the permanent absence of the original pathologist. Doctor Cala expressed the view that the hairs were human, appeared to have been 'tugged out', and did not appear to belong to Mr Russell. It is relevant to note that in 1989 there was visual comparison only of hairs and fibres available and that forensic DNA testing was still many years from reality in Australia.
1689. I have been unable to find any questions put to Doctor Cala or another expert which clarified the possibility of whether hairs tugged from the head of an offender on the cliff top would likely remain in place on the hand of Mr Warren while he fell 11.6 metres and after impact. Doctor Cala is certain that Mr Russell would have died on impact⁵² and therefore was unable to move from the position in which his body is photographed. There was also a period of up to ten hours after the alleged assault and before the body was discovered during which the hairs, or part thereof at least, are presumed to have remained on the hand. Easy and popular public and animal access to this area of walkway and rock ledge may also be relevant to take into account.
1690. In 2014 police consulted Ms Elizabeth Brooks, Senior Forensic Scientist in the Biology Team, Forensics, Australian Federal Police. She holds a Master of Applied Science in Forensic Hair Examination, University of Canberra 2007. The

⁵² 2003 Taradale Inquest transcription

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



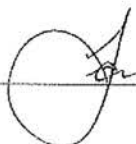
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


purpose of her examination was to determine the nature of the material located on the hand of the deceased, John Alan Russell, from an original photograph taken of the body in situ, and an original photograph of the hair on the hand in close-up. Stereo microscopy was applied to the photographs and Ms Brooks provides in a report and email her opinion that includes;

1691. The material located on the hand of the deceased is most likely to be a clump of visually brown coloured hairs. The characteristic shaft profile attributed to pubic hair is not present. The strands were not consistent with textile fibres.
1692. The deceased had visually brown head hair, and as such the hair on the hand is unremarkable in that they could have come from the deceased's own scalp.
1693. It is not possible to determine the time or method by which the hairs were transferred onto the deceased's hand. The poor resolution of the photographs, even under microscopy, did not allow a determination as to the presence of a hair root (to assist with DNA profiling), or if they had been cut, broken off, or tugged out.
1694. Various studies are referred to including a 1996 study of 'fibre persistence on skin under open-air conditions'. This study concluded that the persistence of fibres on the skin is possible for up to eleven (11) days under open air conditions where wind velocity and precipitation are low. There are no studies of the persistence of hair on the skin during a fall and upon fatal impact.
1695. At the 2003 Taradale inquest Doctor Cala also describes the position of the body as unusual for a fall. The police photographs recorded the head being closer to the cliff and the legs being closer to the ocean. At inquest Doctor Cala says that in his experience at The Gap and North Head, the reverse position of the head and feet is usual. He concludes that the unusual position of Mr Russell's body may be the result of having been thrown. Doctor Cala's advice in the matter of the death of Scott was referred to above at paragraph 73.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1696. Taradale and the Taradale Inquest records the assault or murder of a number of men saying that they are all gay men⁵³. For the record, of those referred to at the inquest [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] did not describe themselves as gay and nothing reported by them allows us to determine that. It is important to respect their stated position. It is however open to us to suspect that due to the location of a particular incident, such as inner city parks, that the offender may have presumed that they were gay.


1697. Records supporting that in the late 1980's and early 1990's in the eastern suburbs and eastern beach areas of Sydney that (i) crimes of violence were reported by gay men to police, and (ii) police responded by identifying suspects, charging and convicting offenders. The police response included local police and criminal investigation specialist police from the Major Crime Squad South who categorised these crimes as all occurring in the 'inner city'. By 1991⁵⁴ those police investigations had: identified nine (9) victims of gay-hate violence (Johnson, Rattanjurathaporn, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] Warren, Russell, [REDACTED] Tonks, [REDACTED]); leading to the prosecution of thirteen (13) offenders ([REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]) for four (4) offences (Johnson, Rattanjurathaporn, [REDACTED] Tonks); and identified additional possible suspects in five (5) cases ([REDACTED], [REDACTED] Johnson, Warren, [REDACTED]). These records support that police were active in the indentifying and investigating gay-hate related violence in the late 1980's and early 1990's.

1698. Taradale were dedicated to re-interviewing and obtaining second and third statements from a number of witnesses including police (current and retired) several years after their original involvement. It appears that a number of these witnesses were not provided with their original statements or reports which created a situation that, whilst many general and some specific details are recalled, unsurprisingly much more is not recalled. Taradale records these

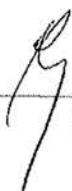
⁵³ Inquest transcript W1894 116/03 YG-A page 8

⁵⁴ COPS/police report by MCSS10/08/1991

Witness: _____



Signature: _____


 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

inconsistencies in detail for the inquest. I have been unable to identify a forensic purpose for testing the memories of witnesses on events that occurred and were recorded up to ten years previously. The effect however is to unreasonably lower the confidence in the material as a whole.

1699. Taradale provides to the inquest significant detail on covert methodology regarding building and telephone monitoring as well as undercover methodology that is not in the public interest to re-disclose on the occasion of the current investigation into Scott.


1700. Taradale claims that [REDACTED] identified [REDACTED] as one of a group that assaulted him at Marks Park⁵⁵. My reading of the facts is that the first photograph identification procedure did not result in [REDACTED] identifying [REDACTED] or any person. The second photograph identification procedure resulted in [REDACTED]'s image being signed by [REDACTED] as "similar" to one of the offenders. The third photograph identification procedure resulted in the image of [REDACTED] being identified by [REDACTED]. It is possible that the second identification process would be inadmissible. It is probable that the third identification process is inadmissible. It is appropriate to record that [REDACTED] was not positively identified by [REDACTED].

1701. A Taradale covert affidavit in 2001 relating to [REDACTED] records an incorrect association link between the 'Bondi Boys' and the group who murder Mr Johnson at Alexandria in 1990. This was corrected at inquest and may affirm a 'territorial' attitude of anti-social youths in those areas of Sydney.

1702. Taradale forms the view that Mr Warren was known to attend gay beats for sexual liaisons and it relies in part on Mr Warren's conviction for an act of gross indecency at a gay beat in 1985. The statement concludes, "*The relevance of this (conviction) information to this investigation is that Warren attended gay beats for sexual liaison, as opposed to suicidal motives.*" This is a flawed conclusion as it generalises single purpose usage of gay beat areas which is not reliable or factual. The conclusion is not relied upon by the current investigation.

⁵⁵ Stm of Page para.406,613

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1703. **Lessons from Taradale for comparison to the death of Scott**

1704. The Taradale inquest findings include, *"Beats are a given in any community. Police must be aware of the problems associated with them and the violent criminal behaviours that they attract."*

1705. Physical features of another sea-side gay beat

1706. Access and egress often influences where offenders will operate as well as familiarity with the surroundings. Lighting and natural features will be chosen by the offender to their advantage, such as concealment, particularly when some planning has taken place.

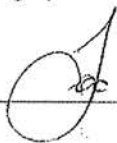
1707. The Marks Park gay beat was described at inquest as being on a headland and *"The park is predominantly open space with a walkway on its eastern side travelling adjacent to the ocean front. The park is bordered by Mark Lane to the west and the area is residential with a mix of detached dwellings and unit blocks. The park itself is somewhat elevated with steps in several locations for easy access to the coastal walkway."* North Head is not open and it is not easily navigated or accessed. Concealment is offered by the thick vegetation. There is no artificial lighting.

1708. Marks Park was used during the day as a popular walking track and at night it was a "very busy and popular" gay beat⁵⁶. One Marks Park gay beat user claims that a normal night would see between eighty and one hundred gay men at the park.⁵⁷ North Head is described as daytime beat with low patronage beat when compared with others in Sydney. An estimate of twenty (20) gay beat users at any one time is given.

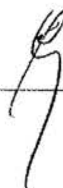
1709. A NSWPF Bias Crime Unit report explains these aspects further later in this statement.

⁵⁶ 2003 Taradale inquest findings
⁵⁷ Stm of [REDACTED]/Page para.332

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

**Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson**

1710. Characteristics of the gay-hate offences at Marks Park, Bondi and other eastern suburbs

1711. The characteristics of the gay-hate offences identified in the 1980's and 1990's and as recorded earlier in this section, are relevant for comparison to the circumstances of Scott's death. The characteristics cited here are from identified gay-hate murders and assaults for which there is a conviction thereby the characteristics are factually based. Added to this are the uncorroborated reports and intelligence gathered, such as that by Taradale, though these characteristics are unconfirmed.

1712. To this end the following information and evidence has been drawn from NSWPF databases, investigation systems, and coronial records. Most of the characteristics identified occur on a single occasion.

1713. The characteristics are:

1714. Gay beats are identified because violence was reported to police;

1715. Gay beats are identified because real or perceived indecent male-only behaviour was reported;

1716. Gay beats primarily operated out of public toilets and parks;

1717. Gay-hate crimes are committed at gay beats primarily those operating out of public toilets and parks;

1718. The prevalence of gay-hate crime is influenced by the availability of licensed venues and restaurants for a gay clientele⁵⁸;

1719. Venues for gay clientele from the 1980's was dominate in east Sydney in Oxford Street, Darlinghurst, Surry Hills, and the Kings Cross areas;

1720. Consequentially a concentration of gay residences developed in east Sydney residential suburbs, thoroughfares, and gay beats;

⁵⁸ Tomsen research

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

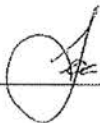
1721. The most numerous offenders and suspects for serial or suspected serial gay-hate crimes resided in east Sydney and committed offences in east Sydney;
1722. The most numerous offences in east Sydney were committed in the vicinity of a public footpath between Tamarama and Bondi which serviced as access to Marks Park, Mackenzie Point, and Bondi Beach. Also the eastern suburbs of Alexandria, Moore Park, Centennial Park, Kings Cross, and Redfern;
1723. Offenders who resided and/or offended in east Sydney also offended in the Bondi area and vice versa.
1724. East Sydney residential demographic contrasted distinctly high and low socio-economic groups. East Sydney and Bondi recorded higher than average levels of anti-social behaviour, including violence;
1725. Parks recorded with the highest number of gay-hate offences are in eastern Sydney being, Moore Park, Centennial Park, and Marks Park;
1726. Marks Park, Bondi, was well known to users, police and the community. It is described as a very busy and popular gay beat⁵⁹;
1727. In open and large park situations gay-hate offenders spread out to attract individual attention from a gay man who would then be attacked by the group⁶⁰;
1728. Mr Rattanajurathaporn was chased over a seaside cliff at Marks Park; Mr Russell and Mr Warren were probably thrown over a seaside cliff at Marks Park; [REDACTED] was threatened with being thrown over a seaside cliff at Marks Park;
1729. A unknown victim was the subject of a non-fatal assault when he was thrown over a ledge of approximately 1.5 metres in height in the vicinity of Marks Park⁶¹;
1730. The offender [REDACTED] boasts to an inmate that he was involved in about one hundred group assaults on gay men in and around Bondi⁶²;

⁵⁹ Taradale Inquest

⁶⁰ Stm of POI [REDACTED]/Page para.141

⁶¹ POI [REDACTED] in covert recording

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

**Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson**

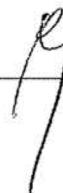
- 1731. Crimes were committed by groups of mostly males but some females⁶³.
- 1732. Membership of offender groups was mixed and undefined but included sharing the same high school, or having a shared cultural heritage⁶⁴. The most routine membership was based on age and locations frequented;
- 1733. Most offenders are juveniles⁶⁵ in the mid to late teens but some apparent gay-hate assaults were committed by adults⁶⁶;
- 1734. Offenders targeted homosexual men on grounds of purported social mores⁶⁷, robbery and violent thrill seeking;
- 1735. Gay men indicated their interest in a homosexual encounter at Marks Park, Bondi, by shaking coins, keys, or by direct eye contact⁶⁸;
- 1736. Offenders believed that gay victims were less likely to report the crime⁶⁹ as they would not want to be known as openly gay or as a gay beat user;
- 1737. Victims were routinely physically assaulted by way of punching with fists and kicking with legs. A victim on the ground would have their head kicked or jumped on⁷⁰;
- 1738. Weapons were sometimes known to be used. Offenders in the murder of Mr Rattanajurathaporn used a hammer and stick. An offender in the assault of [REDACTED] used a metal pipe. A person of interest claimed in a covert recording that an offence was committed using a sledgehammer⁷¹. A knife was used in an offence on [REDACTED] [REDACTED]⁷²;

⁶² Inquest transcript W1894116/03 YG-B page 44.
⁶³ POI [REDACTED] MCSS/Victim [REDACTED] Taradale
⁶⁴ POI [REDACTED] MCSS/Johnson murder MCCS
⁶⁵ MCSS Bignell 1991/Sue Thompson
⁶⁶ Victim [REDACTED] Taradale
⁶⁷ POI [REDACTED] MCSS
⁶⁸ Witness [REDACTED] / Taradale
⁶⁹ POI [REDACTED] / Taradale
⁷⁰ POI [REDACTED] MCSS
⁷¹ POI [REDACTED] - inquest transcript W1894116/03 YG-B page 54.
⁷² Stm of [REDACTED] / Taradale

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

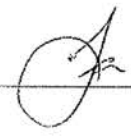



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

- 1739. The assault could result in the offender having the victim's blood on him⁷³;
- 1740. Some non-fatal assaults included additional circumstance of aggravation such as; putting out a cigarette butt on the skin of a victim⁷⁴, including one victim who was told by an offender to put out a cigarette on his penis⁷⁵; pulling at head hair or pulling off the wig of the victim⁷⁶; urinating on personal property of the victim⁷⁷; tying the victim up⁷⁸;
- 1741. Many assaults occurred when the offenders thought the victim was engaging in, or about to engage in, a homosexual act⁷⁹ or the offenders thought that the victims had slighted them⁸⁰;
- 1742. Two victims were targeted more than once by the same offenders⁸¹;
- 1743. Offenders routinely use demeaning words towards the victim such as 'poofter', 'dirty man'⁸², and 'faggot' during the assault⁸³;
- 1744. Instructions are given by offenders to the victim by the offender/s such as "stop that", "don't move", and demands such as "what are you?"⁸⁴ in an attempt to have the victim confirm aloud that he is homosexual;
- 1745. Victims were usually robbed of money or other personal items⁸⁵. The victim may have their shoes searched by the offenders⁸⁶. Offenders may ransack the victim's car if it was parked nearby⁸⁷. An offender threw the car keys of a victim

⁷³ POI [redacted] - inquest transcript W1894116/03 YG-B page 48
⁷⁴ POI [redacted] Inquest transcript W1894116/03 YG-B page 48.
⁷⁵ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁷⁶ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁷⁷ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁷⁸ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁷⁹ POI [redacted] /Page para.129,130
⁸⁰ POI [redacted] MCSS /Victim [redacted] Taradale
⁸¹ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁸² Inquest transcript W1894116/03 YG-B page 48.
⁸³ POI [redacted] MCSS/victim [redacted] MCSS/victim [redacted] Taradale
⁸⁴ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁸⁵ POI [redacted] MCSS
⁸⁶ Victim [redacted] MCSS
⁸⁷ POI [redacted] MCSS

Witness: _____


Signature: _____

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

over a cliff and into the water⁸⁸; offences routinely included robbery including large and small amounts of money⁸⁹;

1746. Victims targeted could be physically strong⁹⁰;

1747. Gay beat users attended gay beats on occasions when no violence is inflicted upon them⁹¹. One beat user used the Marks Park gay beat up to ten times in all and had not become a victim of or witnessed to violence⁹²;

1748. Offences were committed at night and not in the rain⁹³;

1749. Persons charged or suspected of Gay-hate offences

1750. Taradale and east Sydney offences


1751. Offenders and suspects for gay-hate crimes that have been identified within the investigation holdings of the Major Crime Squad South and Taradale have been reviewed. With the exception of convicted gay-hate youth, [REDACTED], making a general comment that he surfed the 'eastern seaboard', none are linked within those holdings or within the NSWPF systems to the Northern Beaches or Manly areas by crime or other association. As recorded earlier, former Detective Page of Taradale also made that assessment in a report for the Johnson family.


1752. Person of interest [REDACTED]

1753. [REDACTED] was convicted of maliciously wounding [REDACTED] (also known as [REDACTED]) at North Head on 4 February 1986. [REDACTED] pleaded guilty to the offence and served a term of continuous imprisonment from [REDACTED]. He is therefore not a suspect in the death of Scott.

1754. Police have reviewed the case for similarities and co-offenders. The accepted court facts of the case as they appear in the judgement are that on 4

⁸⁸ POI [REDACTED] MCSS
⁸⁹ POI [REDACTED] - inquest transcript W1894116/03 YG-B page 49 & 52.
⁹⁰ Stm about Mr Russell Taradale
⁹¹ Victim [REDACTED] Taradale
⁹² Stm of [REDACTED] Taradale
⁹³ POI [REDACTED] MCSS

Witness: _____


Signature: _____

 P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

February 1986 [REDACTED], who was 21 years old at the time, had consensual homosexual intercourse with the victim at disused army bunker at North Head after they met a short time before on a nearby beach. After the sexual act [REDACTED] used a knife he was carrying to stab the victim in the back. The victim made his way by foot to the nearby Manly Hospital where the knife was removed and he was admitted for three days.

1755. At the time of committing the offence [REDACTED] was living a solitary life [REDACTED] at North Head. For the purpose of sentencing he was assessed as intellectually handicapped and probably schizophrenic.

1756. The victim, [REDACTED], was approached by police as part of the 2011 re-investigation by Manly Police and told them that he had no information to assist them and that he found reliving the matter was distressing⁹⁴. [REDACTED] has not been interviewed as part of the current investigation.

1757. There is no information or evidence that [REDACTED] was part of a group who committed offences, including gay-hate offences. The site of the disused army bunkers thought to be the scene of [REDACTED]'s crime is over 300 metres away as-the-crow-flies from the site where Scott's clothes were located.

1758. Person of interest [REDACTED] and the [REDACTED]:

1759. [REDACTED], born on 7 September 1971, was 17 years at the time of Scott's death. He lived in Narrabeen with his older brother [REDACTED] who was convicted of the murder of [REDACTED] on 2 September 1991 which occurred at the Narrabeen house on 7 August 1991. He had been murdered at the Narrabeen house and his body was buried in the front yard.

1760. [REDACTED]'s police record represents an extremely violent history, including police victims. His convictions include street offences, malicious injury, break, enter and stealing, and robbery with wounding. He offended in the upper northern beaches, Balgowlah, and Darlinghurst.

1761. On 25 August 1986 at 12.15am, [REDACTED] and co-offenders – 16 year old [REDACTED], and 16 year old [REDACTED] went to the Totem Shopping Centre in Condamine Street, Balgowlah. The toilets at the front of this centre were known

⁹⁴ Report by Det. Wilson to Coroner in 2012

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

to police as a gay beat. The victim (), an adult male went to those toilets and when he was in a cubicle and offenders threw a glass light bulb into the cubicle. As the victim tried to leave the toilet he was abuse and threatened. chased him to his car and took hold of him and started to punch him to the body. called to , "Where is your knife?" and a knife was thrown to . On hearing this the victim dropped his car keys as he ran away, and the co-offenders took the victims car and drove it to Narrabeen. , , and were arrested later that day and charged with robbery with striking and take and use conveyance. and have no other criminal or intelligence records.

1762. On 21 April 1987, was arrested at Green Park, Paddington, with his younger brother, , 12 years old, and co-offender , 16 years old, after they had committed two offences on homosexual men. The first offence was about 11.30pm on 20 April 1987 and the victim was who was punched to the head and had \$45 cash stolen. The second offence was on the same night at 12.05pm. The victim, , was stabbed in the leg and received a superficial wound. He was also robbed of his watch and \$12 cash. They were arrested nearby by police and all were charged with robbery in company and robbery with wounding. The stolen watch from the victims was found in the possession of , but the cash had been spent at Kings Cross. According to , the three of them spoke of "bashing some faggots" before committing the offences.

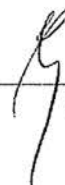
1763. He also has offences recorded for assaults of youths, at schools and streets in Mona Vale, not related to a gay-hate motive. On 12 July 1988 he was spoken to by police as he walked in a public street with a stick. He told police that he was carrying the stick for protection and that he had been in trouble for "poofter bashing". He did not commit an offence on that occasion.

1764. On 24 and 25 September 1988, was arrested at Mona Vale for assaulting police and separately at a residential street in Mona Vale, for an assault and robbery of two teenage victims. He is described as dressing with the appearance of a 'punk'. These arrests also led to him being charged with an

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

assault and robbery which had occurred on a train in April 1988. [REDACTED] was wearing the watch that he had stolen from the victim at the time of arrest.

1765. He has 1989 consorting and intelligence records for frequenting the Narrabeen bus terminus a known gay beat. His associates on one occasion on 12 August 1989 were [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1971, who has a 1989 conviction for an assault occasioning actual bodily harm for which he received a control order, common assault, and domestic violence matters with a female. He has an entry for frequenting the Middle Creek Reserve, Narrabeen; [REDACTED] born 5 February 1971 who has entries for drugs, common assault and street fighting; [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1972, who has no criminal history; [REDACTED] [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1971, who has one entry for frequenting the Narrabeen bus terminus (no offence recorded) and an extensive drug and property offence history in the northern beaches.

1766. [REDACTED] more frequently than not, committed when he was by himself. Those associated with [REDACTED] who also have police entries for assault and robbery offences in northern beaches public streets in the late 1980's were [REDACTED] born in 1971, [REDACTED], born in 1973, and [REDACTED] born in 1969.

1767. Media articles printed at the time of [REDACTED]'s funeral in 1991 suggest that he was what is commonly called a [REDACTED]. The brief of evidence, police notes, and crime scene photographs have been reviewed and it was observed that a swastika flag was located in the house, but no written or visible record pertaining to homosexual hatred, linked offences or other matters.

1768. Inquiries with the Commonwealth Attorney Generals Department and the NSWPF systems did not identify a group called [REDACTED]. Those inquiries did identify that [REDACTED] was a member of 'National Action' (a nationalist political party). There is anecdotal evidence that [REDACTED] and his associates called themselves the [REDACTED] in the 1980's.

1769. Person of interest [REDACTED]:

1770. [REDACTED] was charged in 1987 with his brother [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] for the Darlinghurst gay-hate offences against [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] (recorded above). He has several offences for break, enter and stealing offences. His co-

Witness:

Signature:

_____ P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

offender in break and enters was [REDACTED]. Stolen goods were from school buildings, or pushbikes and watches. Other associates are in 1988 are [REDACTED] born in 1972, and in 1989 it was [REDACTED] born in 1972.

1771. On 16 September 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED], born 2 October 1974. He was 14 years old when Scott died. Police records indicate that [REDACTED] was charged with the 1987 Green Park robbery of two gay men along with his brother, [REDACTED], and associate [REDACTED]. There are no other gay motivated offences recorded. The other violence related offences are domestic related.
1772. [REDACTED] told police that as he was growing up he was aware of his brother [REDACTED]'s commission of assaults upon gay men. He said that by the time that he was fifteen years old in 1989 he ([REDACTED]) had a girlfriend and had moved out of the Narrabeen family home and was living in Dee Why. He did not socialise with [REDACTED] or [REDACTED]'s group of friends.
1773. When asked about his knowledge and attendance at Manly and North Head, [REDACTED] stated that in the early 1990's he used to socialise at Manly bars, the Steyne Hotel, and the old pool hall. On occasion he would drive up to North Head with mates and smoke joints. He says that he never went to North Head with his brother [REDACTED].
1774. [REDACTED] indicated the areas he went to at North Head where the disused army bunker which is situated at the very southern end of the road on North Head and did not go to any area not accessed by the road. [REDACTED] is unaware if his brother [REDACTED] ever went to North Head.
1775. [REDACTED] believes that every public toilet, every park and Sydney city was a gay beat in the 1980's.
1776. When asked how they got around in the 1980's he said that they either caught the bus or rode a push bike.
1777. [REDACTED]'s knowledge of his brother [REDACTED]'s other offences upon gay men was that they occurred at night and generally Friday to Monday. He said [REDACTED]

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

was a natural born leader among his group but became mixed up with the wrong people.

1778. ██████ suggested that at the time of his death, ██████ had started to clean up his act. He was playing football and started to grow his hair long. He was in the front yard of the Narrabeen house when ██████'s body was dug up by the police.
1779. ██████ stated that he was not involved in the death of any person. He did not know anything about the death of Scott.
1780. There is a 1990 police intelligence report that ██████ told police that ██████ ██████ was his current guardian and he lived with him at Narrabeen Park Parade. ██████ is named as a 'source' in documents provided by the Johnson family and he has given information implicating the ██████-█████ group. When interviewed by police, ██████ did not disclose a prior association with ██████, an apparent well known violent offender with gay-hate motives. The interview of ██████ is recorded later in the statement.
1781. Person of interest ██████:
1782. ██████, born ██████ 1971, was 17 years old when Scott died and lived at Mona Vale. He was charged as a co-offender with ██████ in the 1987 Greens Park, Darlinghurst, robbery offences upon two gay men. He pleaded guilty and was sentenced to five hundred hours community service. He has no other police records or intelligence related to robbery or violence against any person. He has no other records for associating with ██████ or ██████.
1783. On 5 August 2013 police interviewed ██████ and he stated that in the 1980's he associated with ██████ and his brother ██████. He attended Narrabeen High School and left at the end of Year 10 in 1987. He began and completed a mechanic's apprenticeship.
1784. ██████ told police that he assaulted gay men on three occasions in the 1980's and on each occasion he was in the company of ██████. Each offence was in the Moore Park area and it was on the third occasion that he was arrested.

Witness:



Signature:



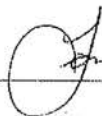
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

This is the only time that he has been arrested. Police believe that this is a reference to the Green Park arrest which is within walking distance of Moore Park. He is of the mistaken belief that [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were not charged.

1785. On another earlier occasion, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] went to the Gay & Lesbian Mardi Gras parade to assault gay men in the Moore Park area. On the three occasions when he assaulted gay men, it was late at night, being after 10pm. He stated that to commit the offences he left the house unbeknown to his parents.
1786. When his father found out about the arrest he was grounded for six months. [REDACTED] stated that the arrest caused him to 'clean up his act' and he stopped associating with [REDACTED] or [REDACTED].
1787. When he mixed with [REDACTED], [REDACTED] would boast of having committed other assaults on gay men. He is unable to provide any details of the offences including his own or those that [REDACTED] said he had committed. He does not know if [REDACTED] committed the offences with any other person.
1788. In the late 1980's he was aware of the gay beat in Moore Park and Rushcutters Bay but is unaware that there was a gay beat at North Head, Manly. He said that he remembers going to North Head when he was 14 years old with a older youth called Richard who did burnouts.
1789. [REDACTED] remembers [REDACTED] associating with another Narrabeen High School student, [REDACTED]. He remembers [REDACTED] associating with a [REDACTED] and also with a group of Italian men from a fruit and vegetable shop at Narrabeen. Another school student, [REDACTED], is described as a very violent person who would assault [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] did not associate with [REDACTED]. These people are mentioned later in this statement.
1790. [REDACTED] was asked about other people who are mentioned later in this statement. He knew that [REDACTED] was two years below him at Narrabeen

Witness:



Signature:




P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

High School and did not associate with him. He does not know [REDACTED] but knows his brother [REDACTED]. Other names put to him are unknown to him.

1791. He refers to himself as being a [REDACTED] in the 1980's. [REDACTED] stated that he had nothing to do with the death of Scott.
1792. He resides with his wife and two children and works in the field of aged care and disability.
1793. Person of interest [REDACTED]:
1794. On 17 October 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1972. He was 16 years old at the time of Scott's death. [REDACTED] has a police record that includes minor assault, offensive behaviour, alcohol and drug related offences. He has no record or intelligence entries for gay related offences.
1795. He was interviewed because of an Information Report 50589304 and his association with [REDACTED] at Narrabeen High School. [REDACTED] said that at high school he associated with [REDACTED] who he called as [REDACTED]. He says he was not a [REDACTED].
1796. In the later 1980's he was living in his family home at Narrabeen. He left Narrabeen High School when he was 14 years and 9 months old. Through school he knows of, but did not socialise with, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], the [REDACTED] brothers and [REDACTED], who will be referred to later in this statement.
1797. He stated that he mostly socialised with [REDACTED] from school. When asked if he knew [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] (also from Narrabeen) he stated that had not heard of them.
1798. He was aware that Deep Creek Reserve, Elanora Heights, and Narrabeen bus terminus were gay beats in the 1980's. He did not know that an area of North Head Manly was a gay beat and has never been there.
1799. [REDACTED] told police that he had no issue with homosexuals as long as they did not try and 'hit on him'.

Witness:



Signature:

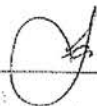


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1800. He said that he had never heard of Scott.
1801. Person of Interest [REDACTED]:
1802. On 3 December 2012 police interviewed [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1971. He was 17 years old at the time of Scott's death.
1803. [REDACTED] was spoken to due to Information Report 50589304 and his association via Narrabeen High School with [REDACTED] and others.
1804. [REDACTED] has a police record for several physical assaults (pub and street fighting), a sexual assault of a female, drug cultivation, malicious damage and offensive language. There are no records or intelligence reports of gay related offences.
1805. He stated that he did get in trouble with the police when he was younger calling himself 'young and stupid' but he was never involved in assaulting gay men. He said that he grew up in his family home at [REDACTED] Warriewood with his mother and sister. He went to Narrabeen High School and stated his good mates at that time were [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].
1806. He spent most of his out of school time surfing with those mates. Before his got a drivers' license at 19, he and his mates travelled on buses and did not travel far from the nearby beach area.
1807. He said that he had never been to North Head and never heard of an area of is being a gay beat. He had never heard of anyone going to North Head to assault gay men. He was aware of the gay beats in his Northern Beaches area as being wherever there were public toilets. He stated that was common knowledge when he was a teenager not to go to a public toilet on your own due to the likelihood of being approached by gay man.
1808. He said he knew of the others named in the Information Report but did not socialise with them. He stated it was common knowledge that [REDACTED] would assault gay men but not the others being [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED].

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

██████████. He remembers hearing that ██████████ was involved in a white gang and part of the punk scene.

1809. ██████████ said that he was not friends with ██████████ or ██████████ ██████████. He knew ██████████ as a friend and their mothers' were close. He would not believe that ██████████ would be involved in assaulting gay men. He does not know why he would be reported for being associated with the named people. He is not aware of any vendetta against him.

1810. Person of Interest ██████████:

1811. ██████████, born ██████████ 1971, was interviewed by police on 29 July 2013. He was 16 years old at the time of Scott's death. He was interviewed due to Information Report 50589304 and his association via Narrabeen High School with ██████████.

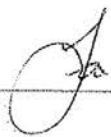
1812. ██████████ has a police record which includes animal cruelty and malicious damage. There are no records or intelligence reports of gay related offences.

1813. ██████████ says that he attended Narrabeen High School and left at the end of Year 10 in 1987. He started a plumbing apprenticeship in January 1988. In the late 1980's he live with his father at Narrabeen. He says that between practising and participating in motocross race meetings he did not generally go out with friends.


1814. He claims that his friend's were in a 'nerdy' group not a ██████████ type that ██████████ was associated with. His closest friends at school were ██████████ and ██████████. ██████████ stated that he knew ██████████ as he was in the same year at high school however he did not consider him a friend and did not associate with him. He stated that he knew ██████████ from school but did not associate with him, ██████████, or ██████████.

1815. ██████████ said that he has been to North Head in Manly but did not know of the gay beat. He recalls seeing a base jumper launch from a cliff in the area

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

however was unable to say when that occurred. He said that he understood that gay beats generally existed in public toilets.

1816. He was aware that [REDACTED] was a [REDACTED] at some stage before he died but closer to his death [REDACTED] looked as though he had cleaned up his act, grown his hair long, and no longer looked like a [REDACTED]

1817. He says that he has no knowledge of the death of Scott or assaults on gay men in general.

1818. Person of Interest [REDACTED]:

1819. [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1971, was interviewed by police on 10 July 2013. He was 17 at the time of Scott's death. His police record includes street assaults and offensive conduct offences between 1991 and 1994. He has no recorded criminal associations.

1820. He was interviewed due to Information Report 50589304 and his association via Narrabeen High School with [REDACTED].

1821. He said that [REDACTED] was in the year above him at high school and he did not consider him to be a friend. He does not believe that [REDACTED] was a [REDACTED]

1822. [REDACTED] was a childhood friend of [REDACTED] as they both attended North Narrabeen Primary School. He describes [REDACTED] as a 'tearaway' who regularly got into fights at parties. He remembers [REDACTED] wearing 'doc marten' boots [REDACTED]. He does not believe that [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] were in the same group at school or socially.

1823. [REDACTED] stated that he and [REDACTED] played football together when they both were living in Narrabeen. He remembers that [REDACTED] was known as a 'poofter basher' in the late 1980's and that he robbed the victims. He did not know the names of [REDACTED]'s group but recalls that some were older than him and of Italian decent.

Witness:



Signature:

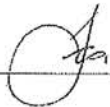


P.S.Young

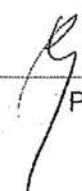
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1824. [REDACTED] recalls an occasion at a football barbeque in Avalon when as a practical joke he was told that one of his gay victims had died as a result of being assaulted. He describes [REDACTED] as being 'beside himself' with worry before he was told that it was a joke. [REDACTED] does not remember a date or other details of this 'joke'.
1825. [REDACTED] saw [REDACTED] wearing a gold watch at one stage and he thought that it would probably be from the proceeds of robbing a gay man.
1826. In 1988 [REDACTED] was working as a pastry cook and it was his first year out of school. He spent his spare time surfing. He says that he was never in a gang or participated in gay assaults. He was unaware that there was a gay beat at North Head. He knew of other gay beats being the Narrabeen public toilets, North Sydney Park and Moore Park.
1827. [REDACTED] had not heard of [REDACTED] or [REDACTED]. He knows of [REDACTED] and that he had a reputation for being a good fighter.
1828. He denied having any knowledge of the death of Scott.
1829. Persons of Interest [REDACTED] Brothers:
1830. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are of Italian origin and ran a fruit shop at Narrabeen in the late 1980's. Their shop was identified as the place where [REDACTED] and others congregated.
1831. On 17 October 2013 police spoke with [REDACTED] regarding the information. [REDACTED] stated that he knew [REDACTED] quite well in the 1980's as [REDACTED] worked for him in his fruit shop. [REDACTED] had been made to leave his family home and asked if he could sleep in the fruit shop truck that was parked behind the shop every night.
1832. [REDACTED] was employed for approximately one year from 1989 to 1990. His tasks included accompanying them to Flemington markets, loading and unloading the truck, and packing shelves. [REDACTED] stated that [REDACTED] was a good kid and was unaware of him being violent. [REDACTED] did not associate with [REDACTED]

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

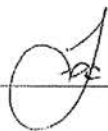

 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

outside of work hours. He thinks that [REDACTED] frequented Benji's, a former bar, in Manly in the 1980's.

1833. [REDACTED] was asked if he knew [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. He told investigators that he knew them but did not socialise with anyone other than his girlfriend at the time.
1834. [REDACTED] was his brother-in-law in the 1980's. He stated that he believed that [REDACTED] assaulted his sister on a number of occasions prior to their breakup. He was aware that [REDACTED] associated with [REDACTED] around that time. He stated that [REDACTED] drove a red HQ Holden Monaro at the time. He had no knowledge of him ever driving a black Holden Commodore. [REDACTED] had no knowledge of [REDACTED] giving car lifts to any of these people, including [REDACTED], [REDACTED] or [REDACTED].
1835. He knew the [REDACTED] brothers, [REDACTED] and a male called [REDACTED] just from being a local shop owner but he was unable to provide any further information about them.
1836. On 17 October 2013 investigators met with [REDACTED]. When they had the fruit shop [REDACTED] worked from 7am to 12pm. He confirmed that [REDACTED] was employed at the shop in the 1980's. He was not aware that [REDACTED] had ever assaulted gays. He had heard about gay bashing in the 1980's in the Northern Beaches however did not recall being told of anyone in particular who was committing these crimes. [REDACTED] stated that was unaware that North Head Manly was a gay beat but knew it was an area where people would go 'parking to make out'. He had no knowledge of his then brother-in-law [REDACTED] giving lifts to any of the youths who congregated at the fruit shop.
1837. [REDACTED] told police that he was very good friends with Tim Bristow from 1970 until his death. He has never heard of [REDACTED] (who claimed to the Johnson family to know Tim Bristow). Robert told police that Bristow was a loner and that it was unlikely that Bristow would have employed a person as

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

young as [REDACTED] would have been at the time. [REDACTED] is referred to later in this statement.

1838. He had no knowledge of a gay beat at North Head. [REDACTED] had not heard of Scott.

1839. Person of Interest [REDACTED]

1840. [REDACTED] was nominated in Crime Stoppers Information Report I51010729 as being involved in assaults upon gay men with [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]. He was interviewed on 20 February 2014. He said that he knew [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] from the Narrabeen High School. He knew by talk at the school that [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] committed assaults generally and that they had a dislike of gay men and they bragged about assaulting them. [REDACTED] remembers them bragging at school about assaulting gay men at Moore Park, Lake Park Narrabeen, Narrabeen bus terminus, and the Narrabeen football field. He does not know how they travelled to the various areas. He has no recollection of [REDACTED] being involved in assaulting gay men.

1841. He left high school in Year 10 in 1986 and started a plumbing apprenticeship. A few years after he left high school he started to socialise with [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and shared a Warriewood house with [REDACTED] from 1989 to 1990. [REDACTED] was working as a roof tiler. They were all able to get into nightclubs by this time and [REDACTED] thinks that they had stopped assaulting people by then as they had other places to spend the time.


1842. He had lived in Manly since 1984 and had lived in the northern beaches area all this life. He was a surfer. He did not know that North Head was a gay beat but knew they were commonly around public toilet areas. When asked [REDACTED] said he knew [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] as the 'Warriewood Wogs'.

1843. He admitted to a lengthy history of assault offences as a young person. He denied being involved in any assaults on gay men and had not heard of the Scott case.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1844. The [REDACTED] Group Line of Inquiry

1845. On 1 January 1987 Manly and North Sydney Police laid charges relative to nine (9) personal violence offences which are or maybe gay-hate related. The offences were committed between December 1986 and January 1987. Three of the offences occurred at seaside locations at Balgowlah Heights in the inner northern beaches, four of the offences occurred at St Leonards Park, North Sydney, and two offences occurred at the Narrabeen Bus Terminus. Those charged were friends from the upper northern beaches and operated as co-offenders in different offences. Those charged were: [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1965; [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1968; [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1969; [REDACTED], born [REDACTED] 1957.

[REDACTED]

1847. [REDACTED] Investigations included [REDACTED] charge and intelligence review, analysis of telephone contact, interviews and reinterviews of persons of interest and associates, and the lawful covert recording of conversations and SMS messages. Covert operations commenced on 17 February 2014 to 28 March 2014 and 40131 telephone activations were monitored.

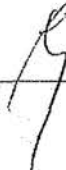
1848. This is a summary of the offences recorded by police;

1849. About 10.30pm on 7 December 1986 at St Leonards Park, North Sydney, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] committed a robbery with striking upon [REDACTED] when he was walking past the rotunda in the park. He suffered a nose injury and soreness and bruising to his arms. He had his watch stolen. St Leonards Park is in a residential area in the lower north shore of Sydney. It was a popular park generally and was also a gay beat. [REDACTED] reported that the offenders called out "Are you a faggot?" and repeatedly called him a "faggot" during the assault.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

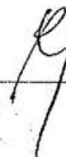
He was hit with a stick, punched and kicked. He ran to a phone box and reported the assault to the police.

1850. About 8pm on 12 December 1986 [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] committed an assault occasioning actual bodily harm at the Narrabeen Bus Terminus, Pittwater Road, Narrabeen. The public toilets at that location were known to police as a gay-beat. The victim was [REDACTED] and he was in a toilet cubicle alone when the door was kicked open and he was called a 'faggot'. As he tried to leave the area he was struck to the head and body by [REDACTED] with what he describes as a steel rod in a paper bag (later found to be a paper bag of drill bits) and punched. The victim fought back with punches, ran to his car and drove away. He was treated in hospital casualty for a cut to the back of his head, bruising and swelling to his eye and jaw, and scratches to his throat and chest.
1851. [REDACTED] reported the assault to police on 13 December 1986. Police recovered the drill bits that [REDACTED] had used to hit [REDACTED] from his home at [REDACTED] North Narrabeen. [REDACTED] had kept them in this bedroom wardrobe.
1852. About 5pm on Wednesday 24 December 1986, at Dobroyd Scenic Drive, Balgowlah Heights, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] assaulted [REDACTED] who was jogging on the public street. Dobroyd Scenic Drive borders the reserve area that leads to Reef Beach. [REDACTED] was pushed to the ground, punched and kicked. [REDACTED] suffered a fractured nose and lacerations to his face and body. [REDACTED] was a Catholic priest at [REDACTED] Manly. Reef Beach was known as a nude sunbaking area that was popular with males. [REDACTED] confessed to this to Manly Police on 31 December 1986.
1853. About 2am on 26 December 1986 at St Leonards Park, North Sydney, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] committed the offence of robbery with striking on [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] was tripped over as he walked in the park, punched and kicked whilst on the ground. The offenders demanded his wallet which he gave them. They then ran off. He reported the assault to police at 1pm on 27 December 1986.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

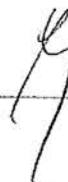
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1854. He suffered an abrasion to his top lip and his wallet and driver's license were stolen. He reported the assault to police on 27 December 1986.
1855. About 10pm on 25 December 1986, [REDACTED], 26 years old, was on Narrabeen Beach when he was punched and kicked by [REDACTED]. On 1 January 1987, [REDACTED] admits the crime to police describing that he observed [REDACTED] masturbating near him. [REDACTED] appears to observe what [REDACTED] was doing for a few minutes before he decides to say, "You bastard, you're sick' and then punched and chased him. He stole [REDACTED]'s car keys but not his car. [REDACTED] was treated in hospital for bruising, grazing and swelling to the face and body.
1856. About 5.20pm on 26 December 1986 at Reef Beach, Balgowlah Heights, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] assaulted and robbed 36 year old, [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] made a statement on 1 January 1987 that he was walking along a bush track when he was punched. He ran away on the track to the beach and got into the water to swim away. One of the dark haired males swam in after him and took hold of his t-shirt and he says, "I was very fearful that he might have drowned me as he kept pushing me under the water". [REDACTED] managed to get back to shore where he was assaulted again. They demanded that he take his two rings off which they then stolen and they rummaged through his bag which he had dropped on the path.
1857. On 28 December 1986 [REDACTED] saw the three offenders, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED], and recognised two of them from the assault upon him two days previously. He passed the registration number of the car they were in to police on that day. [REDACTED] suffered facial lacerations, bruising and a broken tooth. One of the rings was recovered from [REDACTED]'s North Narrabeen house by the police.
1858. Some observations of the committal proceeding concerning [REDACTED] is relevant here: [REDACTED]'s fear of being pushed under the water by one of the offenders is absent from his evidence in chief at the committal hearing in May 1987. He maintains that he was chased into the water but it appears that both he and the offender may have been standing in the water; he did not report the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

matter at that time due to being shaken, in shock, and negative that reporting it might not stop the problem; he said he had heard of other attacks on the beach.

1859. About 5pm on 28 December 1986 at Reef Beach, Balgowlah Heights, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] assaulted [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] had been sunbaking and went to assist when he heard a distress call. It was then that they punched and kicked him and he suffered lacerations and bruising. Victim Statement of [REDACTED] taken on 28 December 1986 at Manly Police Station. [REDACTED] states he was sunbaking on a rock just above reef beach about 5pm on 28 December 1986. He heard a distressed call coming from just south of where he was. He ran to an opening and saw the three offenders. When he saw them he said, "What's happening?". They said, "What do you want?", and set upon him kicking him many times. He managed to escape and return to where his property was. He drove to the Police Station and reported the matter the same day.

1860. About 11.40pm on 28 December 1986 at St Leonards Park, North Sydney, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] assaulted [REDACTED], 50 years old. The court facts describe that [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] secreted themselves in a rotunda and [REDACTED] climbed a tree as a lookout. The four offenders attacked the victims when they came nearby. [REDACTED] describes being chased and having what he thinks were bottles thrown at him. He was punched and kicked. He suffered bruising, a dislocated shoulder from falling over, and his false teeth had fallen out. Police and ambulance arrived and he was treated in hospital. In his statement to police dated 3 January 1987, [REDACTED] includes that one of the offenders initially sat with him in the rotunda and that [REDACTED] told him that he was gay (his statement) or asked him to come home with him (court transcript). It appears from the hair colour that this person was [REDACTED]. In his evidence at the [REDACTED] committal, [REDACTED], says that he was repeatedly called a 'faggot' and that one of the offenders, probably [REDACTED], was "screaming, ranting and raving."

1861. About 11.50pm on 28 December 1986 at St Leonards Park, North Sydney, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] assaulted [REDACTED] who was with

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

another (unknown) man at the time who was walking a dog. The offenders called out, "You fucken poofers" and ran towards both men. [REDACTED] had his wallet containing five dollars taken from his back pocket as he tried to run away. They tried to remove his watch from his arm. He was hit with what he thinks was a club and chain. He was punched and kicked on the ground and lost consciousness. He woke to find a chain and house keys were missing. He was treated at hospital for cuts, bruising, a broken tooth and concussion and reported the matter to the police while in hospital. The unknown man apparently told [REDACTED] that he was married. As [REDACTED] ran away he felt one of them grab the rear pocket of his jeans and take his wallet. He was hit with a "club" and a "chain", but he could not see clearly as his glasses had fallen off. He was treated at hospital and the police took his report while he was there.

1862. That evening of 31 December 1986, police made separate arrest of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. Their charge process was completed on 1 January 1987. [REDACTED] was arrested and charged on 2 January 1987. They were each interviewed and admitted the various offences recorded above and named their co-offenders by way of typed interview.

1863. During the interview and charge process, [REDACTED] also admitted to an assault with [REDACTED] at the Narrabeen Bus Terminus at the beginning of 1986, but there was insufficient information to charge. [REDACTED] was subsequently charged on 6 February 1987 with a January offence at that location on the victim, [REDACTED] [REDACTED]

1864. A Juvenile Report records that on the occasion of his arrest on 31 December 1986, [REDACTED] also told police that about 9pm on an unknown prior date that he had attended the Narrabeen bus terminus for the purpose of 'looking for homosexuals to assault'. On that occasion he assaulted three male victims using 'karate'. There is no mention of co-offenders. It appears that police proceeded with three charges relative to this but that they were each dismissed at court.

1865. The facts prepared for the first court appearance of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] for the offences in the Manly Police area of Balgowlah Heights include

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

the following bail-related comment by police 'It is believed that these persons may be responsible for similar offences committed in the North Sydney and Moore Park areas and inquiries are continuing in this regard. It is also understood that these offenders are responsible for further offences committed in the Reef Beach area and further inquiries are being carried out'. No further charges eventuate and no links were made with reported offences in Moore Park.

1866. About 12.30am on 12 February 1987, 18 year old [REDACTED], in company with 20 year old [REDACTED], 19 year old [REDACTED], 18 year old [REDACTED], and 17 year old [REDACTED], committed an assault and robbery on 20 year old [REDACTED]. The victim met the offenders and a female as he was leaving the Dee Why Hotel and he accepted a smoke of Indian Hemp from them. He was offered a lift in their 8-seater van which he accepted, but in the car the males assaulted him. In the area of Nolan Reserve, Pittwater Road, North Manly he escaped from the car but was again assaulted with punches and kicks. They stole his wallet from his pocket and stole his watch from his arm. [REDACTED] made his way to Pittwater Road and was found by patrolling police.

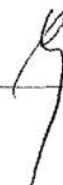
1867. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were connected to the van by police and [REDACTED] was the first to be interviewed by police. He admitted the offence and named the co-offenders who were each charged the following day. [REDACTED] also admitted the offence.

1868. About 3.30am on 14 January 1989, [REDACTED], in company with [REDACTED], committed an assault upon two victims, [REDACTED] who was 61 years old, and [REDACTED], who was 71 years old. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] reported to police that they were walking together on Pittwater Road at Warriewood (a northern beaches suburb north of North Narrabeen) when they saw a female being pulled into a ute by two males. They spoke to the males in the ute and then kept walking. A short distance away the two males rejoined them and said, "(we are going to) kick the shit out of you". Both victims were punched a number of times by [REDACTED]. On 15 January 1989, police recognised the

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

description of the ute and arrested [REDACTED] and his passenger, [REDACTED].
 [REDACTED] admitted the assault and was charged.

1869. Person of Interest [REDACTED]

1870. [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED] Police were informed of the information provided by [REDACTED] at page 19 in a written document dated 27 April, 2013 prepared by the Johnson family and entitled 'Scott Johnson Case – Locale, Persons of Interest, and Witnesses'. The information provided is included here;

1871. "I grew up in Manly, and used to run with [REDACTED] guys in the 80s who used me as bait when they'd go looking for gay men to bash in North Head, Narrabeen, Balgowlah, Manly, King's Cross, Moore Park and elsewhere.. [REDACTED] [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
 including above the headlands in Reef Beach and the "little rabbit holes" all over the place in the North Head area. I would pretend to be looking for sex, then the others would jump out of the bushes and bash and rob our victims...We'd go out almost every Friday and Saturday night to party, but didn't have much money. We'd make the rounds of gay beats to assault and rob gay men specifically, the Narrabeen toilets, the Manly toilet block near the Steyne on the Corso, the Collaroy Beach toilets, the beach toilets at Manly, the Balgowlah toilets, all over Reef Beach and several locations around North Head...We'd "go out and get money to go out to the clubs, and went to North Head to look for men in their rabbit holes. North Head was right on top of the Manly night life."

1872. The document includes that [REDACTED] described several areas to Mr Glick, including the headlands above the hospital parking, the loop all the way to the end of North Head, trails above the old Army barracks, near the water works, and the trails above the Shelly Beach parking lot.

1873. On pages 27 to 29 inclusive in that document the following is recorded;

Witness:



Signature:

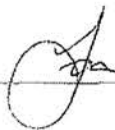


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1874. [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] participated in many more assaults and robberies of gay men, in many more locations, over a longer period of time, than has been reflected in the court records so far obtained by us.
1875. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
1876. [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED], in the occasional company of others, routinely went to various places in North Head above Manly to bash and rob gay men, then returned to Manly.
1877. These three were occasionally joined by other men, including [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED].
1878. [REDACTED] is currently in the possession of a one way ticket to Serbia, and plans to leave Australia within three weeks approximately mid May 2013. His parents are planning to accompany him for one month, then return to Australia.
1879. [REDACTED] was a student of gay beat life, and knew where gay men went, when, and how each beat operated. He would keep stolen wallets, jewelry (sic) and other booty in a secret compartment in his basement.
1880. [REDACTED] witnessed one time when [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] entered a [REDACTED] and were extremely agitated, saying that their victim did not have money. [REDACTED] said he believed that something 'totally different' had happened that night, but did not recall the month or year. He recalled this incident when he learned about Scott's death.
1881. [REDACTED]'s brother [REDACTED] (aka [REDACTED]) is a vicious and vindictive criminal who has deep roots in the Manly crime scene, including a long standing relationship with suspected gangster [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] had a monetary relationship with [REDACTED]
1882. [REDACTED] is suspected of conducting surveillance of an Australian journalist (unnamed) peripherally involved in this case, by snooping the

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

journalist's LinkedIn account. Dragen Suca, a nephew of [REDACTED]'s, is a computer hacker who works for [REDACTED], a Dutch woman married to an Italian man with the surname [REDACTED] was [REDACTED]'s girlfriend in the late 1980s. She witnessed [REDACTED] washing blood from his body over bashing

1883. [REDACTED], whom we have identified from court records, accompanied the crew on occasion. [REDACTED] also identified [REDACTED] as currently being gay and living with his (male) partner

1884. Though [REDACTED] at that time did not want to be identified to police, he raised the possibility of trying to speak with [REDACTED].

1885. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL

1886. An email from the Johnson family dated 8 May 2013, includes this, "We'd like to share one additional allegation that ([REDACTED]) told Steve (Johnson) when Steve was asking ([REDACTED]) to cooperate with your team, that in addition to paying police to reduce [REDACTED]'s sentence, the [REDACTED] brothers also paid police to destroy evidence - wallets, rings, etc - hidden in the floorboards of the [REDACTED]'s residence."

1887. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL

1888. [REDACTED]'s Background


1889. Police and Corrective Services records included that [REDACTED] was born on [REDACTED]. He was [REDACTED] years old when Scott died. [REDACTED]. He was raised in the upper northern beaches of Sydney where he has been a long-term resident. [REDACTED]

1890. [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Witness:



Signature:


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

[Redacted]

1891. [Redacted]

1892. [Redacted]

1893. [Redacted]

1894. [Redacted]'s Information to the Police

1895. In 1 May 2013 Strike Force Macnamir contacted [Redacted]. Over the telephone he told police;

1896. He has taken part in twenty to twenty five assaults of gay men. The group consisted of [Redacted], [Redacted], [Redacted], [Redacted] and [Redacted]. The areas they would frequent were, North Sydney Park, Balgowlah toilets, Narrabeen toilets, Manly toilets opposite the Steyne Hotel, Shelly Beach and Reef Beach. They travel to the areas in [Redacted]'s car, [Redacted]'s car or his car.

1897. The motive was robbery and [Redacted] always wore fingerless gloves and was the main aggressor. [Redacted] would be sent in as bait, the others would jump out from behind trees & bushes, punch the victims to the temple knocking them out then lowering them to the ground. The group would feel and reach into the victim's pockets for money and wallets. The group was very quick and fast and the victims did not see then coming.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1898. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

1899. [REDACTED] said that a close associate was aware of the media publicity relating to the death of Scott and had told him about it which prompted him to contact Mr Glick. Plans were made to meet with [REDACTED] the next day.

1900. On 2 May 2013 police went to his business [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] maintained what he had told police over the telephone on the previous day. He told police that his wife had read recent media about the death of Scott and told him about how terrible it was. He then also read about the death on the internet. He provided the name of his girlfriend, [REDACTED], at the time of the assaults. He was asked to try and confirm the years during which the assaults occurred. Police unsuccessfully attempted to have him agree to make a formal statement. He expressed concerns about his personal safety from [REDACTED], the older brother of [REDACTED], and [REDACTED], the older brother of [REDACTED]. He understood that they both had significant criminal histories and were linked to corrupt police who he did not know. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

1901. On 7 May 2013 police spoke with [REDACTED] over the telephone to see if he had remembered the years of the offences, and he recalled the years were 1987 and 1988. [REDACTED] and thinks this is when [REDACTED] stopped committing the assaults also as in early 1989 he was arrested for gay-hate assaults.

1902. [REDACTED]

1903. On 9 May 2013 police again spoke with [REDACTED] over the telephone. [REDACTED] re-affirmed that that the group had gone to North Head many times to assault and

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

rob gay men. [redacted] said that he had not heard from "the American Boys" referring to the Johnson family and wanted to know if we had. [redacted] was still not prepared to make a formal police statement of these matters but he agreed to show police the areas of North Head that he had referred to.

1904. On 16 May 2013 police again made contact with [redacted] and he agreed to meet at North Head on 1 June 2013.

1905. [redacted] interview at North Head

1906. On 1 June 2013 police met with [redacted] at North Head, Manly. An authorised inducement was accepted by him and an audio and video interview was conducted with him. [Note (i) that on the original recording there is a technical issue that makes the recording replay some prior frames but no recorded material is lost (ii) the intermittent machinery sounds are aeroplanes flying overhead which affects the level of audibility of the recording].

1907. Prior to recording commencing, [redacted] told police that he did not wish to name his co-offenders when the recording was on and the offer of an inducement was accepted by him on this basis. During the interview his reference to the "main associate" co-offender is a reference to [redacted]. His reference to a co-offender with martial arts experience is a reference to [redacted].

1908. His interview is summarised here;


1909. [redacted] knows his co-offenders from 'being around the area' of Narrabeen, [redacted] [redacted] If doing the robberies had not been suggested to [redacted] by the others in the group, he tells police that then he would not have committed the crimes. The largest group that [redacted] was with when robberies were committed at North Head was up to five, which included him. The robberies were committed from 1986 to 1988.

1910. [redacted]
[redacted]
[redacted]
[redacted]

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1911. The group would park in the Shelly Beach lower car park or the streets around the Shelly Beach upper car park. The group would walk up the hill (entry to North Head) from the Shelly Beach upper car park. The group would pretend they were 'normal beach goers' sometimes. The group would arrive not before 8pm in the evening on a Thursday, Friday or Saturday, but mainly a Friday. During other weekdays they would go to other locations. The group used the North Head area in the summer months - late October to February.
1912. The group would look at the Shelly Beach car parks first, both lower and upper level car parks. The fewer the cars the more risk of no one being 'up the hill'. Also the contents of the car could indicate to them if a man was up the hill, such as a watch, keys or shoes left in the car. The main associate would primarily be the one to check the cars for these signs. [REDACTED] describes the main associate as being 'pretty organised' in the thinking and actions in the occasions that he saw him. It was a 'big hike' up the hill and they checked the cars to know that it was worth their while to go up the hill. If it looked okay then they would leave their car parked in the lower car park or in the streets near the upper car park.
1913. They looked for gay men because they were easy targets and the main associate was 'disgusted by them'. [REDACTED] does not know why the main associate was disgusted.
1914. (Location changes and [REDACTED] starts walking up the hill via a dirt track). They come to a fork in the dirt track not long after leaving from the car park and [REDACTED] explains that they loop into each other further up the hill and you can go up and down either of them. They proceed.
1915. [REDACTED] then stops at an area he recognises in scrub. He describes the area as being clearer at the base with an overhang of trees. He explains that is the type of area that they would use as they could look through the lower areas for feet or people moving in the near distance. Laying down they could see 'who's where, how far, how many'. If six feet could be seen then there were three potential victims 'wandering around' not far away.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1916. He explains that they would approach the potential victim from different angles... 'maybe I would go straight ahead and the other two or three would go around', indicating that it was to surround the victim. He refers to 'rabbit holes' and man-made tracks on North Head.
1917. He stops at another location on the track and comments how the area's vegetation has grown over and briefly describes seeing men together and that it was happening 'all over the place' on the hill
1918. If contact was made with a gay man [REDACTED] 'disregarded' any talk the gay man tried to make with him. The gay man may have used the 'hand approach' which he indicates as being the gay man laying a hand on his arm. The gay man would lead him by the arm to a nearby area just off the main track which [REDACTED] refers to as 'the bedroom'. Only after a few steps towards 'the bedroom' and [REDACTED] would move his arm away from the hold of the gay man and then gay man would be attacked by the others in the group.
1919. The gay man would be hit to the head and fall or be place straight on the ground. The group would 'check on' or 'strip him' by this he says they 'check the pockets' for 'anything interesting'. The main associate would look at the watch and disregard it if it was a cheap model and 'he took keys, and wallets'...'he took the wallets mainly' and cash. If other people came near the group while they were checking the pockets the group would tell them to 'move on' and then watch them to make sure they left the area
1920. [REDACTED] says he was a follower and the main associate would 'know what he was doing'. He describes that the main associate could be walking with him on the tracks 'checking things out' then would disappear. It would then occur to [REDACTED] that the main associate had seen another potential victim and have moved into a position to commit the robbery.
1921. [REDACTED] would sometimes first know about an attack when he saw the fist of the main associate or a victim being knocked to the ground. He says they would get up to the spot to do the assaults in '3 or 4 minutes' from the car park and 'In

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

twenty minutes maybe three or four (robberies) could be done and we are already back in the car - that's how fast...'

1922. When asked the question what happened to the stolen property, he said, 'don't know...he would grab a whole heap of the stuff...sometimes in the car he (the main associate) would expose it...(and say) 'look at this, look at that - a photo, a necklace, a ring...'whatever it is...he (the main associate) would pocket it'. [REDACTED] would get dropped at home or go out in Manly after the crimes. [REDACTED] 'never' received any of the stolen money or property explaining 'I was still at school...this was my three or four hour adventure thing'

1923. (Location changes and they walk to a relatively exposed area where the ocean can be seen in the middle distance -- this is still prior to the landmark sandstone wall). [REDACTED] says that 'one other one happed here' at the place they are standing. They have stopped just off the main pathway on the ocean side of North Head.

1924. [REDACTED] is asked again what time the group would be at North Head and he says 'eight' and 'depending on what happened' anytime up to and including 'twelve' midnight, 'always' at night.

1925. [REDACTED] says, 'they would sit somewhere like this and do their thing with another guy' indicating dirt areas clear of vegetation. Other comments include, "it's pitch black, but there's still slightly a bit enough just to see", and "you wouldn't believe the number of people, gay guys or lookers that are here...walking around"


1926. When asked if the people are clothed, he says "shorts, t-shirts, always clothed". When asked if he saw any of them naked, he said that he had seen naked men but not at North Head, 'at Reef Beach, a guy had a towel playing with himself...but here no'. When asked if any of his robbery victims were naked he replies, "all got clothes on".

1927. When asked if there were any times when he was worried that he might fall, he said, "a few times, because my associate moved fast...and a lot of times I

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

slipped and said oh geez, but otherwise no...followed the walks ways..." When asked if he was frightened that any of his victims would go over the cliff, he responded, "No, never thought of that...they would be in an area like this", indicating the flat dirt areas.

1928. (Location changes and the walks closer to the eastern ocean side but is separated from the ocean by a raised rock ledge then dense scrub). He says that it is possible to still walk around in the dense scrub area that leads to the cliff edge. [REDACTED] indicates another bush 'bedroom' just off defined dirt track.

1929. [REDACTED] says that the main associate told him that if a man is up at North Head at night then he is definitely gay saying, 'why else would you be up here?'. The gay men would be "...fifty five, sixty year olds wearing stubby shorts, stubbies and thongs...walking around looking endlessly at people...you're a paedophile...that's (my associates) mind".

1930. When asked what he would wear when at North Head [REDACTED] said, "Jeans or tracksuit pants. Never shorts. Well I didn't 'cause I'd get scratched and stuff... My associate, mainly track suits pants or long shorts...'cause he didn't get any (scratches)".

1931. When asked if they did any training for the robberies, [REDACTED] says the main associate 'use hit a brick wall until his hands would bleed...push ups, sit ups, chin ups...get another one of his mates to hit him in the stomach, kick him in the back...hit him in the face...(he would) enjoy it...'. The main associate '...he seemed to be well organised...get in, get out fast and quick...'

1932. [REDACTED] explains one robbery they did at North Sydney where the main associate was concerned about the injury that he had inflicted on a victim – saying the "crunch" from the hit to the victim could be heard "metres away". The victim could not breath and the main associate turned him so that '...blood spat out' of his mouth and the victim started breathing again.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

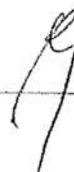
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1933. The times the group got together to do the robberies were 'spur of the moment' decisions if they happened to run into each other. [REDACTED] recalls that the robberies were done towards the end of him being at high school.
1934. [REDACTED] explains that sometimes he would wait to be approached by a gay man in a position indicated as just off the tracks. They would keep moving along the ridge area until they could find no more potential victims "...could be for three, two hours, four hours...the shortest one was twenty minutes, two or three people knocked out and you'd be gone..."
1935. When asked how many times [REDACTED] went to North Head to commit robberies, he says four or five times. When asked how many other offenders were with him on those occasions, he says 'about three times there was myself and two others...once it was myself and one other, the main one', meaning the main associate. When asked how many people they robbed on each of these occasions he said, "four or five, six...we just go on and on".
1936. When asked if the group would be concerned if the first person they assaulted came to and raised the alarm, he explains that the assaults would be done within minutes of each other and in groups so the victims did not have time to raise the alarm. During the longer time periods they spent on the headland, being the two to four hour periods, the majority of the time was used looking for victims.
1937. If gay men were grouped together it would not deter the group from attacking them. "the associate was comfortable doing three or four by himself...". [REDACTED] demonstrates another technique used by the main associate which was to hold the back of the head and punching the face of the victim indicating that the main associate would walk up behind the victim and drop them to the ground saying, 'I saw (the main associate hit multiple victims) at Moore Park...and no noise...'
1938. [REDACTED] says they never spoke aloud when they were doing the robberies '...never call out a real name...speak in a different language (words such as) ...here, there, go, run, stop, start...'

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1939. (Location changes and they pass through the landmark sandstone wall).

██████ recognised the wall but is not sure if that is the hole they used. Up the hill from the wall, and on the central track with the ocean in the middle distance, ██████ indicates that this is the main area where gay men would congregate '...the gay men would walk there at night and during the day...

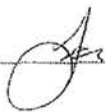
1940. ██████ has heard that at North Sydney oval there would be sixty or seventy gay men which he refers to as a 'swarm' and '...you'd see them walking at Reef Beach in towels...coming out of nowhere...'. When asked how many gay men he saw at any one time in that area of North Head he says 'most probable six, seven, eight...but I've heard of times were times when there were twenty or thirty on a daily basis.'

1941. ██████ repeats modus operandi that was used as described earlier in the interview. When asked if it ever got to the stage of a victim getting undressed before the group attacked he says 'never, never, not even close to that...the closest, like I said, was the hand a few steps, that's it.'. The associate and one other (described as shorter than the associate but with knowledge of martial arts) would attack anyone of any fitness level and describes a variety of their violent behaviour elsewhere and on other occasions, even towards their own group or friends. His opinion is that they, being the main associate and the martial arts associate, would not stop fighting even if they were near a cliff and that they would not care if someone went over the cliff.

1942. (Location changes and he walks to another area nearby the main track).

██████ repeats the activity in bush areas in order to locate gay men to rob. He was first taken to North Head by someone else in the group who had heard it was where gay men were. He indicates an area of dense bushland and refers to it as 'The Point'. He says that he has been to the cliff edge of 'The Point' as indicted by him on a social visit with girls and says you would see thirty or forty people there at the same time. This was when he was seventeen or eighteen years old and he was with fourteen and fifteen year old girls at the time and they wagged

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson


school and drank alcohol. He did the same with girls at Balmoral, at the eastern end of North Head, and at Balgowlah.

1943. [REDACTED] points and says "this is the main area where the gays would lurk around in, between here and the edge of the cliff". He repeats that the robberies could be over within twenty minutes if they found a number of victims quickly or they could search for three hours and 'finally get one person or three hours and get nothing'
1944. The person who knocked the victim out would go through the victim's pockets and take money, wallet, and keys. Sometimes the offenders would take off the victim's shoes and socks looking for money tucked in the shoes.
1945. When asked if any of the group went to North Head during daylight hours he says, 'Could be, even the main associate could have been up during the day...checking things out.' The group would not go to North Head in the rain. They were comfortable going through the headland bush area in the dark
1946. He describes the main associate and the martial arts offender as having developed more of a conscience as they got older but were still being capable of violence. Includes himself as having developed a sense of responsibility.
1947. [REDACTED] was reminded by police that due to his knowledge and presence in the group that he is as responsible for the robberies as the other members of the group.
1948. A few of the robberies he was part of took place between six and eight metres from the cliff edge. They all took place at night but with light being 'moonlight', 'reflections'. [REDACTED] was asked again in what years they operated and says 1985, 1986, and 1987 "mainly". Later he says the years of the robberies as 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989 then he says that it was only up to 1988.
1949. They always found at least one gay man to rob when they went to North Head. He expresses an opinion that the main associate would have gone to North Head during the day to check things out before returning with the group but he has no direct knowledge of this. He expresses an opinion that the main

Witness:



Signature:


 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1959. An immigration alert had been placed on [REDACTED] on 21 May 2013 by police. Subsequent notification from the Australian Federal Police indicated that on 5 June 2013 [REDACTED] left Australia with his mother, his father and his Aunty for Croatia and they returned together on 15 September 2013.

1960. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

1961. On 20 March 2014 police reinterviewed [REDACTED]. The interview was electronically audio-video recorded and [REDACTED] was formally cautioned. The interview contains consistencies and inconsistencies with what [REDACTED] has told police and the Johnson family on prior occasions. The interview is summarised here.

1962. At the start of the interview [REDACTED] confirming that what he told police at North Head on 1 June 2013 is true to the best of his knowledge.


1963. He names the people he committed assaults with at North Head as [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

1964. He says the number of occasions that he went to assault men at North Head could be 'more or less' than four. When reminded of what he said at North Head, he agrees that it was two occasions with [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], and two occasions just with [REDACTED] (Q27); "it's four, I'm recalling it could have been twice I've been up there. You know...because there is another area of North Head that we used to go up to which was on the other side...which is another lookout at (to) Watsons Bay, that section of it (North Head)...where the road is...that's more a public access area...we use to go and chase rabbits around up there. So I

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

remember that area and then we'd walk around a bit in the bushes there. But that wasn't anything to do with, anything to do with gays, or bashing..."(Q264); "I could have gone on the other end (the more public area of North Head), you know may be two or three times and gone here (the gay beat area in the photographs) once. Could have gone there, or up to this spot (the gay beat area in the photographs) three times and the other side (the more public area of North Head) once. It's either way, either way."(Q270)

1965. He changes the number of North Head victims he indicated in the 1 June 2013 interview which was about 20, and says it could be two or three victims in total at North Head (Q158)

1966. He says they did not always have a plan to commit assault and robberies at North Head but sometimes just "ran around and looked at the view and come (sic) back".

1967. When asked about being used as "bait" for assault and robberies at North Head he says, "That was at another venue", and that the baiting did not "particularly (occur) in that place, in North Head" (Q33).

1968. A short time later, about his role specifically at North Head he says, "I was like the bait, walking around" (Q35); and to the question "So on four occasions you were the bait (at North Head)?", he says, "yes."

1969. He cannot remember the first time that he was ever involved in an offence against at gay man at North Head.

1970. He cannot remember the last time that he was ever involved in an offence against at gay man at North Head, and says, "No, nothing specific. I just remember going up there, running around...and climbing back down and going home".

1971. The time of the offences at North Head were between 9pm and 12 midnight

1972. He says that he, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were committing the gay-hate assaults in the two year period prior to the arrest of [REDACTED] (Q181), and "never"

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

after that when [REDACTED] "changed his whole life". [REDACTED] did not see [REDACTED] for four or five years after his arrest (Q184). (The arrest of [REDACTED], with [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], occurred in January 1987 and has been referred to earlier).

1973. Further clarification of the years of when the assaults were committed appears from Q190 to Q229.

1974. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

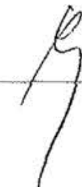
1975. They would drive to North Head after having a hamburger or ice cream in the Manly Corso and "it's all done spontaneously on the spot and there's no major discussion about it" (Q50); they went if the weather was "good and clear"; "out of a hundred times that we'd go into Manly, we might have gone up there (to North Head) once in that hundred. So the next hundred, again, you know, (it was a thing like that."

1976. He recalls nothing about the victims including any clothing they wore or property stolen from them (Q40, Q79), nor any victim's build, size, shape, skin colour, hair style or colour, baldness, height, or accent (Q52); he remembers that none of the victims at North Head were naked but may have had their shirt off (Q165)

1977. He does not remember any words used by the victims (Q62) or used by him or his group to the victims (Q63) or a victim's scream of pain (Q155)

1978. He does not have a learning problem or medical reason as to why he cannot remember details of any victims; he puts the lack of recall down to the passage of time and the amount of areas they offended at (Q156); and the quick pace at which the offences occurred (Q161)

Witness: _____


Signature: _____

P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1979. He relates words the group used in what he says is Croatian or Serbian for "Let's go", "poofter", "money" and which he phonetically pronounces as "idair", "pedded" / "peaded", or "paree" / "parey" respectively.

1980. He, nor [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] ever fell over during their quick pace assault or running around North Head in the dark (Q162)

1981. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

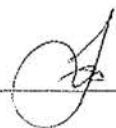
1982. He does not remember the property stolen, "I don't remember at all, recall seeing any of their property, physically you know, with my eyes" (Q80); "they ([REDACTED] and [REDACTED]) could have just hot someone and not touched a thing. So I don't know, we never sat down and had a discussion..."

1983. He does not have first-hand knowledge that [REDACTED] kept stolen property under his house but someone told him that happened (Q129) and remembers being told by that (unnamed) person that police found it under [REDACTED]'s bedroom floor around the time of his prior charges.


1984. He does not recognise any items in the photographs shown to him of Scott's personal property (Q119); he does not remember seeing any folded clothes during the times he was at North Head (Q120)

1985. Regarding where on North Head that he, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] committed assaults: he is shown two 1988 scene photographs and indicates the area near the south side of the wall (Q247) which he knew was a gay beat "Probably just around up to about that first section" (249); and then further south along the main path, "under the tress and into areas, ran around in there...and then gone back to the track and gone down, and gone..."

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1986. Regarding him, [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] going near the cliff on the Tasman Sea side of North Head: "I just recall once going to the rock face...and just looking out at the view...I just recall going out there and looking at the view and then retracing in and going back"(Q259). The area of the cliff face was "Not far from the actual end of the wall...probably five or ten metres away from that...It was just piece of rock I was standing on, looking out"(Q271); "I can't specifically say whether it was [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] or was it just me going while they were still in the vegetation running around"; "it could have been one of those (occasions) where we did nothing, just walked around (North Head)"(Q260); it was at night time "I've only been there at night" (Q262);

1987. "I use to think it (the motive) was more practising punching, boxing. That's what I was thinking" (Q109); "...there's two ways you can do it, you can hit a bag, a punching bag, or you can go and get confronted by someone and have a go with them. And this is how this sort of thing eventuated, because you can go there (to North Head) and there's no one else and you can go and have a go with an actual live person" (Q111); "[REDACTED] and I used to train...I'd hit the bag and that, but then when we approached a gay guy it wasn't much of a confrontation, because he'd obviously be scared...but there's also a sort of feat in (it for himself also). It's not like I'm totally a hundred per cent confident. So it's breaking that fear and approaching another person and getting over that, so in the future when I get older, it doesn't matter how big or small or strong or ruthless someone I, if I ever confront them I won't back off..." (Q112); "So that was it and so we went to Reef Beach. It was dark and I used to run through the trees with [REDACTED] and he's say 'Don't , don't fear anything...feeling and running...your senses are going to get stronger' and so these were the kind of things the we were aiming at getting and achieving I suppose" (Q113)

1988. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Witness:

Signature:


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1999. The following call was made by [REDACTED] to an unidentified adult male who is apparently in [REDACTED] at 1.13pm on Wednesday 19 March, being the date before the planned interview with [REDACTED] that is summarised above. The relevant part of the call is reproduced below. [REDACTED]

2000. Male: How's [REDACTED]?
2001. [REDACTED]: ...getting my - oh, [REDACTED]'s all right, he's working away and, ah, he's ah, yeah, he's, but the feller [*]the Police [*] questions, you know?
2002. Male: [*]
2003. [REDACTED]: Ah, [REDACTED] [*] about [*]maybe about twenty years ago.
2004. Male: [*].
2005. [REDACTED] [*]he was, um, ah, what, he was doing his, he was, ah, he had just done his PhD exam in, in, um, in linguistics or something, some, some, ah, really complicated subject, right?
2006. Male: Yeah.
2007. [REDACTED] And [*] right?
2008. Male: Yeah.
2009. [REDACTED] And [*] from America. [*] America maybe. You know, ah, the way data gets transferred through fax?
2010. Male: Yeah, yeah.
2011. [REDACTED] This guy invented it in the world.
2012. Male: Yeah?
2013. [REDACTED] That's, yeah, that's the, the brother of the, the gay guy. The gay guy was, ah, in Manly somewhere sunbaking naked, and then he was found dead at the bottom of the cliff.
2014. Male: In where? Manly?
2015. [REDACTED] In Manly, yeah, this is twenty years ago.
2016. Male: Oh, Manly, oh, Manly, oh, okay.
2017. [REDACTED] Manly, yeah. Right? In, in Sydney, you know? And um anyway, they, the Coroner then, um, determined it as a suicide, right? But...
2018. Male: Yeah.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

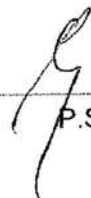
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2019. [REDACTED] ...the brother, that, the data, you know, the fax guy, he came over from, um, America and he said - he went to the Coroner and he said, "No, I want this reopened." Because I think at that time there was a lot of, ah, [*] bashing [*] up there. Right?
2020. Male: Oh, okay.
2021. [REDACTED] The [*] I think it might have been, he might have been a victim or something, so at that time, round about that time, [REDACTED] got arrested with a hundred and forty four assaults of gay bashing.
2022. Male: You're joking.
2023. [REDACTED] No, then that was the largest in Sydney that ever anyone has been caught with. And, um, the last one that he bashed, the guy nearly died and the, he was a pretty big sort of heavy bloke and that, that's the way they got him, right? Anyway, so he then got nine months periodic detention...
2024. Male: That's right.
2025. [REDACTED] ...which is you go to gaol for Saturday, Sunday.
2026. Male: Yeah.
2027. [REDACTED] And, and then that was all over. So what they did, they came back twenty years later and the brother's put in a, you know, put in a inquest or whatever, you know, to open it so the Coroner agreed and reopened the case. And, and the investigation started and there's a big write up about it um, if you Google Steve Johnson...
2028. Male: Steve Johnson, okay.
2029. [REDACTED] ...Steve Johnson, gay bashing in Australia, you'll see the whole story there, right?
2030. Male: Yeah, yeah, I can (unintelligible), okay?
2031. [REDACTED] Yeah. Steve Johnson gay bashing, ah Manly.
2032. Male: Okay.
2033. [REDACTED] You know, these are the key words. Um, so the brother came and he's offered a million dollars or something for anyone that can come up with information and this and that...
2034. Male: You're joking!
2035. [REDACTED] No, no, because this feller's big time in America, man. You know.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2036. Male: Yeah, of course he's big, yeah.
2037. [REDACTED] Yeah, and so he, then has hired a journalist and the journalist is now roaming around Sydney looking, he's been over, he's written a lot of, ah, stories about other gay bashing scenarios that happened in Manly. Manly is the northern beaches section...
2038. Male: Yeah, and this one doesn't look good does it?
2039. [REDACTED] No, and then finally after all that they came to [REDACTED], and then somehow, because I associated with him there, they got me, um, they got four other Yugoslavian, ah, Serbian guys and then they started questioning everyone.
2040. Male: Yeah.
2041. [REDACTED] So they questioned me about, ah, eight, nine months ago, um, they came to the shop and said, "Look, you know, we just want to look into this." I said, "Look, I got no idea what you guys are talking about."
2042. Male: Yeah.
2043. [REDACTED] Um, I said, "I was with him, I did bash a few, you know, in my younger days, here and there when I was..."
2044. Male: Yeah.
2045. [REDACTED] ...young, dumb and stupid, I didn't know what I was doing." I said, "But as far as killing someone or, you know, pushing them off a cliff, I've got no fucking idea what you're talking about." You know?
2046. Male: Yeah.
2047. [REDACTED] So, and they said, "That's it." And then they went to ask [REDACTED], they asked [REDACTED], they asked [REDACTED], all these other boys that we used to hang round with, you know?
2048. Male: Yeah.
2049. [REDACTED] And so, and that was it; it was over. Then she rang me, she said "Look, it's finished, the Johnson brother he's, ah, he's gone back to the States." Um, but then, just yesterday they, she rang me again. And she said to me, "Look, we want to bring you in for, um, ah questioning at the police station, and it's got nothing - you're not going to incriminate yourself, or you're not going to get into trouble; all you need to do is just, under a tape recorder, say exactly what you remember from those days."

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2050. Male: Mm.
2051. [REDACTED] And I said, "Look, do I need a lawyer?" He said, "Look, your lawyer, you have the option of saying 'no comment', right?"
2052. Male: Yeah.
2053. [REDACTED] "So your lawyer, if you got your lawyer, it's just going to be a waste of money because you, your lawyer will say to you if you don't want to answer anything, just say no comment..."
2054. Male: Yeah.
2055. [REDACTED] "... so it's up to you if you want, the lawyer can be there, but you have the option of saying no comment, you don't have to answer anything if you don't want to."
2056. Male: Hm.
2057. [REDACTED] So [*] right?
2058. Male: Right.
2059. [REDACTED] So...
2060. Male: This is twenty years ago we're talking about?
2061. [REDACTED] This is fuckin' twenty-two or twenty-three years ago even maybe, even more, you know?
2062. Male: Fuck, yeah.
2063. [REDACTED] And the fact that he was just finished his PhD at Sydney Uni and he was a gay, was relaxing there sunbaking nude at some cliff top on Manly, um, and he just was found dead at the bottom, you know, two or three days later. And all his clothes or something was up on the top, wrapped and this, and they were thinking, if you've just done your PhD and he's, he's a smart - oh, it, he was a, a what do you call it, a mathematic.
2064. Male: Okay.
2065. [REDACTED] I remember now, that's a PhD in some kind of mathematic thing. Um, and he was the only one that had come over and been able to get such a high mark. Why would he go and kill himself, you know?
2066. Male: Well, he was gay, and fucking in those days that was difficult and just fuckin' (distorted transmission)

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

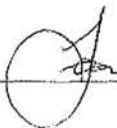


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2067. [REDACTED] Yeah, that's what it is. So I haven't spoken to [REDACTED], I don't know what they, they just wanted to ask; 'cause all I said, they said, "Well we know that you were around and everything," he said, "you can't deny that." I said, "Yeah, yeah, I admit I was around but I never killed anyone." You know?
2068. Male: Yeah.
2069. [REDACTED] I told them I bashed a few, but, ah, they can't do anything with that because I don't even remember who and where and what, I just said, "I just remember hitting them." And I was, I was eighteen, seventeen, eighteen, I got fuckin' no idea what was happening then, you know?
2070. Male: Ah, yeah.
2071. [REDACTED] That's the thing happening now, I don't, fuckin' I don't know what I got to do tomorrow, just "no comment" to everything. Right, "see you later."
2072. Male: No, that's quite right, I don't know, I don't, (unintelligible) say "No, no comment." If they are asking you something, just say, "I don't know anything about this." You know?
2073. [REDACTED] Yeah.
2074. Male: You don't, you don't, you don't know anything about it. I don't even know what you're talking about." Like that, you know.
2075. [REDACTED] Yeah, yeah, yeah.
2076. Male: Understand?
2077. [REDACTED] Yeah. And he just said, "Look, you know..."
2078. Male: (Distorted transmission - unintelligible) "It's got nothing to do with me." You know, "I don't know anything about this." You know?
2079. [REDACTED] Yeah, yeah.
2080. Male: 'Cause it's old, [*] I don't know anything about this.
2081. [REDACTED] Hm. Yeah, because I...
2082. Male: "So I can't comment. How can I comment when I don't know anything about it?"
2083. [REDACTED] Yeah, that's a good one, yeah, yeah.
2084. Male: Yeah, "How can I comment when I don't know anything about it?"
2085. [REDACTED] Hm. But anyway, after that, when, when that happened, [REDACTED] did that, he got married straight away.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2086. Male: Oh, okay.
2087. [REDACTED] And then he had a kid straight away and then he, 'cause he woke up and you know, the mother took him back to church and said, "Now what's this stupid shit here?" The only reason why he started doing it was because he was training, he was getting so fit and hitting walls, then...
2088. Male: Yeah.
2089. [REDACTED] ...um, you know, then he said, "Let's go practise." And I said, "What do you mean practise? Who you going to practise with?" He said, "Just pick someone..." And he picked some guy on the street and said, "Hey, fuck you." And the guy turned around and they started fighting, knocked the guy out and then after that there was no-one else to practise with, and then he thought, "Oh, let's just go and bash some poofter up." Then he went and, you know, in the club or in the park, and he saw one of them and then that became a habit. That's how – he was a boy, you know?
2090. Male: Yeah.
2091. [REDACTED] [*] and then next day, or every weekend, on, you know? Yeah, a fuckin' big fat guy, a small guy, any, doesn't matter, you know?
2092. Male: Yeah.
2093. [REDACTED] About seven, eight a night, you know?
2094. Male: Yeah.
2095. [REDACTED] One after the other - bang, bang, bang, you know? He was knocking them down like flies all over the place. Anyway (laughs).
2096. Male: Okay, anyway let me know what happens.
2097. [REDACTED] Yeah, yeah, I'll let you know, yeah, but don't say anything to him yet..
2098. Male: No, no comment, 'cause I don't know anything about it, that's what...
2099. [REDACTED] That's it. (Laughs). Exactly? No comment.
2100. Male: "I don't know anything about it."
2101. [REDACTED] That's it.
2102. Male: Yeah, "How can I comment on something I don't know anything about?"
2103. [REDACTED] Exactly.
2104. Male: Okay mate.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2105. [REDACTED] Okay.

2106. Male: No worries.

2107. [REDACTED] I'll talk to you soon.

2108. Male: Okay, bye. (Call Concluded).

2109. I PRODUCE A RECORDING AND TRANSCRIPTION OF THAT CALL

2110. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

2111. I PRODUCE THOSE TRAVEL RECORDS

2112. Croatian words used by the [REDACTED] group:

2113. As referred to earlier, when interviewed, [REDACTED] told police that during the assaults on gay men he and his co-offenders would communicate with each other using a few words and phrases in Croatian or Serbian. The phrases were "Let's go", as an instruction to act; "Money", as an instruction to get the money or confirming that they had found money on the victim; "Poofter" not as a direct expression to the victim but as a signal to each other that a victim was in sight.


2114. [REDACTED]'s group used the phonetically pronounced term "Idair" when saying, "Let's go".

2115. [REDACTED]'s group used the phonetically pronounced word "Paree" or "Parey" when referring to money.


2116. [REDACTED]'s group used the phonetically pronounced word "Pedded" or "Peaded" when they wanted to indicate to the others' that they had sighted a gay man.

2117. [REDACTED] also said that the group used Croatian or Serbian words for 'run' and 'gay guy' but he was unable to remember the equivalent foreign language word.

Witness:



Signature:


_____ P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2118. An accredited government interpreter confirmed that the words are closest to Croatian. The interpreter provided the following translations.

2119. "Let's go" is the word "Idemo" or "Hajdemo" in Croatian

2120. "Money" or cash is the word "Pare" in Croatian

2121. The term 'poofter' is repeatedly seen in reports by victims in the 1980's and 1990's as being used by offenders to abuse and insult them. The Croatian term for "poofter" or homosexual is 'Peder'. Although [REDACTED] pronounced the word to police as "Pedded" or "Peaded", he maintained that his group did not use this word, the word 'poofter', or any other words towards the victims.

2122. The Croatian for 'gay guy' is 'homic'.

2123. I PRODUCE THAT CROATIAN TRANSLATION REPORT

2124. [REDACTED]

2125. On 28 March 2014 [REDACTED], the girlfriend of [REDACTED] in 1988, provided a statement which is summarised here.


2126. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

2127. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2128. The name [REDACTED] seemed familiar to her, though she does not remember his surname. She remembers that [REDACTED] socialised with Italian men, one was called Alfred. The names [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] are not familiar to her.

2129. She is unaware of [REDACTED] being involved in any assaults or other crimes in their time together. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

2130. She says that, 'he always talked himself up about how he was going to make a lot of money yet he never really seemed to do anything', that he 'was a big noter', and 'he use to pretty much hide behind people at the slightest hint of trouble'.

2131. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]


2132. She has read about the death of Scott in the media and has no independent knowledge of the death or [REDACTED]'s connection to it.

2133. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT


2134. Person of interest [REDACTED]

2135. Police and Corrective Services records include the following matters: On [REDACTED] [REDACTED] pleaded guilty and was sentence to 5 years imprisonment for gay-hate offences of assault occasioning actual bodily harm and robbery, being the North Sydney offences (victims [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]), Reef Beach & vicinity offences (victims [REDACTED], [REDACTED]), and the Narrabeen offence ([REDACTED]).

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2136. That full time custodial sentence commenced on [REDACTED] and concluded on [REDACTED] This is inclusive of the date of Scott's death.

2137. I PRODUCE THAT CUSTODIAL RECORD

2138. The balance of his police history relates to a stolen motor bike (1984), and associations (but no offences) with [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED].

2139. Police and court holdings relative [REDACTED]'s actions during the commission of the gay-hate offences, provide an insight into the characteristics of the crimes. Those characteristics include –

2140. [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] drove cars to these various offences. At the time of the offences, [REDACTED] was unemployed but previously had done part time work at a plant nursery. He told police that he would be receiving sickness benefits as he had broken the bone on the top of his left hand while working.

2141. [REDACTED] made admissions to each offence and named his co-offenders. When questioned by North Sydney Police, [REDACTED] admits to assaulting what he called "poofers" at the park. He stated that one victim ([REDACTED]) approached him at the park and wanted to [REDACTED] to "suck him off" at which time [REDACTED] punched him in the jaw.

2142. When admitting to the offence on [REDACTED], he states that he hit the victim with a small garden stake of the type used to tie up growing trees. He does not remember how many times he hit the victim. It is unclear if he had taken the garden stake with him, or he found it in the park. He admitted to taking the victims watch. He gave it to [REDACTED] who apparently did not want it, so it was thrown out of the car window as they drove away.

2143. With the Reef Beach offences, [REDACTED] told interviewing police that no money was obtained but that "[REDACTED]", referring to [REDACTED], would have kept the jewellery. This was confirmed by [REDACTED] who returned one of the rings to police, saying the other had been thrown away.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

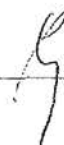
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2144. ██████ said that it was ██████'s idea to commit the offences at Reef Beach and that ██████ told ██████ and ██████ to go different direction over the Reef Beach track to find victims. ██████ went a different way the others. ██████ says that he made it up to the top (near the car park) and waited for about ten minutes until the others' returned. He heard the victim "scream".
2145. Asked why they chose Reef Beach to commit the offence, ██████ replies, "It's the most popular area where a lot of people walk around and hang about."
2146. Asked about the offence at the Narrabeen Bus Terminus upon ██████, ██████ cites the reason as, "we only bashed him because he was a poofter to get him out of there so he didn't come back".
2147. ██████ committed suicide at the home and his body was found hanged by his sister on 22 November 1998.
2148. Inquiries with the family of ██████
2149. ██████'s mother is deceased. In July 2013 police attempted to interview his father, Mr ██████. Mr ██████ is a man in his eighties and appeared to suffer from dementia or similar. This was confirmed by his neighbours. The interview did not proceed.
2150. ██████ is the sister of ██████ and was interviewed by police on 20 August, 2013. ██████ confirmed that she discovered her brother hanging by the neck in their family home and that he had suicided. She said that he was schizophrenic. She described her brother as a nice young man who was a follower. She was extremely upset that police contacted her with allegations about her dead brother. She stated her brother took the blame for many crimes that others' had committed. She did not know ██████'s associates. Their mother is now deceased and their father has dementia. ██████ ended the conversation with police and requested not to be contacted again.
2151. It has been suggested by the Johnson family that ██████'s death was a murder carried out by other members of the ██████-█████ group' to prevent him from telling authorities that they had murdered Scott.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2152. Person of Interest [REDACTED]

2153. Police records indicate that [REDACTED] received a 3 year good behaviour bond and a \$1000 fine for his role in two of the St Leonards Park, North Sydney assault occasioning actual bodily harm offences upon [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. At the time of being charged he was living in Brookvale and working at a funeral parlour at Narrabeen. He has a stealing cigarette offence in 1986 and a driving offence in 1994. [REDACTED] has a record of domestic violence offences over a number of years with his current male defacto partner. [REDACTED] was 31 years old when Scott died.

2154. When interview by North Sydney Police on 2 January 1987 for the North Sydney offences Under caution he admits to the offences and names [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] as co-offenders who he knows from them frequenting his father-in-law's shop. He says that he has known them for about two years, one year and a few months respectively. He described the assault in terms of him driving [REDACTED] from his in-laws shop, where the group played pinball, to the park where they all intended to "fag bash" as they had done on previous occasions. He told police that [REDACTED] drove [REDACTED]. He described "chasing" the intended victims, robbing them, and that one victim had a dog. He denies punching [REDACTED] but implies that he punched [REDACTED].

2155. On 18 June 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] at his home. [REDACTED] is living with his gay partner. [REDACTED] told police that he was born in Manly and for most of his life resided in the Northern Beaches suburbs of Dee Why, North Curl Curl, Narraweena and North Narrabeen. He married when he was twenty one years old and in the 1980's he worked at a supermarket in North Narrabeen that was owned by his then wife's parents. His wife also worked at the family business. They had three children, [REDACTED]. In 1988 he was living in the Narraweena and owned a [REDACTED] sedan.

2156. In the 1980's [REDACTED] got to know a group of much younger men who congregated out the front of the supermarket. The supermarket was situated across the road from the Narrabeen bus terminus. Members of the group included [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

He also recalls another young male of Indian appearance that he would see with the group on some occasions (police believe that this person is probably [REDACTED]). He remembered that this male was not as 'rowdy' as the others. [REDACTED] believed that the young men attended the same high school.

2157. The group would typically hang out the front of the supermarket on a Thursday, Friday and Saturday night. They would wait for [REDACTED] to finish work which was around 5.30pm to 6pm and request that he drive them places. He remembers taking them to a park in North Sydney, Anzac Park (suburb unknown), and into the city. At no stage did he drop them off anywhere in the Manly area.

2158. [REDACTED] acknowledged his conviction for assaulting a gay man after having been identified by the victim at court. [REDACTED] stated that it was at this time that he realised that the group was involved in "mugging" gay men after he had dropped them off at various places at night. He maintains that at no stage did he commit an assault and that he was identified because he happened to be seen with the others.

2159. [REDACTED] describes the group as "wild" and saw them fighting out the front of the supermarket on numerous occasions. He stated that the group were into martial arts and he knew that [REDACTED] carried nun-chucks. [REDACTED] knew that the group had a poor attitude towards gay men and had overheard them boasting about assaulting "fags" in the Narrabeen area. [REDACTED] did not ever hear the group mention North Head. He was unsure which group members owned cars or held a driver's licence. The group would tell [REDACTED] that they needed a lift to go to a disco for instance. Looking back he wondered how they would get into a disco club as they were dressed in dark coloured tracksuit pants and running shoes.

2160. [REDACTED] said his realisation about what the group was probably doing also came when he saw articles in the Manly Daily describing assaults on men in the areas of the Northern Beaches where he had given the group a lift to.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2161. ██████ said that he was using gay beats from the late 1970's until meeting his current partner in the 1990's. His wife was unaware of this. He was regularly having anonymous sex with men during the time he was associating with ██████ and the group. ██████ frequented a gay beat at the Narrabeen bus terminus and another in the car park in Winborne Road Brookvale. He also went to Oxford Street and Kings Cross gay bars including The Rex Hotel. He did not go to The Signal bar.
2162. He was unaware that the area in North Head was a gay beat and stated that the only time he ever went to North Head was with his wife to the car park lookout area to have sex with her in the car. He stated that if he knew there was a gay beat in the North Head area he would have used it.
2163. ██████ stated that he has no knowledge of the death of Scott. He first heard about the death when he was contacted by a journalist, Mr Glick, who requested a meeting. ██████ agreed but a meeting has not taken place.
2164. ██████ claims to have had no contact with any member of the group for many years. ██████ denied having anything to do with the death of Scott.
2165. Person of Interest ██████
2166. Police and Corrective Service records includes that ██████ was born on ██████ in Yugoslavia. He completed the School Certificate when he was 16 years old and then left ██████. He was 19 years old when Scott died. Probation and Parole records indicate that in 1987 and 1988 he was living with his parents and changed jobs a number of times that year. He has been a long-term resident of the northern beaches of Sydney and he currently lives with his wife of twenty four years.
2167. In his typed record of interview with the police on 31 December 1986, ██████ admits to the offence against ██████ on 26 December 1986. He also admits to an assault of another male at the same time as ██████'s offence and appears to be an unknown male who came to the assistance of ██████. He tells police that about 3.30pm that day he met up with ██████ and ██████ at

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Narrabeen to play pool. The place is thought to be the Narrabeen Snooker Hall, Waterloo Street, North Narrabeen. Together they decided to go to Reef Beach and travelled there in [REDACTED]'s vehicle (the one identified by [REDACTED] was registered to [REDACTED]'s mother). Some of [REDACTED]'s answers provide an insight into this type of offence and are reproduced here –

2168. [REDACTED] states. "We walked up to the bushes at the (Reef Beach) headland, walked around and had a look. We all went our separate ways to lure a poofter into the bushes. Then [REDACTED] hit this man, he was rushing towards me and I tripped him over. He got up and ran away. This other man came behind me and I kicked (him) in the gut and he bent over. Then [REDACTED] took over...Then the guy I kicked and bashed came running towards me yelling "you cunt" and I pushed (him) down the rocks. He went into the lantana. He had a bag and [REDACTED] said 'give me your bag' and he said 'no', and [REDACTED] hit him. Then we were running towards the car and a man said 'your father will be proud'. [REDACTED] went back to the man and layed (sic) a few more punches into him. We then rushed up to the car and we went and [REDACTED] dropped us off home."

2169. [REDACTED] said that it was [REDACTED]' idea to go to Reef Beach. Their motive was "Just to give the homosexuals a good hiding", and "He was coming towards me and I knew he was a poofter so I kicked him".

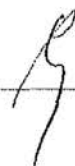
2170. When asked, "Did you steal anything from this man?". [REDACTED] said, "No, I didn't, but [REDACTED] took a couple of rings, he usually does steal something from them." [REDACTED] later says that [REDACTED] gave him \$8 from a wallet he had stolen during the offence. The victim did not report that his wallet had been stolen.

2171. As he was a juvenile, [REDACTED] was on remand after being charged and was sentenced in April 1987. He received a 2 year good behaviour bond for these offences with weekend detention of twelve (12) weeks at Newcastle. Records indicate that he was under the supervision of Probation and Parole for the

Witness:



Signature:


_____ P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

remand period and until [REDACTED]. His Probation and Parole supervisor made records during that period which include -

2172. On 5 February 1987, Probation and Parole spoke to an arresting officer for the Reef Beach offence. This entry is an insight into the Manly Police concerns at the time. The officer told Probation and Parole that he did not think at [REDACTED] was the 'ring leader' and suggest that at the North Sydney offence the older man, [REDACTED], may have been the leader. Police thought that the offences were primarily gay-hate related, even if not all the victims were homosexual. Police told Probation and Parole that [REDACTED] showed no remorse or regret at all.
2173. There is a note in that file that the officer spoken to told Probation and Parole that the victim, [REDACTED], told them that he feared for his life when he was submerged in water by the offenders. This circumstance is not represented as such in the original report or the court facts. The officer also said that gay-hate offences generally were numerous and occurred not only in Reef Beach but in North Sydney Park and Moore Park.
2174. On 16 February 1987, Probation and Parole records 'He ([REDACTED]) said that homosexuals made him feel sick , but know he has understood by talking to his folks, that now he leads his life and they lead their lives'
2175. On 11 March 1987, Probation and Parole spoke with North Sydney Police about the offences in that area that [REDACTED]'s co-offenders were charged with. They record that the police think that [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are responsible for more offences in North Sydney Park. The reports by the two victims had not suggested a gay-hate motive although the offences had occurred late at night.
2176. On 16 March 1987 [REDACTED] tells Probation and Parole that his training with karate and weights occupied a lot of his time, so much so, that he was reluctant to take on full time job.
2177. From Probation and Parole records it appears that in the closing months of 1988, [REDACTED] was a [REDACTED] (though he said it was advertising) for a [REDACTED] company in [REDACTED] was still living at his parent's home northern

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

suburbs home, and hoped to marry a 'Yugoslavian girl'. The last in-person contact that Probation and Parole had with [REDACTED] in 1988 was on 28 November 1988 at their Warringah Mall office. The next in-person contact is on 6 February 1989 and there are no relevant matters arise.

2178. I PRODUCE THOSE PROBATION & PAROLE RECORDS

2179. [REDACTED] has additional entries for: 1987 in Manly, malicious injury to property; 1987 at Warriewood, assault occasioning actual bodily harm upon a male school student who he alleged called him a 'wog'. This matter is the same one referred to in Crime Stoppers Report I51487408 earlier; 1990 at Manly, he assaulted, with multiple punches, a fellow patient at Manly District Hospital. He is also known for domestic violence matters with his wife.

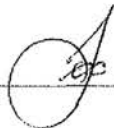
2180. The hospital incident was described by police to Probation and Parole on 14 May 1990 as being on a 50 year old patient who was hit by [REDACTED] up to thirty (30) times and cause a wound to his head. When police arrived [REDACTED] slammed his head against doors, screamed and cried.

2181. On 26 June 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED]. He stated that in the 1980's he associated with a group that included [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and a male he only knew as [REDACTED]. In [REDACTED]'s opinion the group, who were mainly of European decent, were not accepted by their peers due to their ethnicity. As a direct result they took their anger out on strangers. At that time in his life he practiced martial arts and held a green belt in karate.

2182. He admitted that he and his group targeted men at gay beats at North Sydney Park, Narrabeen bus terminus, the toilet block at Narrabeen beach and another in Mona Vale. He said that he had nothing against homosexuals but that he used violence against homosexuals as a means of taking his anger out on someone.

2183. When asked, he denied any knowledge of a gay beat at North Head and that he and his group never went there to commit assaults.

Witness:



Signature:




P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2184. ██████ stated that he did not have a licence then and that his group would ask for lifts from others who included ██████. He did not remember if ██████ was ever involved in or charged with assaults.
2185. He remembers that in 1986 he was arrested for an assault on a gay man at a beat and charged accordingly. He appeared at Glebe Court in 1987 and was sentenced to weekend detention for twelve weeks in the Hunter Region. He attended this program from 10am Saturday to 4pm Sunday on each weekend. ██████ was able to produce documents of this program to police.
2186. ██████ stated that after having been charged and convicted of this assault, he ceased associating with the group. He stated that his charge brought great shame on his family. ██████ occasionally sees ██████ in the Northern Beaches area but does not engage him in conversation as he does not want to get involved with him again.
2187. Prior to police approaching him, ██████ had not heard of Scott or his death. He says he has no knowledge of the group ever going to North Head or being involved in the death of a person.
2188. On 19 February 2014 when covert telephone operations were underway, police went to ██████'s upper northern beaches home address. The home is owned by his parents-in-law and he lives in a granny flat at that address with his wife, ██████. At that address police spoke to his parents-in-laws and told them that they wanted to speak with ██████ about the death of Scott. Some detail was provided about the death, including the date, and location and it was explained that due to ██████'s 1987 gay-hate charges he was a person of interest. Police told them that the family of Scott believed that he was murdered. The parents-in-law appeared shocked and disbelieved that ██████ could be involved at all. Police asked that ██████ be told of their visit and the reason and they left a Homicide Squad contact number for this purpose. The purpose of police initiating this conversation was to cause ██████ to react by either telephoning or visiting ██████, ██████, or others in the group and talking about his crimes, potentially his involvement in a murder at North Head.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

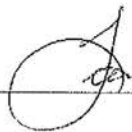
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2189. Police then went to the northern beaches business of [REDACTED]'s wife and told her the same details. The wife was also told that one of the group that [REDACTED] socialised with at the time of Scott's death has named him as committing gay-hate crimes at North Head. Also that police have been told that when [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were out at Manly one night that they disappeared together for a while, came back 'spooked', and some gay-hate crimes may have been done then. [REDACTED]'s wife appeared shocked and told police that she knew him in 1988 and that he stopped offending at that time. They married in 1990. She disbelieved that [REDACTED] was involved. The purpose of this conversation by police was to get [REDACTED] to react by either telephoning or visiting [REDACTED], [REDACTED], or others in the group and talking about his crimes, potentially his involvement in a murder at North Head. The purpose of police initiating this conversation was to cause [REDACTED] to react by either telephoning or visiting [REDACTED], [REDACTED], or others in the group and talking about his crimes, and potentially his involvement in a murder at North Head.

2190. On 20 February 2014 police contacted [REDACTED] and at his workplace. He told police that he had sought legal advice and that he was not going to answer police questions. However he did then agree that he would meet police at his home that day. Police attend his home that morning. Despite his legal advice, [REDACTED] agreed to answer police questions if they did not write anything down. His previous gay-hate crimes and the belief by the family of Scott, that Scott was murdered was discussed and he was shown a photographic media image of Scott. [REDACTED] denied any involvement and said that in 1988 he had not seen the group for some time. [REDACTED] [REDACTED]. He said that he does not see [REDACTED] and that he thinks that he became a heroin addict. On any occasion since they were charged, if he saw [REDACTED] he would just wave and not talk.

2191. Since being charged he married his Italian wife and socialised with Italians. He told police that his teenage years were a struggle with others'. He obtained a

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

black belt in martial arts. He said that he use to be good with his fists and had been in plenty of fights.

2192. [REDACTED] was told the group names of [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and he said this was his group in the 1980's but there were others' that he declined to name. He had not heard of [REDACTED] (named to police by [REDACTED]). He and his friends did not have a group or gang name. They were into cars and impressing girls.

2193. He was told that one of his group had named him as being involved in gay assaults and thereby that he may be responsible for the death of Scott at North Head. He said he knew nothing of the death and 'wished it would go away'.

2194. He said that he assaulted gay men as he associated them with paedophiles from the time that he first heard about a paedophile assault in a toilet. He said he felt remorse and regret over his gay-hate crimes.

2195. He said that he use to go with the group to OP's nightclub in Manly, and that he remembers seeing the Manly Police there who later charged him.

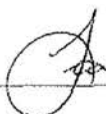
2196. The purpose of police initiating this conversation was to get [REDACTED] to make an admission or to react by either telephoning or visiting [REDACTED], [REDACTED], or others in the group and talking about his crimes, and potentially his involvement in a murder at North Head.

2197. Person of Interest [REDACTED]

2198. Police and Corrective Services records indicate that the charges for the 1986 North Sydney, Reef Beach, and Narrabeen offences went to trial and he was convicted of three robbery-in-company offences and seven assault occasioning actual bodily harm offences. On [REDACTED] he was sentenced to 18 months imprisonment to be served by way of periodic detention. The periodic detention commenced on [REDACTED] and concluded on [REDACTED]

2199. It appears that subsequent to him being charged with these offences, he made contact with Manly Police and, as is recorded in the court facts, he 'has

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

assisted with information that has led to the successful arrest and prosecution of persons for serious criminal offences'.

2200. He has a 1982 offence for a break and enter, and a 2011 street offence (urinating).

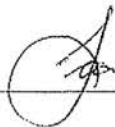
2201. In the interview for the 1986 offences on 1 January 1987, he tells police what motivated him to assault gay men in these terms, "We heard on the TV and radio about them assaulting children. We wanted to do something about it. The first one was about three weeks ago up at the park near the bowling club. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] started hitting and kicking him and then me and [REDACTED] joined in. One of them got his watch", and, "(We go) to bash the men who have sex with other men. We take their money and whatever they have on them", and "Just the way he looked at us, he raised his eyebrows."

2202. On Thursday 26 September 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED]. He is separated from this wife, [REDACTED], and lives with his parents. He was born in Yugoslavia and arrived in Australia with his parents in 1970.

2203. He was asked about his 1987 convictions for assaults and robberies on gay men and what motivated him to commit these offences. His response was that he had heard that a four year old girl had been molested at the Narrabeen bus terminus public toilets. Not long after that he was in the vicinity of the Narrabeen terminus public toilets and when a male allegedly went to touch him he assaulted the male. He also admitted to committing the offence near the Narrabeen Beach surf club for which he was also convicted.

2204. [REDACTED] denied being involved with the offences at North Sydney and Reef Beach for which he was convicted. He said that police forced him to make a hand written statement and that he copied the statement made by co-offender, [REDACTED]. He stated that he was physically assaulted by the police, held in custody for three days and spoken to by various detectives during this period. He names the main police detectives who did these things to him as Paterson and Peatie.

Witness:



Signature:

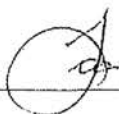


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2205. [REDACTED] believes that he was originally charged with fifty two offences but by the time the matter got to court the offences numbered twelve and this included what was explained to him by his solicitor as being 'back-up' charges. He remembers being convicted and sentenced to eighteen months weekend detection. [REDACTED] believes that he commenced the weekend detention shortly after the matter was heard at court and that he did not miss a weekend. He said that it was a very difficult time in his life.
2206. [REDACTED] said that after being charged with these offences he stopped associating with co-offenders [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], saying that if he happened to see them in the street or at a venue he would be polite and say hello but did not engage with them any further. He also claims not to have committed any other crimes and that he spent the majority of his time with his then girlfriend, [REDACTED], who later became his wife.
2207. [REDACTED] was questioned about his knowledge of North Head at Manly. He stated that he first started going to North Head when he got his driver's license around 1985. He started driving to North Head with his then girlfriend, [REDACTED], or other women for the purpose of being physically intimate with them. They would be intimate in the car in the public car parking area which overlooks the city. Police showed him a panoramic photograph of the eastern side of North Head, including the cliff and ocean. He identified the water as the place he started to spear fish at about ten years ago. [REDACTED] stated that prior to that time he did not go to the east side of North Head and that he has never been to the eastern cliff top area depicted in the photo.
2208. When asked, [REDACTED] stated that he was not aware that North Head had been a gay beat but that he knew gay beats had operated at public toilets at the Narrabeen bus terminus and North Narrabeen beach.
2209. He was asked how he would get around the local area when he was in high school. His response was that if he did not have a car to drive or a lift that he would not bother to take public transport as it was too difficult from that area.

Witness:



Signature:

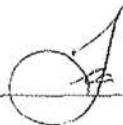


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2210. When asked about his associates, he said that he first met [REDACTED] through going to a fruit shop at North Narrabeen which was owned by [REDACTED]'s in-laws. He explained that [REDACTED] was much older than him and his friends and would drive the group around sometimes. He was asked when the last time he saw any of this group was, he replied he last saw [REDACTED] incidentally at a funeral he attended that [REDACTED] was working at. He stated that he was aware that [REDACTED] had entered a gay relationship having been told probably by [REDACTED]'s former wife or her family.
2211. [REDACTED] could not recall how he became friendly with [REDACTED] but thought it may have been through one of his other friends. He remembers that [REDACTED] could be unpredictable and moody due to sustaining a brain injury from a car accident as a child. He was asked about the death of [REDACTED] and said that he had heard that [REDACTED] had hanged himself in gaol.
2212. He recalled that [REDACTED] thought of himself as having the fighting skills of a 'Ninja'. He stated that he has not seen [REDACTED] for years, but if he was to come across him that he would not ignore him.
2213. The other friends that he mentioned to police are [REDACTED]'s brother [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]. He and [REDACTED] went to 'rockabilly' dances at the Lansdowne Hotel together. He stated that he stopped associating with [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] when they became involved in drugs. He mentioned a [REDACTED] whom he saw infrequently. He was asked if he associated with a person of Pacific Islander origin in the late 1980's and remembers a 'Chris' but does not know his surname or other details about him. He said he went to school with [REDACTED] but was not friendly with him. He claims not to know [REDACTED] or [REDACTED].
2214. [REDACTED] was asked about the [REDACTED]-owned pizza shop at Narrabeen and says he remembers going there infrequently. He remembers the man who owned it.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2215. [REDACTED] was asked about [REDACTED] and said that he got to know the [REDACTED] family when working at the Manly Lodge doing tiling work. He stated that he got on very well with the family in particular the father, [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] entrusted [REDACTED] to take his son's, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], out sometimes. Also he was made an executor of [REDACTED]'s estate but that [REDACTED] made his father remove him from that role. After [REDACTED] died he remembers [REDACTED] living with himself and his wife when [REDACTED] told him that [REDACTED] had thrown his belongings out of the family home they had shared.
2216. [REDACTED] was asked if he knew [REDACTED]. He said that he knew him from school and the local area and that [REDACTED] was a few years younger than him. He knew [REDACTED] to be a [REDACTED] and that he had a younger brother. He remembers that [REDACTED] played football and that he was found deceased in his front yard.
2217. [REDACTED] was aware of [REDACTED]'s reputation as a "poofter basher" from local rumour. He said he did not speak to [REDACTED] about assaulting gay men.
2218. For strategic reasons police did not ask [REDACTED] about [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] did not mention his association with [REDACTED].
2219. Police showed [REDACTED] a picture of Scott in a Sydney Morning Herald article dated 27 July 2013 and was told of his body being found at the base of North Head. He was told that Scott's family think that Scott was pushed over the cliff and murdered. [REDACTED] was asked if he recognised Scott which he denied. [REDACTED] was asked if he was involved in the death which he denied. He said that whilst he had assaulted people he would not push or throw anyone off a cliff. He denied committing any offences at North Head.
2220. [REDACTED] asked that police pass onto Scott's family his condolences and denials. [REDACTED] appeared to police to have mild cognitive difficulties with concentration and speech.
2221. On 4 March 2014, during the telephone covert operations, police called [REDACTED] and explained that that they wanted to speak with him about gay-hate offences in the 1980's.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2222. On 4 March 2014 police received a return call from Mr Bruno Cara, a solicitor representing [REDACTED]. Mr Cara had also represented [REDACTED] for the 1986 offence charges. Mr Cara explained that [REDACTED] had contacted him after police spoke to him that morning. Mr Cara was told that an associate of [REDACTED] had told police that [REDACTED] had been involved in more gay-hate offences than he had been charged for on the northern beaches in the 1980's. Mr Cara would call police back after speaking with [REDACTED].

2223. On 5 March 2014 police contacted Mr Cara and gave him more details of the allegation. That included that the offences were in 1988 and that the allegation had been made during the police reinvestigation into the death of Scott at North Head in December 1988. Mr Cara asked if the associate who had named [REDACTED] was looking for a consideration as to a sentence reduction and he was told no. Mr Cara was told that the associate had also made the allegation to the family of Scott. Police told him that they wanted to formally interview [REDACTED] and put the allegations to him. Mr Cara was going to seek instructions from [REDACTED].

2224. On 12 March 2014 police contacted Mr Cara and an arrangement was made to interview [REDACTED] at Gosford Police Station on 14 March, 2014. [REDACTED] was working and staying in the Gosford area during this period. On 14 March 2014 an electronic interview took place and very specific allegations relating to the death of Scott and the information provided by [REDACTED] was put to him. He declined to answer any questions on advice from his solicitor.

2225. I PRODUCE THAT ELECTRONIC INTERVIEW

2226. The purpose of police initiating these conversations was to get [REDACTED] to make an admission or to react by either telephoning or visiting [REDACTED], [REDACTED] or others in the group and talking about his crimes, and potentially his involvement in a murder at North Head.

2227. Call charge records show no contact to or from [REDACTED] to any other person of interest with the exception of [REDACTED]. Phone contact between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] can be described as regular and friendly and also supports regular

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

personal contact between them. During the operation ██████ provided renovation work at ██████'s take-away food business. At the times of police contact with ██████ or his associates there was no immediate or increased contact made between the parties. During the covert monitoring period there were no words, conversations or SMS messages on any topic related to the matter specifically or in general terms.

2228. ██████

2229. On 8 July 2013 police interviewed ██████ the former wife of ██████. ██████ informed police that she met ██████ around 1986 when she was 16 years old. They were engaged and married in 1991 and divorced about 2010. They have three children together but do not speak frequently anymore.

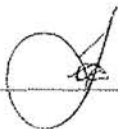
2230. She was aware that ██████ had been arrested and had served eighteen months weekend detention for assaults that he committed before they met. She also believes that ██████ had been convicted of numerous crimes that he had not committed. ██████ describes ██████ of having a "hatred" for homosexuals saying that "he did not believe in it". She thought that assaulting gay men was a game to ██████ at that time.

2231. ██████ stated that she was in a relationship with ██████ in 1988 and there was nothing about him that made her think that he was continuing to commit assaults after his conviction for the 1986 matters. She recalls that ██████ had a civil case brought against him by one of the victims and had to pay compensation for fractured the victim's arm.

2232. From what ██████ told her, she believes that ██████ played a minor role in the assaults by 'only' throwing a few punches and that he was assaulted by police when they arrested him. She stated that the police held him in a police cell for three days until his bruises subsided.

2233. They did not have their own car in 1988 and ██████ drove his mothers Commodore sometimes. ██████ remembers driving to the car park on the top of North Head frequently with ██████. She calls it a "lover's area". She was aware

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

that suicides sometimes occurred on North Head. She was not aware that there was a gay beat on North Head. She had not been to the car park at Shelly Beach with [REDACTED].

2234. Of [REDACTED]'s friends in the 1980's, [REDACTED] only met [REDACTED]. She believed that [REDACTED] was the leader in the group and that other friends included [REDACTED], and a male of Greek origin.

2235. [REDACTED] stated that [REDACTED] has a friend called [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] They have been friends for years but she is not aware if [REDACTED] was friends with [REDACTED] or the others' in the 1980's. She stated that [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] have had many fights over the years however, as far as she is aware, they are currently on good terms.

2236. [REDACTED] knew the names [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and that [REDACTED] is not friendly with [REDACTED] due to issues surrounding the estate of their father.

2237. [REDACTED] was told of the death of Scott and she does not believe that [REDACTED] would ever intentionally throw a person off a cliff. [REDACTED] has no knowledge of the death of Scott.

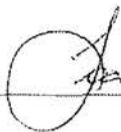
2238. The purpose of police initiating this conversation was to cause [REDACTED] [REDACTED] to react by either telephoning or visiting [REDACTED], [REDACTED], or others in the group and talking about crimes, and potentially their involvement in a murder at North Head.

2239. Person of Interest [REDACTED]

2240. Police systems record that [REDACTED] has entries for drug and stealing offences. There are no personal violence offences. He was seen by police associating with [REDACTED] in 1985. He was born on [REDACTED] and was 21 years old at the time of Scott's death.

2241. On 19 August 2013 police interviewed with [REDACTED] at his home. [REDACTED] confirmed that he knew [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] from being around the Narrabeen area. He did not go to the same high school as

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

them. He also knows [REDACTED] who worked for a local funeral director. He denied being part of a group or being close friends with any of them. He denied ever being in a car owned or driven by [REDACTED].

2242. He stated he was a "rockabilly" type and got into the drug scene with [REDACTED] and that [REDACTED], the older brother of [REDACTED], was his drug supplier back then.

2243. [REDACTED] claims to be unaware that there was a gay beat at North Head. He knew of the gay beat at the Narrabeen bus terminus. He remembers reading in the Manly Daily about [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] assaulting a priest at the Narrabeen public toilets.

2244. He stated he got into fights with [REDACTED] and 'mods' on occasions when he went into the city. He denied ever being involved in gay assaults but said that he sometimes went into the city with [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. Between the ages of eighteen to twenty one he was involved in a long term relationship and spent the majority of his free time with his girlfriend.

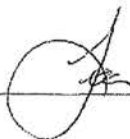
2245. [REDACTED] said that he moved to Canberra in the early 1990's where he lived and worked for eight years as he needed to get away from the local areas and get off heroin. He has spent time in rehab and is currently an AA co-coordinator. He is living with his parents in Narrabeen and currently studying.

2246. He denied having any knowledge or involvement in the death of Scott.

2247. On 19 February 2014 during the covert telephone operation, police again spoke with [REDACTED] about the group members, gay-hate crimes and the death of Scott in 1988. He was told that one member of the group had named him as being involved in gay-hate crime at North Head. He was told that the family of Scott believe that Scott was murdered.

2248. The names [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were put to [REDACTED]. He told police that he did not know [REDACTED] but knew [REDACTED] from the area. He again told police that he was not a regular member of the [REDACTED] group as he was a 'rockabilly' type.

Witness:



Signature:

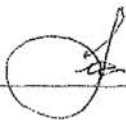


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2249. He told police that after they had spoken to him on 19 August 2013 he had run into [REDACTED] at a pub and asked [REDACTED] if police had spoken to him about the Johnson matter. [REDACTED] told him that police had talked to him and they both had denied knowing anything about it.
2250. [REDACTED] said that [REDACTED] was a 'big aggressor' and that [REDACTED] would only get into fights if they arose. He had heard [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] talk about 'bashing' gays many years ago. [REDACTED] said that in the 1980's gay men did not concern him unless he was approached, but claims never to have been approached by a gay man.
2251. [REDACTED] said that in the 1980's on the northern beaches there was a group of Slovakiens' who called themselves the 'Warriewood Wogs', and a group of Italians who called themselves the 'Brookvale Wogs'.
2252. The purpose of police initiating these conversations was to get [REDACTED] to make an admission or to react by either telephoning or visiting [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] or others and talking about the crimes, and potentially his involvement in a murder at North Head.
2253. Person of Interest [REDACTED]
2254. [REDACTED] said that he was a friend of [REDACTED]'s in the 1980's. The Johnson family also told police that [REDACTED] had named [REDACTED] as a member of their group, however [REDACTED] did not mention this name to police.
2255. Police systems record that [REDACTED] was with [REDACTED] at Mona Vale on 14 January 1989 when they committed an assault. He has entries for drugs, domestic violence and primarily traffic offences. [REDACTED] was born on 27 December 1967, and was 21 years old when Scott died.
2256. On 20 August 2013 police interviewed [REDACTED] who said that he knew [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] from growing up in the same area. From local talk he was aware they got in trouble with the police for assaulting gay men and knew that [REDACTED] had gone to goal. They use to see each other from hanging out at the pizza shop at Narrabeen. He said you went

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

there for pizza and to play the pinball machine. ██████ did not go to school with them.

2257. He remembers the numbers of youths that would congregate at the pizza shop was quite large. He remembers ██████ and ██████ hanging out at the pizza shop as well as a youth called ██████ but he did not know who's group he was in. He also remembers the name ██████ and that he is now in a gay relationship. He described ██████ as a 'rockabilly' type and that the two of them got involved in drugs. He did not know the name ██████.

2258. He said that he spent most of his youth fixing up his car and drag racing. Of all the pizza shop youths he mostly got on with ██████ but has not seen him since the early 1990's. He was aware that ██████ and his younger brother, ██████, were ██████ then and apparently assaulted gay men.

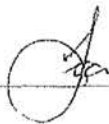
2259. ██████ did not know that North Head was a gay beat but knew it as a car parking point where people 'made out' in their cars. He thought beats were only in public toilets. ██████ denied being involved in any gay assaults and denied having any knowledge or involvement in the death of Scott.

2260. ██████ and ██████

2261. On 12 August 2013 police interviewed ██████ and ██████ who are a brother and sister who grew up in the northern beaches of Sydney. Their parents owned a pizza shop on Pittwater Road at Narrabeen in the 1980's and the family lived above the shop. ██████ was 7 years old when Scott died.

2262. ██████ told police that he first heard of the death of Scott in the last few years when told by a boxing friend of his, former NSW police officer Mr Page (see Taradale). Mr Page told him that he had been contacted by a journalist called Daniel Glick who had been employed to look into the death of Scott. Mr Page asked ██████ if he had any information regarding gay assaults on the Northern Beaches and if so would he be willing to speak with the journalist. ██████ told Mr Page that he had only heard rumours but that he was willing to speak with the journalist.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2263. [REDACTED] was subsequently contacted by Mr Glick. Mr Glick told A [REDACTED] that he believed that Scott was the victim of a murder and that if he was able to find enough accounts of gay assaults then Scott's family would have cause to have Scott's case be re-opened.

2264. [REDACTED] agreed to meet Mr Glick at a club in Sydney city. The meeting started with Mr Glick asking [REDACTED] if he knew the names [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]. Mr Glick told [REDACTED] that he believed this group was actively involved in gay assaults in the northern beaches in the 1980's and that [REDACTED] in particular was involved in the murder of Scott.

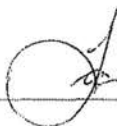
2265. [REDACTED] confirmed that he and his sister, [REDACTED], knew of them as youths who would congregate at their parent's pizza shop. [REDACTED] remembers another group member called [REDACTED] (Police believe this is probably [REDACTED]). [REDACTED] says that he has no direct or indirect knowledge of any crimes committed by those people but that he had heard a lot of rumours over the years about gay assaults. [REDACTED] could not remember from whom or in what circumstances he had heard the rumours. He remembers that [REDACTED] was a loner and that he had heard that [REDACTED] was a nasty and violent person.

2266. [REDACTED] said that he made it clear to Mr Glick that he only knew rumours about these people. [REDACTED] informed Mr Glick that he had no knowledge of the death of Scott. Both [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] emphasised this fact to police.

2267. Due to their connection with Narrabeen, the [REDACTED] also provided the following information about the so called [REDACTED]:

2268. On 12 August 2013 [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] told police that they knew of a [REDACTED] group formed by Narrabeen youths in the 1980's and who also gathered at their parent's Narrabeen pizza shop. [REDACTED] [REDACTED] [REDACTED] The group were [REDACTED], [REDACTED] [REDACTED] (now deceased), [REDACTED], [REDACTED] [REDACTED] (now deceased), and [REDACTED] (surname unknown). [REDACTED] said that she was friends with [REDACTED] in the 1980's and that she had heard rumours that [REDACTED] was involved

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

in gay assaults but they never spoke of it. [REDACTED] was aware that [REDACTED] went to the Surry Hills area on occasions to meet with other [REDACTED]

2269. Police asked [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] if they knew [REDACTED] as a member of the [REDACTED] group. Both confirmed that they knew him and his twin sister, [REDACTED], but that he was not a member of the [REDACTED] group. They knew of [REDACTED] and that he was known as a steroid user and a [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] was a friend of [REDACTED]. They had not heard of [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] or [REDACTED].

2270. [REDACTED] told police that [REDACTED] eventually grew out of his [REDACTED] phase and started hanging out with an Italian group. That group was [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED]. The [REDACTED] brothers were rumoured to be illegal gamblers but not known to assault gay men.

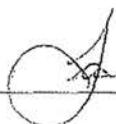
2271. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] told police that they were not aware that there was a gay beat at North Head in the 1980's. They had heard that public toilets were areas where gay men had sex in that period.

2272. Also at [REDACTED]'s meeting with Mr Glick at the club in the city was [REDACTED] and two male associates who he was told were [REDACTED]'s bodyguards. He remembers one of them introducing himself as 'The Jackal'. 'The Jackal' brought to the meeting a long tube and [REDACTED] heard a comment that the tube contained blueprints to an army barracks which they had for the purpose of stealing weapons.


2273. [REDACTED] have known [REDACTED] for many years as another northern beaches local and from school. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] describe [REDACTED] as a compulsive liar who displayed manic behaviour. They remember [REDACTED] being regularly picked on and called a 'fag' by [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] at school.

2274. [REDACTED] informed police that after one of his meetings with Mr Glick that Mr Glick put two hundred dollars cash in [REDACTED]'s pocket. Mr Glick told [REDACTED] that he

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

would pay him for any further information he provided in relation to gay assaults on the Northern Beaches and that if [REDACTED] wanted, he would arrange to have [REDACTED] put on a "payroll". [REDACTED] was not offered any money.

2275. Information from [REDACTED]

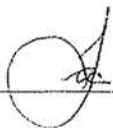
2276. [REDACTED] is identified in documents provided by the Johnson family as an unnamed 'source' who purportedly had information about the gay-hate activities of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], as well as suspecting [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] (deceased) as being involved in gay-hate activity.

2277. [REDACTED] contacted police 9 July 2013 and stated, "I can assist with the North Head murders". Arrangements were made to meet with him on 30 July 2013. On that day [REDACTED] told police that he had information relating to the death of Scott but that he did not consent to the recording of his statement by way of writing or electronic recording.

2278. [REDACTED] stated that he was initially contacted by [REDACTED] after Mr Glick put them in contact. He was asked if he wanted to help solve murders on the Northern Beaches in the 1980's. He first met Mr Glick at Sydney Tattersall's Club, Pitt Street Sydney who asked him if he knew [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

2279. [REDACTED] told police that in the 1980's he socialised in the back room of the [REDACTED] family fruit and vegetable shop in Narrabeen. The back room was used as a gambling hall which was frequented by [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] said that he would go there as he had a crush on [REDACTED]'s sister. [REDACTED] recalled that on one occasion when he was about 19 years old, in 1988 or 1989, he was in the back room when he heard [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] boasting about assaulting gay men. He recalled [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] telling him that they used one person as the "bait" to walk into a gay bar, and when the bait walked out with a man the others in would attack the man.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2280. He recalled that the group would frequent Collaroy Beach, the car park of Shelly Beach, Manly, the Wakehurst Parkway, and Avalon. [REDACTED] was never present during any of these alleged assaults.
2281. [REDACTED] further recalled overhearing a conversation between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] where five members of the group travelled by car to Collaroy Beach and bashed gays with baseball bats.
2282. [REDACTED] recalled hearing a rumour that the group had travelled to Woolloomooloo where they "grabbed a bloke from the Exchange Hotel and pushed him down the stairs" and then beat the male with a pipe. When [REDACTED] asked [REDACTED] if the victim got up, [REDACTED] said, "No he was down for the count".
2283. [REDACTED] stated that in the 1980's [REDACTED] dealt drugs from a brothel in Brookvale called 'Sensuality' that was above an indoor netball centre. He had heard a rumour that [REDACTED] had been raped as a child by a male in a public toilet block at Warriewood and that his hatred of gays stemmed from this incident.
2284. During the interview, [REDACTED] appeared to want the police to be impressed that he was part of an underground criminal element. In the first few minutes of meeting [REDACTED] he volunteered to police that he had recently worked with disgraced former detective Roger Rogerson, that he was Tim Bristow's "best friend" and business partner prior to his death and that he claimed to be a close associate of alleged organised crime identity, John Ibrahim.
2285. [REDACTED] made claims of paying corrupt police, stated that he is currently working as a private investigator, and claims to own a photography business.
2286. [REDACTED] has no knowledge about the death of Scott.
2287. Police records indicate that [REDACTED] has been convicted of possessing stolen goods, break and enter, armed robbery, robbery, stealing a motor vehicle, drug offences, and firearm offences.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2288. There is a 1990 police intelligence report that [REDACTED] told police that [REDACTED] [REDACTED] was his current guardian and he lived with him at Narrabeen Park Parade. [REDACTED] is named as a 'source' in documents provided by the Johnson family and he has given information implicating the [REDACTED]-[REDACTED] group. When interviewed by police, [REDACTED] did not disclose a prior association with [REDACTED], an apparent well known violent offender with gay-hate motives.

2289. Information from [REDACTED]

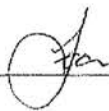
2290. An email from Mr Glick to the police dated 8 May 2013 includes the following information.

2291. 'On 29 April, I received an unsolicited email from [REDACTED], who was the first person to bring [REDACTED]'s name to my attention in 2007. I have been periodically in touch with [REDACTED] since then, and had asked him in 2011 whether he would speak to police to prepare for the June 2011 Inquest...([REDACTED]) had originally been unwilling to speak with police. He subsequently changed his mind and agreed...'

2292. 'To be absolutely clear, I had not contacted [REDACTED] since I wrote him to tell him about Strike Force Macnamir in February 2013. Out of the blue, [REDACTED] wrote to me asking for my opinion and support from Steve (Johnson) for a musical project he is working on. I wrote him back and took the opportunity to remind him that he had once alluded to the possibility that he could add other information to our investigation, and asked him what that might be. He wrote back the following lengthy email...'

2293. Mr Glick continues; *"Some headlines (in the following email from [REDACTED] [REDACTED] dated 7 May 2013), as far as I'm concerned, include: More corroboration that [REDACTED] was a violent martial artist and bragged about being a serial gay basher; Corroboration that the [REDACTED] brothers paid off police so [REDACTED] would receive a lighter sentence for his assaults; Sordid details of various Manly sociopaths' behavior (sic) and family background that may link [REDACTED] and other potential assailants, and names of potential witnesses; Information that supports*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

one hypothesis that we have presented that a gang called [REDACTED] may have been involved in gay bashing; Information that supports one hypothesis that we have presented: that St. Paul's College may have fostered an atmosphere of sexual abuse and violence that may have contributed to North Head assaults on gay men."

2294. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL

2295. The relevant matters in the email referred to by Mr Glick are reproduced here.

[REDACTED] writes;

2296. "Hi [REDACTED]. I hope this helps a lot. I have assumed that everything I have told you about [REDACTED] prior to this you have already passed on to (the police)...For the cops...";

2297. "I was best friends in primary school and some of high school with a boy called [REDACTED] who lived on [REDACTED] Manly..During my friendship with [REDACTED] from around age 9 to 15 (we were the same age a few days apart his Birthday was if I remember rightly [REDACTED] 1979 - I was born [REDACTED] 1979)..."

2298. "I met (another) one son and one daughter. The son I met is named [REDACTED], and I heard that he was convicted of either manslaughter or assault with a deadly weapon due to his martial arts training after getting in a fight at Manly Wharf sometime in the late 90's, the victim fell badly after he was hit by [REDACTED] and hurt his neck, I believe this left the man seriously paralysed for life, and the courts went hard on [REDACTED] due to his training."

2299. "[REDACTED] was best friends in childhood and into adulthood with [REDACTED] [REDACTED] - I'm not sure of the spelling of the surname... [REDACTED] I recall told me one time at least "I know that [REDACTED]" meaning [REDACTED]. I believe there is a likely connection between them all and martial arts and violence on the northern beaches which may bring up some leads. Whether that is some kinds of retaliatory violence, defensive, or abusive violence / gay bashing."

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2300. "As I've told Daniel Glick on several previous occasions [REDACTED] was open to me on many different occasions between around 1988 and 1999 to the effect that in his supposed 'previous life', so to speak, he frequently and violently beat people he thought were gay, at gay meeting places, in nightclub bathrooms, wherever to the point that he had a newspaper report done on him and was arrested for over 50 assault charges - all in his words - and that his brother [REDACTED] "got him off with the cops but now I have to be very careful about getting into any trouble like that again". He also expressed to the effect 'Sometimes I'd love to go bash poofs again, but nah, I can't do that anymore it's in the past'."

2301. "I was aged between 11 and 20 when hearing these sorts of things. Not that I care but he frequently would call me a "poof" "faggot" if I was doing something else or hanging out with a friend he would say "are you too busy with your boyfriend lover boy" and many other colourful things. He would get upset if I returned the insults, but one time I called him it back - I was studying psychology and I said something like "Maybe you're a secret poof yourself and you can't handle your feelings that's why you get angry about other people like you". He got very angry and I could see he wanted to hit me but he was scared of my father."

2302. "[REDACTED]'s biological mother was a local prostitute which [REDACTED] admitted to me. My own mother was also a prostitute for a short time as a young teenager when she was younger before she met my father who got her to stop...She ([REDACTED] [REDACTED]'s biological mother) was in a relationship with I believe a Manly Detective at the time, I don't recall his name but there was a big story on the Derrin (sic) Hinch show at the time where they broadcast video of [REDACTED] and his mother's boyfriend, the police detective, entering the premises of the brothel in Manly while he was wearing his school uniform from St. Cecelias primary school... I remember seeing the video of ([REDACTED]) on the Hinch show entering the premises. [REDACTED]'s biological mother died a few years later from emphysema. After high school [REDACTED] ended up in prison for drugs, I heard, I don't know whether he is out of not. We haven't spoken for about 15 years."

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2303. "Therefore in relation to [REDACTED] and perhaps separately in relation to gay bashings on the Northern Beaches and Scott Johnsons case I believe the following people may well be worth speaking to, not only may they know some of the people involved directly, such as I believe [REDACTED] does, but they are familiar and involved with various elements in the area that may well be connected. [REDACTED], and possibly his father, [REDACTED], [REDACTED] [REDACTED], the man who as a boy was called [REDACTED] who lived with the [REDACTED] for one or two years around 1988, the two men who assaulted myself and my brother..."


2304. "As I said I believe [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] and also his brother [REDACTED] have some connection...I have no doubt [REDACTED] [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] must have gotten up to a bunch of stuff. I think there's definitely connections between [REDACTED], his son, [REDACTED], [REDACTED], the Manly Boys gang and the perpetrators of Scott Johnson's murder."

2305. "Knowing these people as I do, I believe it's very unlikely this murder was committed by just one person, I think it was at least two - these people are really cowardly deep down - and they get their confidence to intimidate and hurt others in numbers. Especially if they were going to push someone over the cliff, there's always a danger you'll go down too - two guys frightens and intimidates the victim more, they're less cognisant to fight back perhaps. Just my opinion."

2306. "When I was about 14 or so my brother [REDACTED] (who was 8) and I were assaulted in Victoria Parade Manly near the Beach by two men who called themselves / told me they were part of [REDACTED] gang. At the time there was graffiti around the northern beaches with their logo. The police were involved but did a pretty useless job of prosecuting them (no offence) one guy dobbed in the other guy and got off."

2307. "I know there were elements of Manly Police dealing drugs and into other corruption at that time, and I heard after my assault that elements of the Manly Boys gang worked with police - which makes sense. Anyway they were both very unpleasant characters. Years later I saw the one who got off, he is a tall lanky

Witness: _____


Signature: _____

P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

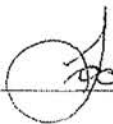
guy with long blonde hair about in his late 20's to early 30's at the time. He walked past my work place [REDACTED] in Victoria Parade while I was sitting out the front with my father and with [REDACTED] who was visiting for some reason (he has long been friends with my brother [REDACTED] though I'm all but absolutely positively certain my brother has never had anything to do with any kind of hate assaults by the way)."

2308. "The man whose name I don't recall walked past and I recognised him as my and my brothers attacker (especially my brother, in one point during the attack he grabbed my 8 year old brother by his feet and swung him around until his head smashed into a large terracotta pot, breaking the pot while the other guy held me down) I was so angry I yelled out to him "Hey you piece of shit, why don't you come and have a go now that I'm grown up" he kept walking but glanced at me very slyly from the corner or one eye. Later that night I went out to a movie but when I came back my Dad told me that the guy had come back to the hotel after 10pm closing time, my Dad had gone to sleep, and he was yelling through the hotel "Where the fucking poofter wog" and things like that, and he had smashed pictures from the walls and punched holes in the walls."

2309. "The after-hours caretaker a very old man of about 80 years of age...subdued him from below and held him for one hour until the police arrived, after 3 phone calls. When they arrived they wanted to arrest the old guy for assault, but my Dad told them he would tell the local papers about how they arrested an 80 year old man who had peacefully and without injury subdued a violent abusive man who was involved with a prior assault on the owners sons and held him for a whole hour until the cops arrived. They let the guy go unfortunately as nobody had personally witnessed his property damage."

2310. "I had never heard of the [REDACTED] prior to that incident, but the assault on my brother and I was reported in the Manly Daily the next day I believe, our names were anonymous as we were kids. After that however I found out more about them - they were anywhere from around 15 years of age to 30+, were involved in thefts, car thefts / houses etc, rapes, drugs, and assaults and possibly

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

murder. Their territory was all the northern beaches. Some of them were in schools like St. Pauls, Narrabeen High, Manly High etc. It's obvious to me that if they stumbled across a gay meeting place or had the opportunity to assault a gay person, they would. So the men who assaulted me were part of the Manly Boys gang and their names are on record I would look them up and ask them about this stuff..."

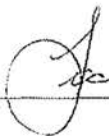
2311. "██████████ told me repeatedly on several occasions words to the effect "I had over 50 assault charges to my name for bashing up poofs and other wankers, I'd been doing it for ages and they finally got me, but my brother ██████████ got me off". He also said "I don't do that anymore, that was my young and crazy days" but I always got the impression he was absolutely capable of it - likely he was told by his older brother who is very dangerous to not do it again, and so reluctantly agreed."

2312. "I personally would consider (██████████) a threat to society. For example I could easily imagine him assaulting a police officer or a parking attending very violently, or somebody in traffic. Naively at the time I was only a kid still but I just assumed he had promised the police he wouldn't do it anymore (kids are stupid sometimes). I also did not know at the time that ██████████ was a dangerous criminal involved heavily in prostitution, drugs, and I believe very likely murder..."

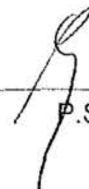
2313. "Therefore it seems blatantly obvious to me that with the rife corruption that had not yet been arrested at Manly Police station, and likely isn't fully gone in my opinion, it was probably relatively easy at the time of the arrest for the 50 assault charges for ██████████ to have gotten ██████████ off the hook through bribery or other "favours" or threats, I don't see any other possible explanation."

2314. "Neither his brother or ██████████ like me much since I stood up to ██████████ and told him never to visit my father again (when he was sick before he died) and told him straight that he was not a good influence for my younger brother who despite my attempts to get him to see otherwise refused to end his friendship with ██████████."

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2315. "██████████ visited me at my work ██████████ in Victoria Parade Manly once after my father had died, I believe he was trying to intimidate me for insulting his family after I pushed ██████████ out of my life and my Dad's life... His brother ██████████ in earlier years never directly said so but I got the distinct impression that at least one or two people have "disappeared" because of ██████████."

2316. "Other possibly useful leads into investigating gay bashings around the Manly/Northern Beaches area include: St. Pauls college staff and teachers...; (a fellow student from St. Paul's College at Manly)...his first name was ██████████ I think his surname was ██████████ but I'm not sure of the surname...He attended St. Pauls with me and witnessed much of the same stuff, the constant homophobic references by the boys "I'm gonna bash you ya fucken poof" etc..."

2317. "I don't believe or have any reason to suspect that ██████████ was ever involved in any assaults or any gay bashings however my point in mentioning all of this is to say... he may have connections and know things that...may very well lead back into the same circle surrounding Scott Johnsons case and obviously related incidents."

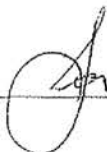
2318. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL

2319. On 6 June 2013 email contact was made by police with ██████████ and he was asked a number of clarifying questions. On 7 June 2013 ██████████ wrote back to police with the following additional information;

2320. He met ██████████ when he was about 10 years old at the ██████████ family home at 30 Fairlight St Manly. This was probably around 1989 when ██████████ was working for his father doing tiling work on the patio. ██████████ used to visit often and ██████████' father invited him and his girlfriend to a barbeque or similar. The girlfriend later became his wife. He was always playful with the kids.

2321. He only got to know ██████████ a year or two later when he was working more at the ██████████ hotel ██████████' father. In the 1990's when his father first acquired it the ██████████ was a low budget/backpackers hotel and my Dad gradually renovated it to a four star premises by around 2000. It has a small bar

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

with a coffee machine and a few drinks, but it did not operate as a bar per se, it was a restaurant, not very successful most of the time apart from a few periods, with not a lot of alcohol consumption.

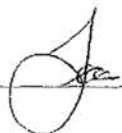
2322. He describes the clientele as all kinds of average people from families to singles to couples from a range of income brackets. There were no people of [REDACTED]'s type of character' generally there as he was there more because of work, and sometimes he rented a room there with his girlfriend before they were married.

2323. In 1988 [REDACTED] was 9 years old and he does not think that he knew [REDACTED] in 1988, but rather 1989. He writes "My observation / assumption is that he got in trouble in 1988 as previously mentioned and he had cleaned up his act and was trying to work hard. At that time he appeared or presented himself to others as a very happy go lucky type of person, full of energy, hard working and later as I was older I and others consistently noticed that he was very much a kid in an adults body, he was really like an 8 - 12 year old kid mentally again in the way he presented himself..."

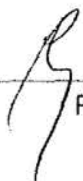
2324. Once they got to know each other more in 1989, [REDACTED] spoke to him from then through to as late as 1997-98 when [REDACTED] stopped having contact with him. The conversations with [REDACTED] took place usually at [REDACTED] Manly. In his car on the few occasions when [REDACTED] went with him to pick up something for [REDACTED]' father's work.

2325. If [REDACTED] wanted to contact [REDACTED] he would do it via his brother but he is not on speaking terms with his brother, [REDACTED], at this time. [REDACTED] does not know associates of [REDACTED] with the exception of his brother, [REDACTED]. He then writes 'I know he mentioned this Nick Janice character to me at least once and I might have even met him on one occasion though I can't be sure...this was, probably early - mid 90's. I remember [REDACTED] was reluctant to talk further about this person, who I think might have been this Nick character.'

Witness:



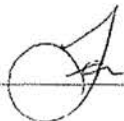
Signature:


P.S. Young

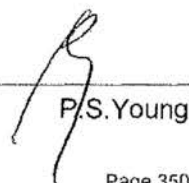
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2326. ██████ drove a dirty, old and damaged panel van or wagon, which was white and full of tiler's equipment. Before he bought that he sometimes borrowed ██████' father's cars, being a Ford F150 or an old van, if he was working for him.
2327. ██████ describes ██████ as fairly lean, muscular, and strong due to the nature of his work. He had large hands, black hair cut usually shortish, and sometimes with a mullet.
2328. When ██████ was talking to ██████ about assaulting gay men he would laugh as though it was a big joke and would say 'Oh yeah I used to beat them up really bad some of them'. ██████ told him that he assaulted gay men at various places including specifically bathrooms in clubs, in the streets, at beaches, public toilets.
2329. ██████ did not mention North Head Manly to ██████ and ██████ puts that down to ██████ not disclosing as he "went too far"
2330. It was all Northern Beaches locations with perhaps a few visits to Eastern Sydney. He told ██████ that there were a lot more assaults than he got caught for and that ██████ said to him that "Yeah, one time I went too far".
2331. He does not remember ██████ saying at that time that he was with anyone else. He did not name anyone.
2332. ██████ says that I would not trust his brother to help the police as his brother had a friendship with ██████ that developed when ██████ worked for his father. He does not believe that brother ever assaulted anyone for gay hate reasons. ██████ thinks that his brother's reaction would be to automatically assume that ██████ was a good person who is being unjustly persecuted.
2333. Mr Glick told ██████ that he had seen ██████ in a bar in Manly. ██████ describes ██████ as a 'westy' type due to his accent, speech and mannerisms. He may also come across as a bit 'mentally handicapped'.
2334. ██████ warns the police, '...that there are probably higher ups that are involved in the underworld in Sydney and if this is going to expose corruption

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

even as far back as 1988 you may very well run into some internal opposition so to speak, and if it's connected with [REDACTED] I strongly suspect, though I have no evidence for it, that he has at least several buried bodies around the place...he and his associates would be very dangerous / ugly types of people and they always have ties into politicians, the police, and so on...I don't believe he would go after any investigating officer it would be counterproductive and put more light on him, but in terms of pulling a string or two with connections in the police, people he may have a file on so to speak or people who have something to hide, that he has something on, to squash this investigation or misdirect it...'

2335. [REDACTED] says that this is all the information he has combined with the emails he sent to Mr Glick.

2336. I PRODUCE THAT EMAIL

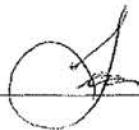
2337. Information from [REDACTED]:

2338. On 20 August 2013 police spoke with [REDACTED] who is the younger brother of [REDACTED].

2339. [REDACTED] informed investigators that he thinks that [REDACTED] first met his father when he was hired to do tiling at their home and also the family business at the [REDACTED] Manly. His father liked [REDACTED] and they developed a close relationship. [REDACTED] said that he and [REDACTED] have been very close since he was quite young, referring to [REDACTED] as looking after him like a brother particularly after [REDACTED]'s parents separated and his mother left for New Zealand.

2340. [REDACTED] remembers [REDACTED] as reliable, good, immature and funny. He was aware that [REDACTED] had been charged and convicted in the past for assaults upon homosexual men. He spoke to [REDACTED] about it and remembers [REDACTED] saying, "You can't do that crap anymore". He believed the [REDACTED] changed his mind as he was dating a girl who had a gay uncle. He says that this is the extent of his knowledge of [REDACTED] and the crimes. He has no knowledge of the death of Scott.

Witness:



Signature:

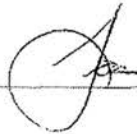


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2341. [REDACTED] was asked if he knew of [REDACTED] friendship with [REDACTED]. He describes their relationship as 'weird' as it was a 'love-hate' relationship, saying 'One minute they are talking the next they aren't'. He described [REDACTED] as a 'smart arse' and often said things that [REDACTED] took offence to. [REDACTED] could not remember a specific example of this.
2342. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] attended [REDACTED] School at North Head, Manly. He was not aware that North Head was a gay beat.
2343. He said that his brother [REDACTED] was jealous of the relationship that [REDACTED] had with their father. He remembers that their father made [REDACTED] a trustee of the family business, but he was then removed when [REDACTED] made it known that he was unhappy with the arrangement. He says that his father removed [REDACTED] to keep the peace with [REDACTED]. He thinks this also occurred when their father included [REDACTED] in his last will and testament.
2344. When their father died in 2001 [REDACTED] did not receive a benefit from their father's will. Their father's will became a ten year court battle involving his dependants from two marriages, but did not involve or include [REDACTED].
2345. After their father died [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] continued to operate [REDACTED]. He says that [REDACTED] 'disappeared' in January 2012 and left him solely responsible for running the business. He then alleges that he discovered that [REDACTED] had been stealing money from the business in the amount of five hundred dollars a day. [REDACTED] did not cope with running the business alone and it was sold with the proceeds being shared between [REDACTED] himself and two half siblings. [REDACTED] describes [REDACTED] as a talented pianist and music composer with manic-like behaviour.
2346. Other Intelligence Related to the [REDACTED] - [REDACTED] Group
2347. There are local police intelligence reports in 1985 that link [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] to assault and robbery offences and street offences in Warriewood (a suburb north of North Narrabeen).

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2348. [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are recorded previously. [REDACTED]'s criminal history is recorded as one assault on a female in 1985. No further inquiries were conducted upon [REDACTED].

2349. Call Record Analysis

2350. Mobile subscriber details and call charge records were obtained for the following parties [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED].

2351. Dates reviewed were centred on when police had contact with the party to identify contact with persons of interest. The only contacts that took place were between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], and between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

2352. Extended call charge records for [REDACTED]'s and [REDACTED]'s mobile telephones were obtained for the period 1 February 2013 to 6 June 2013. Police looked for contact prior to, and as a reaction to, the airing of the ABC television 'Australian Story' at 8pm on 11 February 2013 and subsequent publicity, as well as frequency of contact, and contact with other persons of interest.

2353. A review confirmed that contact was made between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] on 24 occasions, the first being [REDACTED] and the last being [REDACTED]. Three of these were voice calls of a maximum length of 21 seconds, and the balance were SMS (text) messages.

2354. This concludes the identification of persons of interest.

2355. Consultants to the Johnson family

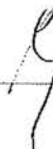
2356. Mr John Macnamara

2357. On 12 September 2013 police interviewed Mr John Macnamara. Mr Macnamara is a private investigator hired by the Johnson family to assist Mr Glick in 2006 and 2007. His statement includes that he was a New South Wales police officer from 1982 until he retired in 2005. He was in the Homicide Squad from

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

1995 until 2005. About 2006 he became a licensed private inquiry agent and the Johnson family was put in contact with him via former Taradale officer, Mr Page.

2358. Mr Macnamara worked for the Johnson family for a matter of months and received an hourly rate of pay which he justified by keeping detailed notes which were provided to the Johnson family. He did not keep copies of his notes. He and Mr Glick worked largely independently of each other.

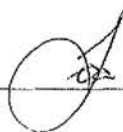
2359. The main inquiries that Mr Macnamara remembers conducting include being responsible for finding media articles in the Manly Daily newspaper which identified some individuals for possible gay-hate related crimes, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] amongst them. He was responsible for following up the witness, [REDACTED] who had found the body of Scott. [REDACTED] assured him that his statement to police in 1988 was entirely in his own words, and [REDACTED] told Mr Macnamara that he found the police officer who took his statement to be thorough. He remembers speaking with the original officer in charge from Manly, Troy Hardie, who did not have any concerns about how the matter had been investigated or the outcome of the Inquest.

2360. He felt that the Johnson family had one agenda, and the agenda was that Scott had been murdered. After a few inquiries, Mr Macnamara believed most likely that Scott finalised his affairs by folded his clothes, and for whatever reason he jumped. He remembers raising the possibility that a conclusion of suicide may be valid with the Johnson family but they were dismissive. He thinks he may have fallen out with the Johnson family because of his view and his work for them declined then stopped by 2007.


2361. His inquiries for the Johnson family did not convince him of a link between Scott's death and gay-hate crimes in the eastern suburbs in that period.

2362. He saw Australian Story and was surprised at how it was presented, thinking that it was overwhelmingly one-sided. He wished he had been contacted about it, because he would have given a different point of view to what was presented.

Witness:



Signature:


_____ P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2363. Mr Macnamara had been on the investigation team into the murder of Mr Steven Dempsey and confirmed that the crime characteristics were completely different to that of Scott. During that investigation numerous gay-beat users were contacted and a rapport was built with them. None of the gay beat users reported crimes or threats against them when using a gay beat.

2364. Investigating homicides and in the Homicide Unit he did not experience any investigators who had a poor attitude to gay victims or lacked commitment to a gay-related investigation.

2365. Mr Macnamara's inquiries did not identify police inaction or corruption. He expressed the view that the Johnson family will raise allegations of police corruption in the era of Scott's death in support of their case that Scott was murdered.

2366. Mr Stephen Page

2367. Mr Page is a former Detective Sergeant of NSWPF and was the officer in charge of Taradale. Mr Page was a police officer from 1986 until 2004 when he resigned. He was asked by the Johnson family to provide a document entitled, '*Consultant Report – Death of Scott Johnson*' dated 12 May 2011. I understand that Mr Page provided the document to the Johnson family in the context of their application for the second Inquest and it formed part of the material before the Coroner in 2007. The information from Mr Page continues to be heavily relied upon by the Johnson family and excerpts and sentiments from it appear in documents and media prepared by them. Mr Page's document is summarised here.

2368. Mr Page's document is based upon his review of the circumstances of Scott's death in so far as material being provided to him by the Johnson family. The document cites the 1986 stabbing of [REDACTED] by [REDACTED] during a consensual homosexual act at North Head, and the public record assault and robbery charges of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] in 1987. The document states

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

that 'several' people have come forward with information that North Head was a gay beat but he does not identify them.

2369. Mr Page proposes that his experience with the World Kickboxing Federation allows him to express a medical view on the injuries identified at the post mortem of Scott. He expresses a personal view of the unlikelihood of Scott having suicided. He asserts that he knows of no cases where gay men have gone to gay beats to commit suicide.

2370. The document cites six victims of known or suspected violence at gay beats in Randwick, Alexandria, Tamarama and Rushcutters Bay as evidence relevant to the death of Scott. He cites the solved murders of Mr Leo Press at Harbord in 1988, the crossbow murder of Mr Stephen Dempsey at Narrabeen in 1994, and the stabbing murder of Mr Gerard Fleming in 2007. (In relation to the Mr Fleming's murder, the young person convicted was not born when Scott died.)

2371. Mr Page cites the witness [REDACTED] (referred to earlier in this statement) and refers to two books by journalists and one telemovie on gay hate crimes as being evidence of matters relevant to the death of Scott.


2372. I PRODUCE THAT DOCUMENT

2373. Ms Susan Thompson

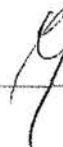
2374. Ms Thompson is a lawyer who was employed by the NSWPF as Gay/Lesbian Client Consultant from 1990 until 2002. She was the second and only appointee to the role. She was responsible for coordinating policy, training and organisation initiatives relative to gay and lesbian liaison. She was central to collating data on gay-hate crimes in NSW and she wrote the definition of what identified a gay-hate crime at that time.

2375. Ms Thompson provided two statements to the Taradale Inquest. She co-wrote a paper entitled '*Comparison between Gay Hate-related Homicides of Men and Other Male Homicides in New South Wales 1989-1999*' ('the paper') which was published in the Journal of the Institute of Criminology in 2001. She provided a report entitled '*Report of Sue Thompson re death of Scott Johnson*' ('the report')

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

dated 1 January 2011 to the Johnson family and she has made her views known in various media articles. Relevant matters from her inquest statements, the paper, her consultant report, and her assertions in the media are referred to here.

2376. The paper refers to Ms Thompson as the NSW Police Gay/Lesbian Client Consultant. It acknowledges her for compiling and collating details of the research data over a ten year period (1 July 1989 to 30 June 1999)⁹⁵. The methodology applied to the research comprised two data sets one being from Ms Thompson and the second data set being from the National Homicide Monitoring Program (NHMP), which according to the paper was also supplemented by data from Ms Thompson's ten year data collation⁹⁶. As to what was classified as a gay-hate homicide the paper records, 'For this study, classification and identification of gay-hate related homicides was provided by the NSW Police Service, namely the NSW Police Gay/Lesbian Client Consultant who has data on gay-hate related homicides that have occurred in the State of NSW since 1986⁹⁷'. The identification of gay-hate crimes, including homicides, by police which commenced in 1994 via the NSW COPS system is described in the paper as potentially inaccurate⁹⁸.

2377. Ms Thompson therefore provided both the qualitative and quantitative components of the research which is described in the paper study parameters as, *"a fairly accurate account of gay-hate related homicides and the characteristics thereof"*⁹⁹. The data appearing in this paper is then repeated by Ms Thompson, in other publications, and documents and articles relating to the death of Scott.

2378. The paper opines a predominance of gay-hate offenders who are - white Caucasian, single, unemployed, youths aged between 15-17 years old, young men.

⁹⁵ Journal of the Institute of Criminology 2001 page 307.

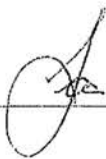
⁹⁶ p.313

⁹⁷ p.313

⁹⁸ p.313

⁹⁹ p.314

Witness: _____



Signature: _____

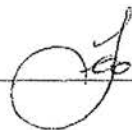


P.S. Young


Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2379. The paper opines that the most common cause of death is by repeated physical or blunt instrument assault. Offenders-as-strangers was more common at gay beats. Gay men were fearful of victimisation and there were low reporting rates. The majority of gay-hate related homicides involved multiple offenders at 55%, which is above other homicides at 48%. Gay-hate related homicides are more likely to occur on a Friday between midnight and 6am.
2380. The paper opines that there are three common scenarios for gay-hate homicides. The most frequent is the victim being befriended in a club or pub with a proposition of going home to the victim's house. The second most frequent scenario is at a gay beat. The third most frequent is random, spontaneous attacks which occur on the street.
2381. Based Ms Thompson's modelling the paper records that the total number of gay-hate related victims was 37, that offender/s were charged in 29 cases and that the number of total offenders was 44.
2382. I PRODUCE THAT PAPER
2383. Ms Thompson defines gay-hate crime
2384. The data quantifying gay-hate crime from 1989 to 1999 was collated by Ms Thompson based upon eleven (11) identifiers that she chose. In the absence of a qualifying statement in the paper, only one of these factors needed to be present for a gay-hate crime to be identified for academic research purposes. She writes, 'Some of the possible indicators as a gay-hate related homicide are:
2385. *formal or informal admissions by perpetrators;*
2386. *anti gay abuse;*
2387. *proximity to a known gay social club/venue;*
2388. *proximity to a meeting place (beat);*
2389. *information on motive from persons known to offender/victim;*
2390. *nature of injuries (eg. sexual overtones to injuries, mutilation);*

Witness:



Signature:



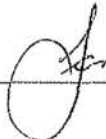
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2391. *frenzied nature of attack;*
2392. *time-related to major gay community event;*
2393. *absence of other motive;*
2394. *alleged sexual proposition/suggestions/advance by victim to perpetrator;*
2395. *other indicators emerging after commonsense review of the circumstances.'*
2396. By contrast, the definition used by the NSWPF¹⁰⁰ from 1989 to 1999 for what constituted a gay-hate crime required a combination of -
2397. *'Anti-gay abuse is heard during the crime;*
2398. *Informants known to the perpetrator have provided information to police regarding the motive (as stated by the perpetrator);*
2399. *The location is a known meeting place for male to male sexual encounters eg. park or beach with ongoing history of anti-gay assaults/murders;*
2400. *Heterosexual perpetrator intentionally befriends gay victim in casual first meeting to gain victim's confidence and access to victim's home;*
2401. *Modus operandi of the murder has particular characteristics known to detective to be trademarks of a gay-hate murder;*
2402. *Victim is known to friends/family to be homosexual;*
2403. *Perpetrator confesses motive to investigating police;*
2404. *Gay victim has made sexual proposition to heterosexual acquaintance who then responds with extreme violence because of hatred to homosexuals'*
2405. Statement of Ms Thompson dated 31 July 2001:
2406. Additional matters that appear in her statement include unpublished opinion that 22% of gay-hate homicides between 1989 and 1999 occurred in a gay beat and that gay-hate homicide offenders admit, often informally, to a lengthy history

¹⁰⁰ GLBTI archive entitled Gay/Lesbian Hate Murders '89-'99

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

of gay-hate violence. Her observations in 1990 of anti-gay attitudes of high school students is also described.

2407. She expresses an opinion that, *"Some beats attract the people who enjoy the risk and danger of a beat or a beat in a certain location. This may apply to a physical danger such as being around cliffs..."* She refers to the gay beat at Marks Park as a *"simply convenient"* beat which was known to be a "very busy and popular" night time beat. She is aware of offenders posing as "decoys" to lead the victim away for a group attack.

2408. At paragraph 10 she states that, *"Prior to 1990...There was much hostility between the gay and lesbian community and police particularly taking into account that homosexuality was only decriminalised in 1984...This meant that gays and lesbians were extremely reluctant and unlikely to report crimes to police which would require them to disclose their sexuality."*

2409. From 1990 Ms Thompson coordinated the placement of local gay and lesbian liaison officers across the State *"thereby increasing the level of crime reporting, crime prevention strategies, and assisting in police enquiries to solve crime...As a result over the last eleven years (1990 to 2001) we (the NSWPF) have become viewed as a world leader in this area..."*

2410. The statement does not identify or particularise crimes, locations, offenders or victims.

2411. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT

2412. Ms Thompson's Taradale Inquest evidence

2413. Ms Thompson gave evidence at the Taradale Inquest which centred on the findings in her paper. Relevant aspects of her evidence at inquest already appears in this statement. The balance of her evidence is broad and philosophical in utility. At the end of her evidence, Ms Thompson is thanked for working at length with Mr Page in his investigations¹⁰¹.

¹⁰¹ Transcript W218819/03 CN-B p. 58

Witness: _____



Signature: _____




P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2414. Report of Sue Thompson re Death of Scott Johnson' dated 1 February 2011
2415. This written opinion was forwarded to the current investigation by the Johnson family. The report opens with, "*This report is provided as formal opinion regarding the circumstances of Scott Johnson's death on approximately 10th December 1988. This report is based upon my detailed discussions with Daniel Glick from June to December 2007...my reading of and comments on his draft and final reports to Det Insp Ashwood of the NSW Police Unsolved Homicide Team in 2007 and my expertise on gay hate crimes and gay hate homicides...*".
2416. Without verification, Mr Thompson states that she is a world recognised expert on gay hate crimes and homicides. Ms Thompson states that had she the opportunity to be involved as the Gay/Lesbian liaison officer at the time of Scott's death that, '...this may have led police to pursue the likelihood of or strong possibility of Scott's death being another gay hate cliff top homicide/murder like the preceding unsolved ones of Ross Warren and John Russell rather than a suicide...'
2417. She refers to her experience of anti-gay attitudes at Cleveland Street High School (recorded in her statements of 31 July 2001 and 6 August 2001 for the Taradale Inquest), and says, 'I formed the opinion that "going to the cliffs" (a term used by a Bondi offender) was certainly not restricted to the Bondi cliffs; their knowledge was much more widespread geographically.' This is the first and only time that Ms Thompson has put this opinion forward. I can find no factual basis for her opinion in Major Crime Squad, Taradale, NSWPF holdings, or her Taradale inquest evidence.
2418. At 1.14 she writes, 'Any potential beat users who may have witnessed what happened to Scott in 1988 would have been highly unlikely to come forward to police at that time. One of the main reasons why I set up police Gay and Lesbian Liaison Officers...in local stations/commands in 1990 was that most gay men or lesbians who wanted to report something to police across NSW would only speak to me in...and I was completely inundated.' Mr Thompson does not provide any information from the contacts specific to North Head, Manly, or elsewhere.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2419. She proposes two reasons why no witness to Scott's death has come forward after 1990:
2420. The first is due to difficulty 'breaking through barriers of fear and mistrust of police in conservative beachside locations...gay people in these areas were very reluctant to be identified as they have found safety in their invisibility.'
2421. The second reason is, '...the AIDS epidemic was at its peak...and thousands of Sydney gay men became very ill and died during this period...'
2422. She makes general comments linking offenders and several eastern Sydney gay-hate crimes which are inaccurate and/or not based in fact.
2423. Ms Thompson never independently identifies North Head as having a gay beat either during her time as the NSWPF Gay/Lesbian Client Consultant or subsequently. This is not an insignificant when read with her report statement that, '...the primary focus of my job (in the NSWPF) was going to be beats and violence...I had to quickly become an expert on beats and the beat culture.' No document, quote or reference claimed by or attributed to Ms Thompson includes her own assessment or experience that North Head comprised a gay beat.
2424. She continues, 'Using my expertise in this area I make the following comments relevant to the death of Scott Johnson:'
2425. '...Scott's long term relationship does not indicate an unlikelihood that Scott was using the cliff beat as a beat but was instead using the location as a place for a planned suicide. In my opinion his attendance there for the purpose of doing the beat is highly likely...'
2426. '...It would be very beneficial if the lessons learnt from (Taradale) might be applied to Scott Johnson's death which in my opinion in most likely and highly likely to be a gay hate murder.'
2427. 'Beat locations were not confined to the toilet area at Manly as police thought at the time. The toilets were just the visible beats because of public complaints and as far as police knew they were the only beats...'

Witness:



Signature:

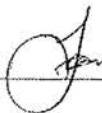


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2428. 'Beat users would not contemplate coming forward to police about violence in the 1980's especially in the Northern Beaches and Southern Beaches...A basis of her claim specifying these area is not provided.'
2429. Ms Thompson re-defines gay-hate crime
2430. At 3.2.5 Ms Thompson provides her list of "indicators of gay hate homicides" referred to above. It is extraordinary that she includes the following previously unidentified indicator of a gay-hate crime;
2431. "...absence of motive or rationale for an alleged cliff suicide (ie. death where foul play can go undetected due to nature of death and location) or indicators contrary to suicide ideation eg. recent good news".
2432. Ms Thompson has obviously written this into her definition of a gay-hate crime with favourable bias for the belief of the Johnson family.
2433. Ms Thompson also provides the following general and tailored comments;
2434. "There was Northern Beaches violence & reports to me during the 1990's"; "Social Workers and Drs throughout the early 90's...would at times inform me (of injured patients) who were 'gay bashed". No details have been provided to the police at the time or subsequently.
2435. "Typically many gay men would go to a beat to celebrate some good news they had just received." She provides John Russell and Scott as examples, but two examples do not represent typical behaviours.
2436. "A dull poor weather day is very likely to attract beat users to the beach or cliffs...as they are even less likely to be disturbed by other users of the area..."
2437. "I note that Scott's wallet was missing. In my extensive experience...robbery is commonly an after-thought in gay bashings or murders." This is contrary to the vast majority of gay-hate crimes identified in this investigation.
2438. I PRODUCE THAT DOCUMENT
2439. 'Report of Sue Thompson re Death of Scott Johnson' updated 1 June 2011

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2440. This is essentially the same written opinion as the document dated 1 February 2011 but includes: her reference to *"detailed discussions with Daniel Glick from June 2007 to current date..."*; commends information gathered by Mr Glick to the police; at 1.4 there is commentary on the Bondi crimes; she states, *"it is my opinion that Scott's death is another death in the epidemic of gay hate cliff top murders..."*
2441. In this report she misrepresents that there is evidence that Mr John Russell *"was found clutching some the offender's hair"*;
2442. It includes her desire for police to reconsider the case as *"This would bring some necessary peace to Scott's family, ex-partner and friends who have never felt in their hearts that he committed suicide. This need for peace is especially important for his brother Steve..."*
2443. I PRODUCE THAT DOCUMENT
2444. Statement of Ms Thompson dated 23 July 2011
2445. This statement was obtained for the second inquest in 2012 to formally adopt her report for the Johnson family dated 1 February 2011. She explains that her contact with the Johnson family has been ongoing since 2007.
2446. I PRODUCE THAT STATEMENT
2447. Media coverage of Mr Page and Ms Thompson
2448. On 27, 28 and 29 July 2013 articles written by journalist Rick Feneley appeared in the Sydney Herald about gay-hate homicides that were allegedly committed in Sydney in the 1980's and 1990's. The Sydney Morning Herald Good Weekend magazine article on 27 July 2014 is entitled, *"Up to 80 Men Murdered. 30 Cases Unsolved"*. The article consults Ms Susan Thompson, Mr Stephen Page, Mr Glick and Ms Johnson. Photographs of them appear with cliff-side ocean backdrops. There was no consultation with the NSWPF.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2449. The article consulted Ms Sue Thompson, who "can count about 80 deaths or disappearances (in NSW) dating from the late 1970's to late 1990's – all potentially fitting this category of gay-hate crime. Of those, 30 remain unsolved".

2450. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2451. In July and August 2013 at the request of police Ms Thompson provided the information that she had relied upon for the media articles. Her reference material is contained in a master spreadsheet (untitled) and a derivative list entitled, 'Likely NSW Gay Hate Murders from Late 70's to Late 90's' on which she records thirty (30) unsolved possible gay-hate homicides.

2452. With reference to police systems, investigation holdings, and archived coronial registry records, each of those thirty purported unsolved gay-hate cases has been reviewed.

2453. The following is a summary of the assessment done on each of the 30 purported unsolved gay-hate homicides from Ms Thompson's list: Some of the dates of death on Ms Thompson's list have been corrected and they appear in date order.

2454. (1) Death of [REDACTED] at Manly in 1976:

2455. [REDACTED] was 18 years old at the time of his death. He was found on the rocks at the northern end of North Head at Manly having suffered multiple injuries consistent with a fall from the cliff top above. There is evidence from his family that he had left home to join the New Zealand Navy for a short time prior to deserting in 1974. The last known movements of [REDACTED] is when he booked into a Sydney hotel on 9 May and booked out on 11 May 1976, which was the day his body was discovered. At the 1976 coronial inquest, his father gave evidence that in letters to his family [REDACTED] wrote that he was 'disenchanted with his life', and that his son was familiar and fond of the Fairy Bower area as the family had holidayed together there.

2456. An open finding was given with the Coroner stating, "I am satisfied there are no circumstances giving rise to suspicion of foul play but whether or not the fall

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

which caused the death was accidental or intended by the deceased, I am not able to determine on the evidence". There is no indication the deceased was gay and nothing located in the case file that this matter was a gay-hate motivated crime. Probable misadventure/ suicide.

2457. (2) Death of [REDACTED] at Manly in 1977:

2458. [REDACTED] was 27 old when he was located deceased on rocks at the northern end of North Head at Manly. The inquest heard that he had sustained multiple injuries consistent with a fall from the cliff top above and there was no sign of a struggle in the area of the fall. The deceased lived at home with his family and was receiving a disability pension. He was being treated for what was described as a 'nervous' condition and receiving a daily prescription of tranquilisers. There were no positive indications of suicidal ideation. The deceased's father gave evidence that the deceased loved to walk at North Head often sitting on the cliff top to relax, but that his son was a clumsy person which was not assisted by the medication he was taking. The Coroner found that the deceased "*died of the effects of multiple injuries...when he fell accidentally onto rocks at the foot of a cliff*". There is no indication the deceased was gay and nothing located in the case file that this matter was a gay-hate motivated crime. Probable misadventure.

2459. (3) Death of [REDACTED] at Manly in 1979:

2460. There are no coronial records of a death of a person of this name. The source details of Ms Thompson's spreadsheet indicate that the information is from a friend of [REDACTED]. This is unable to be verified.

2461. (4) Death of [REDACTED] at Parramatta in 1980:

2462. On 2 December 1980 [REDACTED] was stabbed to death in his antiques shop at Parramatta by a male offender. Investigation support that the deceased may have been [REDACTED] the victim of a revenge attack. There was no pattern of similar robbery offences in the area at that time. This matter is an unsolved homicide on file at the Unsolved Homicide Team. There is no indication the

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

deceased was gay and nothing located in the case file that this matter was a gay-hate motivated crime. It is consider a probable revenge murder.

2463. (5) Death of [REDACTED] at Newcastle in 1980:

2464. The deceased was a 69 year married man. On 19 December 1980 he was found in a semi conscious state in a toilet block at Birdwood Park, Newcastle suffering a number of head injuries after having been assaulted and robbed of an amount of cash. The location was a known gay beat [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED] The deceased provided contradictory evidence of his assault to police. In 1982 police arrested [REDACTED] for the murder based on witness and associate evidence of [REDACTED] going to that gay beat to assault and rob a gay man. The charge was later 'no billed' of the ODPP. This is a probable gay-hate murder.

2465. (6) Death of [REDACTED] at Paddington in 1981:

2466. On 17 October 1981 [REDACTED] was stabbed to death at a friend's home.
 [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED] The deceased was known to have multiple short-term sexual partners. There is no indication that the offence is a gay-hate motivated crime. This is a probable [REDACTED] murder.

2467. (7) Death of [REDACTED] at Bondi/Coogee in 1983:

2468. There are no coronial records of a death of a person of this name. The source details of Ms Thompson's spreadsheet indicate that the information is a sibling of [REDACTED]. This is unable to be verified.

2469. (8) Death of [REDACTED] at Kings Cross in 1985:

2470. The deceased was a transvestite prostitute who was shot dead. [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED] There is no evidence that this is a gay-hate motivated murder. This is a probable [REDACTED] murder.

2471. (9) Death (presumed) of Giles Mattaini at an unknown location in 1985:

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2472. Mr Mattaini was a gay man who frequented Marks Park at Bondi. This matter is referred to earlier in this statement. Based on the associated location, this is possibly a gay-hate crime.
2473. (10) Death of [REDACTED] in Wollongong in 1986:
2474. There are no coronial records of a death of a person of this name. The source details of Ms Thompson's spreadsheet indicate that the information is from academic, Mr Stephen Tomsen. (Mr Tomsen is also a Johnson family consultant and referred to later in this statement). It is unable to be verified.
2475. (11) Death of [REDACTED] at Randwick in 1987:
2476. This matter is referred to earlier in this statement. Based upon the location being at a location known for gay-hate assaults, it is possibly a gay-hate crime.
2477. (12) Death of Scott Johnson at Manly in 1988 is the matter currently under consideration.
2478. (13) Death of [REDACTED] at Alexandria in 1988:
2479. This matter is referred to earlier in this statement. It is probably a gay-hate motivated crime.
2480. (14) Death of [REDACTED] at Manly in 1988:
2481. This is recorded as 1989 on Ms Thompson's list. On 13 December 1988, [REDACTED], a 29 year male, was found deceased in Nolans Reserve at Manly. Nolans Reserve is a public reserve boarded by a main road connecting the suburbs of North Manly and Brookvale. There were no signs of violence at the scene or on the body. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED] The post mortem and toxicology confirmed the presence of drugs in the body and an inquest was dispensed with. There is no indication that the deceased was gay and there is no evidence that this is a gay-hate crime. It is a probable misadventure (drug overdose).

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2482. (15) Death of [REDACTED] on 3 February 1989:

2483. There are no coronial records of a death of a person of this name. The source details of Ms Thompson's spreadsheet indicate that the information is from academic Mr Tomsen. Unable to verify.

2484. (16) Death of [REDACTED] at South Head about 20 March 1989:

2485. The deceased was a 30 year old [REDACTED] who had recently undergone a sex change operation to become female. She suffered numerous health problems including asthma and diabetes. The deceased was found in a cave near the water's edge at the lighthouse at South Head. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

A note was found in the deceased's home that read, "At lighthouse, will be back?" A brief of evidence was prepared which included medical evidence that the deceased "...was very unstable psychologically. I have no doubt that [REDACTED] would take her own life". On 30 June 1989 the Coroner dispensed with holding an inquest. There is no indication that the deceased was gay and no evidence that this was a gay-hate motivated crime. It is a probable suicide/misadventure (drugs).


2486. (17) Death of [REDACTED] at Potts Point on 1989:

2487. [REDACTED] was found deceased in his unit at Potts Point having been bashed and strangled. The deceased was believed to be homosexual. [REDACTED], who had lived with the deceased, was charged with the murder but was acquitted at trial. [REDACTED] was a drug addict. He and the deceased were suspected of supplying illegal drugs together and [REDACTED] was found in possession of a bank book belonging to the deceased. This case remains an unsolved homicide. There is no evidence to indicate this was a gay-hate motivated crime. It is a probable [REDACTED] murder.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2488. (18) Death (presumed) of Ross Warren at Bondi in 1989:

2489. This matter is referred to earlier in this statement and is a probable gay-hate crime.

2490. (19) Death of [REDACTED] at Tathra 1989:

2491. [REDACTED] was a 36 year old living at Tathra on the south coast of NSW.

The deceased's body was found on rocks at the southern end of Tathra beach below a fifty metre cliff. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] The deceased had been drinking heavily with a friend on the day and evening before his body was discovered.

That day he had been arrested for stealing a bottle of rum from a liquor store. He was described by friends and hotel staff as being 'totally affected' by alcohol when last seen alive. There is no indication that the deceased was a gay man or the victim of a gay-hate motivated crime. It is a probable misadventure.

2492. (20) Death of John Russell at Bondi in 1989:

2493. This matter is referred to earlier in this statement and is a probable gay-hate crime.

2494. (21) Death of [REDACTED] in Sydney in 1990:

2495. [REDACTED] was a 28 year old gay male. His body was found in Sydney Harbour with no apparent external injuries. He was wearing jeans, shoes and socks and the rest of his clothing and personal property, including identification, were found wrapped in his belt at the cliff top of The Gap. The Gap is a known cliff top suicide location in Sydney. His treating doctor stated, "*He suffered from depression mainly due to the termination of an eight year old homosexual relationship*". Further medical evidence records a long history of depressive illness and treatment with antidepressant medication. The deceased's father wrote to the Coroner with concerns that included that the clothing was of a type not consistent with what the deceased normally wore and that prior to his death he had stated that someone was trying to kill him. There is no evidence of a gay-hate motivated crime and it is a probable suicide.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2496. (22) Death of [REDACTED] at Sydney in 1991:

2497. [REDACTED] was a gay man found murdered in his home unit on 20 November 1991. The cause of death was blunt force trauma to the head. The main suspect is a long time purported friend of the deceased who is known to police. A number of other suspects were considered including, a person nominated by Ms Susan Thompson who was known to be involved in assaulting gay males under the pretext of 'picking them up' for sex, a male prostitute used by the deceased and, a person who had broken into the deceased's unit about two weeks prior to the murder. There is no evidence that this was a gay-hate motivated crime. It is a possible intimate partner murder.

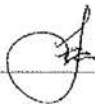
2498. (23) Death of [REDACTED] at Rushcutters Bay in 1992:

2499. The deceased was a gay male who had been drinking at a number of bars in the Kings Cross area shortly before his death. He was seen to be significantly intoxicated as he walked along a wharf at Rushcutters Bay. A witness noticed blood his face and inquired if he needed any assistance which the deceased declined. The deceased was later found floating in the water not wearing pants or shoes. His pants were recovered in the same body of water. The cause of death was drowning. Interestingly the local police gave an opinion at inquest that the deceased was *"the victim of a gay bashing...and due to his injuries and level of intoxication, was disoriented resulting in him falling from the wharf and drowning"*. Suspects were investigated however no one was charged and the case remains unsolved. The inquest found, *"That the deceased on the 22 August 1992 in Rushcutters Bay, Sydney, drowned after accidentally falling from a marina into Rushcutters Bay"*. It is a possible gay-hate crime.

2500. (24) Death of [REDACTED] at Surry Hills in 1993:

2501. [REDACTED] was found in a lane at Surry Hills in the early hours of 23 August 1993 after having been assaulted and robbed. He died in hospital two days later. Some witnesses reported seeing a number of males of Pacific Islander appearance standing over the deceased before leaving the scene. A number of

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

suspects were identified, in particular persons who were believed to be involved in similar assaults in the same area. There is some information from the victim's mother that suggested that people may have thought that her son was gay. Based on a perceived homosexuality and the incident location, this is a possible gay-hate crime.

2502. (25) Death of [REDACTED] at Elizabeth Bay in 1995:

2503. [REDACTED] was a gay male stabbed to death in his home unit. There is evidence that he was involved in a sexual encounter shortly before or at the time he was killed. [REDACTED]
 [REDACTED] There is no evidence that this crime was a gay-hate crime. It is a probable [REDACTED] murder.


2504. (26) Death of [REDACTED] at Millers Point in 1997:

2505. The victim's body was found at the base of a drop at Millers Point (via The Rocks) with a number of injuries that the Coroner found were inflicted by an unknown person. There was evidence of robbery. On the evening before his body was found, the deceased had been watching the Gay Mardi Gras with friends after which he was drinking at the Orient Hotel in The Rocks. He was apparently very intoxicated when he became separated from friends. There is no indication in the file that the deceased was gay and there is no evidence that this is a gay-hate crime. It is a probable robbery-murder.

2506. (27) Death of [REDACTED] at Surry Hills in 1996:

2507. [REDACTED] was a local of Surry Hills who became ill and was admitted to hospital with a fractured skull. Prior to his death he told police that he had not been assaulted or robbed. There were no witnesses. Medical opinion at inquest included that the injuries could have been sustained from an assault, falling over a number of times due to intoxication, or from being hit by a vehicle. The Coroner found that it was more likely that the deceased had been assaulted and made an open finding. There is no indication in the file that the deceased was gay and

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

there is no evidence that this is a gay-hate crime. It is a probable thrill-robbery-murder.


2508. (28) Death of [REDACTED] at Sydney in 1997:

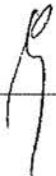
2509. [REDACTED] was known to be a 'cross dresser' and was found bashed to death in his home. No one has been charged [REDACTED]. There is no indication in the file that the deceased was gay and there is no evidence that this is a gay-hate crime. It is a probable [REDACTED] murder.

2510. (29) & (30) Deaths of [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] at Zetland in 1999:

2511. Both victims were gay. They lived in a de-facto relationship at their home in Bourke Street, Zetland. On the night of 22 June 1999 the offender, [REDACTED], was allowed entry into the victim's home to talk to [REDACTED] about a debt. [REDACTED] produced a handgun and fired numerous times at [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] who died of gunshot wounds. The following day, [REDACTED] handed himself in at Katoomba Police Station and surrendered the firearm. He was charged and convicted of the crimes. There is no evidence that this is a gay-hate crime. They were financial debt murders.

2512. The NSWPF Homicide Squad review of the 30 purported unsolved cases listed by Ms Thompson categorises the cases as: 8 deaths are homicide with evidence or indication of a gay-hate motive ([REDACTED] / Mattaini/ [REDACTED] [REDACTED] Warren/ Russell/ [REDACTED] / [REDACTED]); 11 deaths are homicide without evidence or indication of a gay-hate motive ([REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED]); 6 deaths are by misadventure and/or suicide ([REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED]); 4 deaths are not recorded in coronial records ([REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED] / [REDACTED]). If these are deaths, the absence of coronial records suggests that the cause of death was assessed by authorities to be natural; one death is that of Scott.

Witness: _____


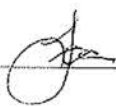
Signature: _____

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

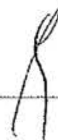
2513. With regards to the case-solved status: 8 are solved by conviction or a coronial finding of misadventure and/or suicide (████████/████████/████████/████████/████████/████████/████████/████████); 2 further cases resulted in charges that were ultimately unsuccessful at court (████████/████████).
2514. For a perspective on all homicides in NSW between 1 July 1989 to 30 June 1999 Ms Thompson's paper¹⁰² records that,
2515. The total number of gay-hate homicide victims is 37 and a total of 29 cases resulted in a charge. This represents a 78% solved rate
2516. The total number of other male victims is 621 and a total of 454 cases resulted in a charge. This represents a 73% solved rate
2517. Mr Stephen Tomsen
2518. Mr Tomsen is a professor of criminology at the University of Western Sydney. His published study *'Hatred, Murder and Male Honour – anti-homosexual homicides in New South Wales, 1980-2000'* (2002) identified 74 "apparent" hate killings as occurring in NSW between 1988 and 2007.
2519. Mr Tomsen is the primary source recorded in Ms Thompson's spreadsheet as provided to this investigation.
2520. On 27 July 2011 he wrote and signed a letter entitled *'Re.Death of Scott Johnson 1988'* to Detective Wilson of Manly Police in which he states that he has completed studies which have included "comprehensive analyses of homophobic hate killing (being) a study of 74 apparent hate killings occurring in NSW between 1988 and 2007". This research appears in *'Violence Prejudice and Sexuality'*. The letter emphasises elements of his research on fatal gay-hate attacks, summarised here as: occurring in public places, strangers-as-offenders, offending in groups, incident locations near to *'areas with bars, nightclubs and restaurants favoured by a gay clientele'*, victims at beats are most vulnerable, arrested suspects expressed a *'tone of outrage concerning same-sex activities'* at gay

¹⁰² The Paper p. 315

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



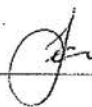
P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

beats *and*, beats were selected by offenders due to the '*ready availability*' of gay victims.

2521. He emphasised page 82 of his research that states, 'Some perpetrators were attracted by the relative seclusion of locations (beachfronts, parks, trails and nature reserves) which are dark and deserted at night, and the compromised situation of victims who had been seeking out casual sexual activity. Around one-third of the fatal attacks fitted this scenario of a public attack by strangers operating in a group'
2522. Mr Tomsen then turns his opinion to the death of Scott. He states both, 'I have not conducted research on the death of Scott Johnson and I am not familiar with the police investigations of this' and, "It is my view that both given the gay identity of the victim and the nature of the location it is very likely that the death of Scott Johnson at North Head occurred in a similar scenario of homophobic targeting of a beachside cruise spot next to dangerous ocean cliffs.'
2523. Mr Tomsen includes a personal experience of North Head in the late 1970's when he says that, '(I) could see that even in daytime the track and surrounding area were popular sites for gay cruising' and '...while a full time resident in the Manly area (Fairlight) for several years in the early 1980's, I also became aware that anti-gay violence was a serious but generally unreported form of crime...'
2524. A second letter was written and signed by Mr Tomsen to Detective Wilson dated 2 August 2011 entitled '*Re.Death of Scott Johnson 1988*'. The letter has the same content as his previous letter dated 27 July 2011 with these exceptions:
2525. The following passages have been removed entirely, 'It is my view that both given the gay identity of the victim and the nature of the location it is very likely that the death of Scott Johnson at North Head occurred in a similar scenario of homophobic targeting of a beachside cruise spot next to dangerous ocean cliffs', and, '..even in the daytime...'
2526. The following new passages appear in the August letter and not in the July letter:

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2527. 'I witnesses (sic) at least one dozen men walking about and making their potential sexual interest in other men known. I did not directly see any violence or potential assailants at this location and I have never seen the place at the further end of the track where Scott Johnson died" and, "Nevertheless, the possibility that Scott Johnson might have died at a spot with gay cruising activity does seem plausible given what I saw...'

2528. I PRODUCE THOSE 2 LETTERS

2529. NSWPF Bias Crime Assessment of North Head

2530. The NSWPF Operational Programs, Bias Crimes Co-ordinator, Sergeant Geoff Steer, and Gay, Lesbian, Bisexual, Transgender and Intersex (GLIBTI) project officer, Senior Sergeant Jo Kenworthy, completed an assessment of North Head to determine the level of anti-gay motivated crimes at the beat or surrounds in the 1980's. The assessment included both a review of offenders identified for gay-hate crime and an assessment of the suitability of the beat location for bias crimes. In making an assessment the report referred to coronial briefs of evidence, crime scene log books, COPS events, a site visit, and current investigations holdings. Available records provided a variable amount of detail for each death. The report is entitled '*North Head Beat*' (2013).

2531. The report contains the following points:

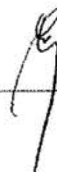
2532. The current definition of a bias crime: A bias crime is one where a criminal offence is committed against persons, associates of persons, property or society that is motivated, in whole or in part, by an offender's bias against an individual's or group's actual or perceived; race, religion, ethnic/national origin, sex/gender, gender identity, age, disability status, sexual orientation or homeless status.

2533. North Head beat topography: The North Head beat is described as being within the Sydney Harbour National Park approx.200 metre south of the Shelley Beach car park. The beat itself was located in scrubland, covering an area approximately 200 metres by 150 metres. The beat consisted of secluded rocky outcrops screened by low (approximately 2 metres high) dense scrub. The beat

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

was not in a residential area with the closest premises approximately 150 metres. The beat was not visible from these premises as it was concealed by a high sandstone wall and the natural vegetation. It is not known if the local residents were aware of the beat. The bushland that the beat was located in backed onto St Patricks Seminary which was approximately 300 metres south west of the beat location. St Pauls College is located approximately 600 metres south west of the western edged of the beat. The beat was only accessible by walking through bush. There were two start points to reach the beat; the first being the Shelley Beach car park and the second a trail off Bluefish Drive. There was no public transport available to reach Shelley Beach car park or the trail off Bluefish Point.

2534. Usage patterns of the North Head beat: The beat operated sunrise to sunset; beat user custom was to actively seek or await/sunbake in seclusion for a partner; primary beat activity area was to the west of the main trail. Secondary beat activity or total seclusion was sought to the east of the main trail (towards the cliff)¹⁰³; it was not as busy as other beats in Sydney, due in part to access and egress characteristics; beat users reported an absence of gay-hate violence or threats to themselves those known to them¹⁰⁴; absence of formal reports of crimes in or around the beat

2535. Likelihood of bias crime at the North Head beat:

2536. Lower usage by target group than other beats in Sydney¹⁰⁵ discourages the offender

2537. Presents the offender with access and egress challenges requiring an uphill walk to either access points to the beat

2538. Existence of more accessible beat locations on the North Beaches

2539. Lack of public transport to the beat access points


2540. Terrain and dense scrub presents obstacles for the offender

103 [Redacted]
104 [Redacted]
105 [Redacted]

Witness:



Signature:


P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2541. Dense scrub may provide cover and concealment to the offender
2542. Offender may risk injury
2543. Daytime operation is restrictive to the typical gay-hate offender due to controls of school, parents, or work.
2544. Night is the preferred time to undertake attacks at beats due to concealment it provides and lesser home-based controls.
2545. There is an absence of a pattern of escalation of violence which is generally associated with bias crime from harassment to violence.
2546. Offender Typology:
2547. Four primary offender typologies associated with anti-gay bias crimes are 'Thrill Seeker', 'Defensive', 'Mission' and 'Retaliatory'. The retaliatory offender is not the subject of this report. Typology characteristic are summaries as –
2548. The 'thrill seeker offender' is characterised by generally offending with other youths, not being organised, may be sadistic. This offender is motivated by psychological/social thrill, acceptance by peers, 'bragging' rights. The offender seeks out victims who are outside their immediate area. The victim is any member of any vulnerable group, victim is considered by this offender to be inferior, chosen at random. Modus operandi is characterised by 'hit and run' style attacks, property desecration/vandalism is common with personal violence possible; hatred of victim is relatively superficial, societal intervention is usually effective, offenders may perform separate acts of the crime; offenders may use weapons of opportunity.
2549. The 'defensive (reactive) offender' is characterised by having a sense of entitlement above that of the victim, not generally aligned with organised hate group, will escalate violence of the victim does not comply. The offender perceives a threat to their way of life/community/privilege. The offender is motivated by protecting/defending against perceived threat, sends a message by the crime to repel the perceived threat, may act as retaliation. The offender acts

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

in areas personal to them. The victim is from the group perceived to constitute the threat, most often the victim is 'of colour'. Modus operandi is characterised by concurrence of level of threat/level of crime, little remorse.

2550. The 'mission offender' is the rarest form of bias-crime offender. This offender is characterised by psychosis, mental illness, impaired reason and withdrawal. Motivation is perceived from a higher order, involves ridding the world of evil, getting even, and acting with urgency. The location chosen is where the perceived 'evil' is found. The victim is of the category perceived as causing the issue, and all must be eliminated. Modus operandi is violent often ending in the suicide of the offender.

2551. Three known northern beaches bias-crime offenders were assessed.

Charged person [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] are identified as 'thrill seeking' offenders. This offender typology can be applied to their co-offenders. [REDACTED]'s offence does not fit the bias crime typology. The report does not identify either 'defensive' or 'mission' offender typology associated with the North Head beat.


2552. The report identified thrill seeking offenders as typically young males under 25 years of age who actively hunt victim groups. Thrill seeking offenders generally offend in areas that offer the easiest opportunities/most convenient victims and the North Head beat is not characterised by this. The charged offenders assessed in the report were identified as offending in areas characterised by (i) easy access (ii) high likelihood of victim-type being present, and (iii) operated at night

2553. The report asserts that 'thrill seeking offenders are generally not deeply entrenched in the biases they display and strong societal intervention can deter them from future bias motivated crimes'


2554. Deaths at North Head from 1986 to 2000

2555. Thirty five (35) deaths were identified in the report as occurring at North Head between 1986 and 2000 with the bodies being located at the base of cliffs

Witness:

_____ 

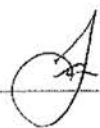
Signature:


_____ 
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

around Fairy Bower, Bluefish Point and Fairfax Lookout. The death of Scott is not included in this number.

- 2556. Five (5) deaths are ultimately undetermined as to cause
- 2557. Five (5) deaths are identified as being the result of misadventure
- 2558. Twenty five (25) deaths are identified as being the result of suicide.
- 2559. Twenty one (21) of the suicides were of males who died in the following circumstances:
 - 2560. Six (6) males jumped from the cliff as witnessed by member so the public and/or police (AAT, CJK, WK, AM, VG, ST). Of these six, three were diagnosed with mental illness (AAT, WK, CJK), and three had not been diagnosed with or suspected of suffering from mental illness (AM, VG, ST).
 - 2561. Fifteen (15) males suffered from mental illness, schizophrenia and/or depression. One of these deaths was determined as misadventure with the remainder being recorded as suicide.
 - 2562. Four (4) left suicide notes and/or gave an indication to family/friends of their intention and/or concurrently overdosed
 - 2563. Five (5) left personal items at the jump site including clothing, hat, wallet, dentures. Three were found with personal property on their body (that is items in addition to clothes). The property included religious items, wallets, cash. One was found with no personal property or identification (other than clothing)
 - 2564. Four (4) were located at the base of the cliff with dislodged clothing, including pants being down to thighs, knees or ankles, which include in some cases signs of tears in the clothes (RRL, CJK, RM, VS). Two of these bodies were found in the vicinity of Bluefish Point and this was a focus of the bias crime assessment due to potential indications of bias crime relevant to Scott.
 - 2565. A further review of these four deaths identified that at the time of his death in 1986 RRL was being treated at Manly Hospital, North Head, for schizophrenia.

Witness: _____ 

Signature: _____  P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Immediately prior to his death in 1991 CJK was seen by a member of the public to walk alone towards the cliff. At the time of his death in 1991 RM was being treated at the Manly Hospital, North Head, for a psychiatric illness and subsequent to his death his father found a suicide note. At the time of his death in 1994 VS was being treated for paranoid schizophrenia and expressed suicidal ideation in the month prior to his death.

2566. Available records do not allow the specific locations of each death at North Head to be identified. The majority are recorded as occurring at 'North Head' with a minority of deaths identified at the North Head areas of Fairy Bower, Shelly Beach, Bluefish Point, Bluefish Drive, and Fairfax Lookout.

2567. Bluefish Point deaths

2568. Looking closer at the Blue Fish Point deaths, the report cites the case of a male 'CJK'. In 1991 CJK was seen by a concerned member of the public walking alone towards the cliff. He was fully dressed. He suffered long term mental illness. Police arrived and found his body at the base of Bluefish Point which at that time was only in trousers which were down around the thighs. CJK's other personal items were found folded and placed neatly about two metres from the cliff top. The items included his shoes, socks, belt, watch, wallet, t-shirt, shirt, and jacket.


2569. Also, the report cites the case of a 28 year old male 'RRL' who had been diagnosed with schizophrenia. In 1986 his body was found at the base of Bluefish Point. The scene, a recent visit to friends, and a note were suggestive of suicide.

2570. The report cites the death of 23 year old male 'MS'. In 1997 his body was found at the base of Bluefish Point. The scene, conversation with family, and history of mental health were suggestive of suicide. MS placed his wallet in a tree nearby where he jumped.

Witness:



Signature:


 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2571. Bias Crime Assessment of the death of Scott Johnson

2572. Regarding the specific case at hand the report concludes based on the information available it is unlikely that Scott Johnson was a victim of a bias motivated crime due to:

2573. An absence of a pattern of escalating violence at North Head; (if Scott was targeted in the area of his clothes) the location where Scott fell is not convenient to the thrill seeking offender; (if Scott was carried or dragged to the cliff from another area of the beat) the terrain and dense scrub of the beat is not conducive to the 'thrill-seeking' offender; carrying or dragging Scott at the location is problematic; legal intervention after offences by thrill seeking offenders [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and associates deterred them from committing offences after conviction in 1987; difficulty coordinating an attack at the cliff site posed a risk to the offender/s; the North Head beat was not a viable location for bias motivated crime.

2574. I PRODUCE THAT REPORT

2575. Forensic Autopsy of Scott Johnson

2576. A forensic autopsy is underway.

2577. I PRODUCE THAT REPORT

2578. Suspicious held by Scott Johnson's Family


2579. This section summarises the expressed and implied suspicions of the Johnson family enunciated by way of correspondence, meetings and the media. The dissatisfaction of the Johnson family with police investigations is included in summary here as it goes to some of their expressed suspicions. The communications by or on behalf of the Johnson family in this area is extensive and nuanced. The themes and quotations summarised here have been selected to best represent their position and concern.

2580. 1989

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
 P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2581. Correspondence 1 January 1989 This correspondence was provided to the 1989 Inquest as a statement by Mr Johnson and is a 40 page letter from Mr Johnson to Constable Troy Hardie of Manly Police. Mr Johnson suspects that [REDACTED] [REDACTED] *'...has important information about Scott's death that he has not told me or the police.'* His suspicion of [REDACTED] arose on his first visit to Australia following Scott's death and he asserts that [REDACTED] may be regarded with suspicion as his version of events *"changed dramatically as I uncovered information from other sources"*, and [REDACTED]'s recollections to Mr Johnson *'...proved over and over again to be false, mistaken, or inconsistent'*.
2582. Mr Johnson writes of four (4) possibilities –
2583. (1) *'Scott died on the Friday, someone was with him on the cliff, and [REDACTED] knows who it is because he spoke to either the person or Scott on or about Thursday'*
2584. (2) *'Scott died Friday by himself on the cliff, but stayed with someone Thursday and [REDACTED] knows who it is (or knows that Scott was with somebody)'*
2585. (3) *'Scott spoke to [REDACTED] Thursday and told him why he was going to the cliff-perhaps they fought', and*
2586. (4) *[REDACTED] was with Scott on the cliff*
2587. The majority of the letter contains general and blatant references, speculation, assumptions, and subjective statements directing or alluding to a suspicion of [REDACTED]. Mr Johnson intimates that [REDACTED] knew about Scott's death before it was reported to him by the police. Mr Johnson also expresses a theory implicating [REDACTED] and 'a friend of [REDACTED]'s', perhaps being [REDACTED]. The unknown friends' involvement possibly extending to dating Scott and covering this up from the police with or without [REDACTED]'s knowledge, saying [REDACTED] *decided that, there being nothing that could save Scott, he would protect the living-himself and his friend' and [REDACTED] then drove to the Canberra house to remove all evidence relating to Scott's death.'* He qualifies his allegations with

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

'Again, this scenario may not be true . However, parts of the story may be true. It is almost certainly not totally wrong, and it would explain the entire mystery.'

2588. Mr Johnson states that he first 'confronted' [REDACTED] with his suspicions on Saturday 17 December 1989, the day after the funeral. He includes at page 26 the following statement, *'It might be wondered why [REDACTED] would tell me anything if he had something to hide. I offer the following explanation. [REDACTED] had enormous incentive to keep me from becoming suspicious since I was the only person in the world he had to fear. No one else was suspicious. No one else would ever have become suspicious.'*

2589. Mr Johnson advises the reader not to believe [REDACTED]'s account that Scott had previously contemplated suicide saying, *'To invite a theory of suicide , [REDACTED] devised a story about a previous suicide attempt, which he told the police...'*. He specifies his doubts in these terms;

2590. (1) *'it could not have happened when [REDACTED] said it did, in August 1984. Scott and I were in Europe the entire month and worked together in Los Angeles the preceding month'*.

2591. (2) *'the story is implausible. [REDACTED] has explained that Scott had a 'one night stand', thought he had contracted AIDS, and went out the same night to hurl himself off the Golden Gate Bridge. It's a tidy story, short, and complete with a clear motive. But Scott was a highly educated, highly intelligent person who know how to have such things medically checked, and would certainly have done so. He was not so ridiculously impulsive. [REDACTED]'s great readiness to relate this story (to others) also seemed strange'*.

2592. He refers to information from the family of [REDACTED] that when Scott went on 'sojourns' around Sydney he sometimes alternated running and walking and so *'it was his habit to bring nothing but the bare essentials – no books, backpacks, wallet etc'*.

2593. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2594. Correspondence 4 January 1989 to Constable Hardie which accompanied his 40 page letter, Mr Johnson again expresses strong suspicion about [REDACTED]'s involvement in the death of Scott.

2595. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2596. Correspondence 12 January 1989 In a one page letter to Manly Police Mr Johnson expresses suspicion of [REDACTED], a disbelief in suicide as a cause of death, and a hope of a thorough investigation, saying *'My family and I are prepared to accept Scott's death as unexplained, or even as a suicide if it ultimately comes to light that it was a suicide, but before doing so, we must be certain that every effort is made to determine whether anyone else was involved with his death'*.

2597. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2598. Correspondence 12 January 1989 That letter is accompanied by a 10 page 'memorandum' in which Mr Johnson again sets out his views. A note on the 1 page letter suggests that the letter and memorandum was also sent to the then Commissioner of Police, John Avery.

2599. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2600. 2005

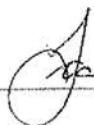
2601. Correspondence 29 March 2005 In a two page letter to State Coroner Abernathy, Mr Johnson links Scott's death to the probable gay-hate deaths of Mr Warren and Mr Russell (Taradale Inquest). He also links the quality of Scott's investigation to the criticism at inquest of police in those other deaths. No other particular suspicions are raised.

2602. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2603. 2006

2604. Correspondence 25 March 2006. In a three page letter to Detective Sergeant Richard Puffett of Manly Police, Mr Johnson requests a re-investigation and

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

thanked him for their meeting. He writes *'I am quite anxious to learn more about how my brother was killed in 1988, and have never believed he committed suicide...'*. He refers to: the 2005 Bondi gay-hate crimes; Scott having *'solved the final problem for his PhD'*; *'one of his best friends ([REDACTED]) said no sign of depression...'*.

2605. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2606. 2007

2607. Correspondence 22 May 2007. This 2 page letter indicates hand delivery to State Coroner Mary Jerram, and Mr Glick writes : that the earlier suicide finding was 'made in error'; he requests access to all case material; refers to the Bondi crimes and 'neglectful' investigations; refers to Scott's death as 'eerily similar' to the Bondi crimes; that their prior request for police to reinvestigate Scott's death is unheeded; [REDACTED]; Bluefish Point was not known for suicide; on a site visit to the North Head gay beat he found it to be *'patently obvious that Scott did not, in all likelihood, find his way to the secluded spot himself. The premise that he ended up at this remote, difficult-to-access place himself, on foot, with the express purpose of ending his own life strikes me as implausible at best'*.

2608. That letter has a notation by Magistrate Jerram that Deputy State Coroner Milledge asked to take carriage at this point.

2609. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2610. Media Sydney Morning Herald 3 June 2007 'Maths Genius Thrown off Cliff Top by Gay-Hate Gang'. *'...his family has launched its own investigation into the possibility the PhD student was the victim of a cliff-top killer targeting gay men, or even a gay-hate gang'. Mr Glick is quoted as saying 'The Blue Fish Point lookout had, at the time of Johnson's death, been one of five well-known gay beats in the Manly area - a fact never disclosed by police' and, 'But you'd have to say the hypothesis, that this (North Head) was also a place not immune from gay bashings, violence and even murder, is a reasonable one' and, 'I'm putting a fall, after some kind of a struggle gone wrong perhaps, at the top of the*

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

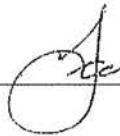
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

list...Homicide would be second and, of course, suicide way down the bottom simply because, if that's the scenario, nothing quite adds up." The direct email address of Mr Glick is provided in the article.

2611. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2612. Correspondence 29 August 2007 In a 13 page letter to Detective Inspector Michael Ashwood of the Unsolved Homicide Team, Mr Glick and Mr John Macnamara refers to; the 1989 coronial inquest corroborating the suicide 'ruling' by police; his assertion that homicide is a 'more likely' cause of death; the Bondi gay-hate crimes; Ms Thompson; intimation that at the 1989 inquest police intentionally denied having actual knowledge that a gay beat existed at North Head; his mistaken belief that [REDACTED] was stabbed by [REDACTED] at Bluefish Point being *'the very same place...while nude sunbaking on the rocks above where Scott's body was found.'*; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; Mr Philip Keen; Mr Troy Hardie; the 2003 Bondi inquest; Mr Stephen Tomsen; [REDACTED]; the arrest of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]; the murder of gay-man Mr Steven Dempsey; media articles of assaults on males; the possibility that a homeless person attacked Scott as per [REDACTED]; distrust of police by gay men/beat users; the death of Mr Russell at Bondi; reference to a 'tag' dMB for Da Manly Boys group; absence of evidence of suicide by way of [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], Mr Johnson; [REDACTED] as being uncooperative with their investigations; the possibility that Scott used beats/was unfaithful to [REDACTED]; police anger towards the Johnson family in 1988/89; theories on how Scott travelled to North Head; the mistaken belief that Bluefish Point was not a suicide location; *'Absent a history of failed suicide attempts or a recent catastrophic emotional event, an act of spontaneous, intentional, ritual suicide (like having Scott take off his clothes and fold them neatly) is almost unheard of in literature'* according to unnamed 'suicide experts'; concerns about the post mortem; information from [REDACTED] [REDACTED] the consequences to the evidence available of a poor relationship between [REDACTED] and Mr Johnson.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2613. In a 13 page undated letter to Detective Inspector Michael Ashwood of the Unsolved Homicide Team, appears in all respects other than the date to be the same letter as above.

2614. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2615. 2011

2616. Correspondence 11 February 2011 In a 2 page letter to Detective Shane Black of Manly Police, Mr Glick refers to; information from MK; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; media article relating the arrests of [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] for gay-hate crimes at Narrabeen, Reef beach, and North Sydney.

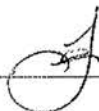
2617. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2618. Correspondence 12 May 2011 In a 4 page letter from Richard Thomas, the Johnson family solicitor, to State Coroner Mary Jerram he asks that the matter be reopened or a written explanation as to why it will not be reopened. The letter reproduces other Johnson correspondence and refers to: consultant report of Mr Page saying he is 'nationally recognised'; report of Ms Thompson saying she is nationally recognised; Mr Tomsen's letter and his national recognition; [REDACTED]; media reports of 'likely acts of violence...targeting gay men'; [REDACTED] information; [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]; an absence of suicidal ideation; academic references.

2619. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2620. Correspondence 12 May 2011 In a 4 page letter to Detective Tim Wilson of Manly Police Station, Mr Glick refers to: report by Mr Stephen Page (former sergeant of police); report by Ms Thompson; information from Mr Tomsen; hearsay from [REDACTED]; media articles he links to gay-hate crimes; information from [REDACTED] who at that time was his 'confidential source'; [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]; letters from Scott to [REDACTED] suggesting no suicidal ideations; report by Mr John Macnamara (former Sergeant of police and Johnson family employee). Mr Glick writes that he is a 'nationally known journalist' in the

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

United States and has a Masters Degree in Journalism from the University of California at Berkeley.

2621. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2622. Correspondence 18 May 2011 In a 3 page letter to Detective Tim Wilson of Manly Police from Mr Glick, he refers to; hearsay evidence of gay assaults by [REDACTED]; potential evidence from Mr Tomsen; new opinions by Mr Troy Hardie (former constable of police) and Mr Wayne Plant (former constable of police) relative to suicide; North Head gay beat information of [REDACTED]; North Head gay beat information of [REDACTED] (stabbing victim of [REDACTED]); North Head gay beat information of [REDACTED]; gay beat information of Mr Philip Keen; 1970's/early 1980's gay beat user information from [REDACTED] (this was not pursued as it is not contemporaneous to Scott's death); intimations that the police influenced Forensic Pathologist, Doctor Duflou; Manly and Bondi gang references.

2623. [Correspondence 19 May 2011 from the office of the State Coroner to Manly Police confirming that the case has been reopened due to 'sufficient' information presented by Mr Glick. The first call-over was set for 18 November 2011]

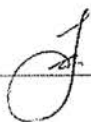
2624. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2625. Correspondence 7 July 2011 is a 2 page letter and media articles to Detective Wilson from Mr Glick. Mr Glick refers to 13 articles appearing in the *The Manly Daily* newspaper from purportedly from 1986 to 1989 which he says '*may have indicated coded reports on anti-gay violence*'. The articles are summarised here with Mr Glick's stated reason for relevance to Scott's death;

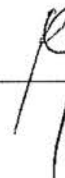
2626. [REDACTED] refers to the stabbing of [REDACTED] by [REDACTED]. Mr Glick states 'I interviewed [REDACTED] and as far as I could figure out it happened at the exact same place where Scott's clothes were found'. This is incorrect as it was in an army bunker.

2627. Undated *Man with knife in back ran through the bush to hospital*, is the same matter as above.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2628. 7 February 1987 *Assault Charges*, refers to the charges and court mention dates of [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] for gay-hate related assaults.
2629. 2 March 1987 *Victim of Assault*, refers to a broken jaw being inflicted by one man on another man after they met in a car park at Dee Why. Mr Glick states, 'car parks often served as beats'. The victim reported the matter to police.
2630. 3 April 1987 *Attack at bus terminal*, refers to an kicking assault of a 28 year old man at the public toilets/known gay beat of the Narrabeen bus terminus. The victim saw the offenders leave in a blue Corolla or Corona. The victim reported the matter to police.
2631. 12 January 1988 *Man bashed and robbed*, refers to an assault of a male and the theft of his car by three young men 18 to 20 years old at 3am at the Dobroyd Point lookout. Mr Glick speculates that this area is a gay beat. The victim reported the matter to police.
2632. 5 May 1988 *Man bashed*, refers to an assault by up to four youths in a residential street of Manly at the southern end of Manly Beach. The victim had just left a nearby party. The offenders left him unconscious but did not rob him. The victim reported the matter to the police.
2633. 28 June 1988 *Bashed man grateful to police*, refers to an assault of a man as he left the Steyne Hotel at the eastern end of The Corso at Manly. A nearby undercover police operation resulted in the arrest of the lone offender. The victim praised the efforts of police in the article. The victim did not want his name recorded in the article and Mr Glick draws the conclusion that therefore the victim may have been gay.
2634. 7 December 1988 *Police probe street gang attacks*, refers to three incidents of separate street violence. One incident was in a residential street in Frenchs Forest where two groups of offenders are described as 'Italians' who had bats chased a man in residential streets. He received welts and bruises. In an incident in Manly two victims were admitted to hospital after an argument started outside a nightclub in Manly CBD. A 17 years old youth was charged with the assault. In an

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

incident at Brookvale two brothers were assaulted by a group of youths who also had followed them in residential streets. One 17 year old was charged. The four victims reported the matters to the police. Mr Glick states that the separate attacks 'may well have targeted gays.'

2635. 8, 9 and 10 December 1988 *Coastwatch*, refers to weather, beach and surf conditions encompassing the area from Manly to Palm Beach.
2636. 15 December 1988 *Body found*, refers to the body of [REDACTED] being located in North Manly toilet block having died from a drug overdose. Mr Glick makes a link as 'several (unnamed) sources' suggest a 'drugs for gay sex' culture at Manly.
2637. 15 December 1988 *Body on Rocks*, refers to Scott's body being found and the quote 'There were no suspicious circumstances, according to (unnamed) police'.
2638. 31 May 1989 *Homosexuals Attack Man at Narrabeen*, refers to an alleged sexual assault of a 30 year old man when he entered the public toilets near the Narrabeen bus terminus about 8.30pm. Two men who threatened to produce a knife and then sexually assaulted him. He describes one offender as Caucasian 25-30 years old, 173cm tall, tattooed across his left hand, beer belly and brown collar length hair. He described the other offender as Mediterranean, 30 to 35 years old, 183 cm tall, with dark collar length hair. A local police officer, Sergeant Phil Bernasconi, is quoted as saying that the public toilet block at the bus terminus, as well as South Narrabeen and the Collaroy Surf Club were a 'popular haunt for homosexuals'. The victim reported the matter to the police and police use the article to seek information from the public.
2639. 22 December 1989 (incorrect date of 15 December 1988 appears handwritten on the article) *Sex charges denied*, refers to a not guilty plea by accused person 18 year old [REDACTED] of the sexual assault of a 20 year old man at Wheeler Park, Narrabeen on 28 November 1989. It is presumed that this article has been included by Mr Glick due to the mention of a park in the northern beaches.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2640. Wheeler Park is a council parkland boarded by the main northern beaches thoroughfare, Pittwater Road, the area of Narrabeen Lake. It is within a short walk of the Narrabeen bus terminus. The age of the victim and offender is very close and there is no indication that this was a gay-hate crime.

2641. The victim in this matter, [REDACTED], has been the victim of numerous assaults of a non-sexual and non-gay-hate over many years. He has been treated for a psychiatric disorder and was not interviewed by Strike Force Macnamir. The offender, [REDACTED], has no further sexual assault offences recorded. His police history includes property offences involving weapons, on-going domestic violence with a female partner, and street offences. He is not part of a group and has no entries for frequenting known gay beats or North Head. He has no association with known gay-hate offenders and has no entries for gay-hate crimes.

2642. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2643. Media 14 September 2011 The Manly Daily 'Facebook Confession Sparks New Report'. This article refers the so-called 'Facebook confession'. Mr Glick is purported to have told them that he had received the 'confession' earlier in the year. An unnamed 'Manly police source' is purported to have told the paper that 'confession' had been posted by a boy with Aspergers and was no longer a line of inquiry.

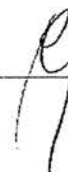
2644. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2645. Media 17 September 2011 The Australian 'Close to the Edge'. This is an article written by Mr Glick. The article provides intimate detail of Scott's case. It includes 2 photographs of Scott. He presents police efforts as poor and his own efforts as good. He refers to: observations of the scene and post mortem; Scott having 'solved his dissertation's key problem' and being 'about to earn his PhD'; the relationship of [REDACTED] and Scott as 'solid'; [REDACTED]'s family treated Scott 'like an adopted son'; the place where [REDACTED] was stabbed as being 'at the exact spot where Scott died'; [REDACTED] was the person who brought the Bondi suspicious death inquest findings to the attention of Mr Johnson in

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

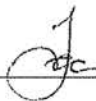
2005; Scott and Mr Johnson 'had sought solace from familial dysfunction in each others' company especially after their 15 year old sister, Terry, moved out; at college they climbed the Matterhorn and did long walks together; at 22 years old Scott told Stephen that he was gay; a letter by Mr Johnson in which he explains 'why it was so important to find his brother's killer, quoting from a letter by Mr Johnson saying *'Scott's death, for the longest time, stopped my life...Scott was my closet friend. It's easy to say that Scott helped define me and was one of my primary sources of joy and purpose. He and I shared and worked together on our most important dreams'*; he reports a 'blur of revelation' over gay beat information from [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]; he instigated other media to include his contact details for the public and that *'within hours I received an onslaught of messages'* and he summarises some of the information that he received. Mr Glick has told police of only one of these callers, that being [REDACTED].

2646. The few people that the Johnson family have not criticised in this and other documents are retired detective, Mr Page, of Taradale, retired Homicide Squad investigator John Macnamara and former NSWPF Gay and Lesbian coordinator Ms Thompson (now resigned). Mr Johnson has offered and assured police that that he can "make Steve (Page) available" if needed. Regarding Mr Macnamara, it is known that he was on the pay roll of the Johnson family and has commented to currently serving police on how generous the pay was. It is important for the current investigation to have consideration for the integrity of statements and claims made by any person who is, or was, in receipt of payment, benefit or advancement facilitated by the Johnson family.

2647. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2648. Correspondence 6 October 2011. Mr Johnson thanks State Coroner Jerram for reopening the matter for the purpose of reviewing 'new information that was not available to the authorities at the time, especially in light of what we now know about the epidemic of anti-gay violence that was occurring in the greater Sydney area'.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2649. The letter is then dedicated to 'concerns' he has for the investigation being conducted by Manly Police. He objects to: the re-investigation being conducted by the same command responsible for the investigation 21 years earlier and would prefer the involvement of the Unsolved Homicide Team; the purported lack of contact by the re-investigation with [REDACTED]; the re-investigation not interviewing him; the lack of 'seriousness' shown by the re-investigation towards the so-called 'Facebook confession' and related 'leaks' to the media as 'disturbing and prejudicial'; not having access to a 2007 Unsolved Homicide review report (the Johnson family obtain this report via the 2012 inquest brief). Mr Johnson helpfully tells the Coroner that this letter is also forwarded to his solicitor, Thomas, and local member, Baird.

2650. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2651. Correspondence 8 November 2011 In a 6 page letter from Mr Johnson to Detective Wilson of Manly Police, he asserts suspicions that are supported by inquiries by 'former police investigators' and 'investigative journalists' who he has employed. His suspicion now is that *'Scott was, in all likelihood, murdered because he was gay'*.

2652. [REDACTED]'s suspicious role is mentioned only in terms of the prior suicide attempt which Mr Johnson does not find 'believable', and not providing complete accounts. Mr Johnson refers to Scott and [REDACTED] as being in a '*committed and substantial relationship*'. He concludes, '*Since Scott's death I have had an occasionally strained relationship with my brother's partner ([REDACTED]). In the stress and grief immediately following Scott's death, [REDACTED] may have come to the conclusion that I was convinced that he was responsible for Scott's death. The perception, in turn, soured our ability to work together and took some years to repair. I want to state unequivocally that I do not believe that [REDACTED] had anything to do with Scott's death.*' He thanks [REDACTED] for bringing to his attention in 2006 the Taradale Inquest findings regarding Mr Russell and Mr Warren.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2653. He now believes that Scott attended *'the well-known Manly gay beats in search of sex'* and he introduces the story of Scott asking him to drop him off at a 'famous (gay) cruising spot' in Los Angeles after which Scott returned *'a little beaten up both physically and mentally from his experience'*. He provides comment on Scott's unfaithfulness towards ██████████ also in support of his suspicion that Scott went 'cruising' at the North Head gay beat. He is now prepared to believe ██████████'s Golden Gate suicide account in so far as Scott's motive was guilt over being unfaithful, thus supporting his premise.

2654. Based on the premise of Scott attending *'the well-known Manly gay beats in search of sex'*, Mr Johnson links Scott's death to the probable homicides of Mr Russell and Mr Warren at the Marks Park gay beat at Bondi. He expresses a mistaken belief that some Bondi gay-hate assaults included *'stripping gay men naked first.'* He expresses a mistaken belief of a similarity between Scott death and the stabbing of ██████████.

2655. Mr Johnson offers his opinion that includes, *'At some point Scott and his tryst' were surprised by a group of men, who beat him and threw him off the cliff. They took his wallet but lost everything else'*.

2656. In conclusion Mr Johnson again states that he cannot believe that Scott suicided saying, *'I cannot believe he would have done so without saying goodbye, or leaving me a definitive message that he had taken his life'*.

2657. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2658. 2012

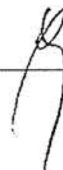
2659. Media 3 June 2012 Daily Telegraph *'I'm hoping to find my brother's killer' as brother continued long fight to get justice for Scott'*. Quotes Mr Johnson as saying "When Scott died my world fell apart". No new suspicions expressed by the Johnson family.

2660. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2661. Media 27 June 2012 Wentworth Courier *'Two-decade old Manly death linked to Bondi hate crimes'*. Report following the open finding by Deputy State Coroner Carmel Forbes. No new suspicions expressed by the Johnson family.

2662. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2663. Media 28 June 2012 The Manly Daily *'New verdict over 1988 cliff death at North Head'*. No new suspicions expressed by the Johnson family.

2664. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2665. Media 28 June 2012 Star Observer *Possible 'gay hate' murder case reopened'*. Report following the open finding by Deputy State Coroner Carmel Forbes saying prior suicide finding had been 'overruled'. Links case to the Bondi suspicious deaths. No new suspicions expressed by the Johnson family.

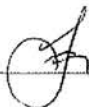
2666. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2667. Media 30 June 2012 The Manly Daily *'Man on a Mission'* includes: photographs and quotes from Mr Johnson and Mr Glick about the recent 'open finding' by the Coroner and Mr Johnson is quotes as saying *'We've generated 50 pages of notes about people that should be spoken to, incidents that might never have been reported. We're hopeful this opens the door to investigating and explaining what was likely to have been a terrifying final few moments in this gentle man's life. Perhaps, some day we will look into the eyes, as Scott did, of the person who administered his death'*; that Mr Johnson has 'ploughed massive resources' into the 'private campaign'; a photograph of Scott also appears. No new suspicions expressed by the Johnson family.

2668. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2669. Media DNA Magazine undated five page article (suggested publication date August 2012) *'Death in Manly'*. Mr Johnson is quoted as saying *'We were inseparable as brothers', 'When (the Taradale Inquest) news reach me in 2005 it was like my world was turned upside down. It was instantly clear what had happened to my brother because the circumstances of his death matched exactly*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

with these other men who died at beats', 'You could sense that the court (2012 inquest) was completely for us';

2670. *'I believe Scott was murdered, so I'll feel relieved if and when the police and coroner come to the same conclusion. Gay men don't go to gay beats to commit suicide. It would be beyond coincidence that my brother died at the bottom of this cliff, at a well known gay beat, where no suicide victims have ever been found, at the same time other gay men were dying at the hands of violent gangs in a similar manner on the southern beaches, within months of Scott's death. Scott was in all likelihood killed because he was a gay man at a gay beat'; 'Finding whoever killed my brother in my main goal...It sickens me that whoever killed Scott was free to continue marauding and possibly killing others without so much as a suspicion that a murder occurred';*

2671. Mr Johnson used 'contacts he had at Harvard to push for an inquest'. The Taradale Inquest heavily quoted and misquoted including that it found that six men had been murdered. The 1989 inquest 'merely confirmed' the suicide as decided by police as 'only police testimony was heard'. Mr Stephen Page is described by Mr Johnson as a 'super cop' and NSWPF seek information from the public. The article contains 5 photographs of Scott.

2672. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2673. Correspondence 4 September 2012 is an email from Mr Johnson to Detective Inspector John Lehmann which includes: Mr Johnson's cooperation with the DNA magazine article referred to above and Mr Johnson's confidence that 'The magazine is certainly aimed at an audience that might have information about the culture of gay violence in the Northern Beaches at the time of Scott's death; the ABC television program 'had indicated an interest in filming an episode on Scott'; POI's [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED].

2674. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2675. Media The Australian 26 October 2012 'Police probe 'suicide' after attacks on gays'. Links case to the Bondi suspicious deaths. Report following the open

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

finding by Deputy State Coroner Carmel Forbes saying prior suicide finding had been 'overturned'. No new suspicions expressed by the Johnson family.

2676. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2677. 2013

2678. Correspondence 9 January 2013 from Mr Johnson to Detective Inspector John Lehmann of the NSWPF Unsolved Homicide Team includes; *'We are frankly startled that police (are) still disregarding the cumulative and mounting evidence that violence towards gays was virulent in the Northern Beaches in the late 1980's...as it was in the eastern suburbs of Sydney.'*; *'In the week (in December 2012) each day Rebecca and Dan spent talking to people in Sydney and Manly revealed more stories of violent marauders who would roam the northern beaches beating and robbing gay men with abandon'*. No details are provided to allow the allegation of 'violent marauders' to be followed-up. No new evidence or information is provided.

2679. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2680. Correspondence 9 January 2013 from Mr Johnson to Detective Inspector John Lehmann of the NSWPF Unsolved Homicide Team includes that Inspector Lehmann told them that on review the case received a zero solvability rating despite what they describe as *'sufficient new evidence'* and *'credible new leads'* to further an investigation into *'Scott's violent death'*. They mention the upcoming ABC television *Australian Story* episode.

2681. They provide a number of annexures describing them as containing *'new, specific, credible and viable investigative leads who were potentially aware of or directly involved in Scott's and/or other gay men's violent deaths in the late 1980s and early 1990s'*. The annexures include;

2682. A letter to Inspector John Lehmann dated 9 January 2013 that includes; *'...Rebecca and Daniel formed the impression that you thought their verbal presentation (on 6 December 2012) summarising the highlights of our new findings was not as compelling as we believe they are'*. The material provided

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

refers to: Mr Page and strike force Taradale; Ms Thompson; [REDACTED] being credited in court transcriptions with assisting police in the arrest of his co-offenders and description of his assaults (and receiving consideration upon sentence); [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; an (incorrect) statement that [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were arrested for 'more than 40 counts involving assault on homosexual men'; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]'s organised crime links; [REDACTED] and a request that police consider *'placing telephone surveillance on him at the time of the broadcast of the 'Australian Story' segment...telephone surveillance should be considered for [REDACTED] as well'; 'multiple sources have confirmed that (Narrabeen High School) was a core location for [REDACTED] activity and anti-gay violence'*; the death of [REDACTED] (by a self administered drug overdose) at a Manly toilet block.

2683. Regarding North Head operating as a gay beat, the letter includes - information from [REDACTED]; information from [REDACTED]; a reference to the stabbing of [REDACTED] on which they add the comment, *'If (police) new about that incident and did not make the possible connection to Scott's death, we suggest that would qualify as a substantial oversight.'*

2684. The Johnson family position that *'The overwhelming preponderance of the evidence suggests that suicide is highly unlikely'* and their reasons for asserting this are repeated. They call the evidence of [REDACTED] on the alleged prior suicide attempt by Scott *'vague and uncorroborated'*.

2685. The letter continues with information from various 'sources', namely, *'Source A ([REDACTED]) ...had an older brother who ...hung out with some of the aforementioned persons of interest (inclusive of [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED])...We spent time over several days with him and found his descriptions credible and detailed.'* 'Source A' said that he knew that the group committed gay-hate offences starting at the Narrabeen bus terminus and working their way towards Manly. 'Source A' names [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] *'as potential or occasional*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

gay bashers'. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are named by 'source A' as he heard that they would assault and rob gay men via nightclubs. '

2686. [REDACTED] introduced the Johnson family to 'Source B' ([REDACTED]). They provide a 'synopsis' of his information which includes: that he 'regularly socialised' with [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and heard them 'brag about poofter bashing'; he saw them 'with watches and jewellery they had obtained from gay bashings'. [REDACTED] also names [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] as 'potential occasional participants'. [REDACTED] claims that the start of the gay-hate crimes for [REDACTED] was when he was raped by three men in the Narrabeen bus station. He says that the [REDACTED] group looked for gay men to assault at Narrabeen, Freshwater, Mosman, Taronga Zoo and Shelly Beach at Manly. [REDACTED] was the lure as he was the youngest.

2687. The letter provides the names of 'women known to associate with [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]' as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED].

2688. [REDACTED] intimates in a purported text to [REDACTED] that he knows that [REDACTED] and four of his cousins assaulted gay men at Bondi and Kings Cross including one where they threw a male victim from the top of steps and he died. In another meeting between the Johnson family and [REDACTED] [REDACTED] he said that he heard [REDACTED] and 'some of his accomplices' talk about 'having bashed and drowned a man near the beach in Shelley Beach and left his body on the rocks on the far side of the cove' which [REDACTED] thinks happened in 1989. [REDACTED] estimates that [REDACTED] and his group 'may have bragged about 90-100 bashings and an undetermined number of murders'.

2689. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] also tell the Johnson family about [REDACTED] [REDACTED] and their suspicions that [REDACTED] was not murdered by his brother (convicted older brother [REDACTED]) but rather by [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] 'possibly because of a drug deal gone bad'.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2690. Mr Philip Keen from the AIDS Council of NSW provides information that 'many gay men reported (to Mr Keen) that the police would drag men out of the toilet blocks that served as beats and then publicly berate them' and that because this type of police conduct created distrust in gay men Mr Keen 'theorises, men might have met up in the known beats in town (Manly) but have gone to a more secluded spot around the cliffs above the Shelly Beach parking lot to have sex'.

2691. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2692. Correspondence 12 January 2013 is a 3 page letter from Mr Johnson to Police and Emergency Services Minister Gallacher. The letter: references to information and evidence that already appear in this statement; flags that the ABC television *Australian Story* program will air in February 2013; their dissatisfaction with police; an assertion that 'links' exist between the Bondi gay-hate crimes and the death of Scott and that '*...any investigation into Scott's death will almost certainly uncover other unsolved homicides...*'.

2693. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2694. Correspondence 14 January 2013 is an 88 page document provided by the Johnson family to the Unsolved Homicide Team entitled, '*The Case of Scott Russell Johnson. Timeline and Evidence*'. It refers to; statistics of purported 'Gay Hate Murders 1977-1999' sourced from Ms Thompson and Mr Tomsen which already appear in this statement; their frustrated attempts to have the case reinvestigated; media article *Death in Manly*; media article *Case reopened: suicide or anti-gay attack* which includes a photograph of Scott; media article *Man on a Mission*; media article *Close to the Edge*; letter dated 9 January 2013 from the Johnson family to Inspector Lehmann; letter and annexures dated 9 January 2013 to Inspector Lehmann; a letter dated 6 October 2011 to State Coroner Jerram; the 2012 second inquest findings and reasons; document by Ms Thompson dated 1 February 2011; document by Mr Page; letter to Inspector Ashwood dated 29 August 2007; a letter to State Coroner John Abernethy dated 29 March 2005; general correspondence under the hand of Ms Clover Moore the Mayor for Sydney (dated 22 November 2011), Mr Gallacher, the minister for

Witness:

Signature:

P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Police and Emergency Services (dated 19 December 2012) Mr Michael Baird, the State Member for Manly (dated 8 January 2013).

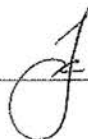
2695. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2696. Correspondence 14 January 2013 is an email from Mr Steve Johnson highlighting issues associated with gay-hate crimes in NSW, via a 1992 report by the NSW Anti Discrimination Board Streetwatch Committee. The report nominates areas of violence against homosexual people being Oxford Street and Newtown with the majority of attacks occurring on the weekends in public places.

2697. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2698. Media 'Australian Story' 11 February 2013 is the Johnson family information presented via ABC television program 'Australian Story'. The program is billed on the ABC TV website as *'Well-known and not so well-known Australians telling their own remarkable stories in their own words # AustralianStory'*. The program was entitled *'On the Precipice'*. There were appearances by Mr Johnson, Mr Glick, [REDACTED], Mr Stephen Page, [REDACTED]; Detective Inspector John Lehmann of the Unsolved Homicide Team. The program records: incorrectly that Scott had completed his doctoral thesis and possibly celebrating at North Head (Glick); the injustice of not knowing what happened to Scott (Glick); their efforts are well financed and aim to get 'this case investigated and finding my brother's killer' (Glick/Johnson); Mr Glick promised to tell Mr Johnson if he thought Scott suicided and *'if I think he was killed, I will investigate it as if it was my own brother that was killed'*; When Scott told Mr Johnson that he was gay, the reaction was *'I was shocked. I was shocked when this person that I felt like I knew better than anybody else and was closer to than anybody else. I didn't know this about him. I didn't know that he was gay.'*; falsely that Scott had *'just finished his PhD that he'd been working on for five years'*; *'He showed none of the usual signs of wanting to take his life'* ([REDACTED]); the fact of a prior suicide attempt is not established (Lehmann); police asked a strange question of [REDACTED] regarding her love for her brother knowing he was gay; *'I got stonewalled, no answers'* (Johnson); in 2007 Glick

Witness:



Signature:

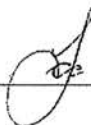


P.S. Young

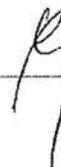
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

met Page about the Bondi crimes; epidemic and hate-crime against gay men in the later 1980's and early 1990's in Sydney and the importance of establishing 'was (North Head) a gay beat known for violence'; Glick met [REDACTED] who theorised that the gay beat at North Head 'couldn't have been unknown to anyone like Scott at that time' and 'Someone would be found dead at the bottom of a cliff. As far as the gay world knew, that was some poofter bashes had set upon someone and thrown them over the cliff'; incorrectly stating that the stabbing of [REDACTED] was at 'the same spot where Scott was killed' (Glick); 'I placed an ad asking people to contact me and the phone just started ringing'. He was contacted by [REDACTED] about [REDACTED] who would 'brag' about assaulting gay men on the North Beaches and 'That was the moment where I felt I had the first solid lead about what might have happened to Scott...the scales just kept tipping and tipping and tipping and tipping until at the end of the week I was more than ninety five percent sure that (Scott) had met with violence and that he hadn't killed himself.' (Glick); 'I thought Dan Glick's work was outstanding...Scott Johnson, gay man, fits straight into the Victimology of someone who would be assaulted for a hate crime at that beat.' (Page); 'We put a report painstakingly together...and we sent it to the coroner and the police...towards the end of 2007 and everything went silent.' (Johnson); Page, 'I've had the opportunity of having a look through that (Unsolved Homicide Team case review) report and the amount of critical information...omitted...I can't explain'; MsThompson, after reading about the case she contacted the family and 'after doing lots of work on it Steve offered to compensate me. I wrote a lengthy detailed report which explained to the police my reasons for thinking this was definitely a homicide...so I imagine they would have been there and ambushed Scott and either pushed him over the cliff or chased him over the cliff'; Mr Glick, 'Two police officers (Hardie and Plant) with a lot of experience recovering bodies from that area told me they'd never seen a naked suicide or one in the same spot where Scott died'; Page, 'I don't think the death of Scott Johnson was suicide. Playing the percentages, more likely than not, I think it was murder.'; Johnson, 'we got an open finding (in 2012). It's not often that the courts will admit that they made a mistake...my team, or gang of friends now, group

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

hugged in the court'; Glick, 'the role between me being Steve's friend and being his investigator has blurred to insignificance.'

2699. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2700. Media Lesbians on the Loose LOTL.com 11 February 2013 . This media includes the \$100,000 government reward and the Johnson family belief that Scott was murdered. A photograph of Scott is included.

2701. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2702. Media 12 February 2013 The Australian 'Getting Away with Murder'. \$100,000 government reward publicised. In March 2011 NSWPF received an anonymous telephone call identifying a 48 year old who allegedly boasted "My idea of sporting events in Sydney was poofster bashing and then throwing them off cliffs" (see interview of person of interest [REDACTED]). The article suggests that Mr Johnson approached US senator Ted Kennedy to lobby on his behalf and, that he has 'evidence' of 'violent attacks on gay men in the area (where Scott died) about that time'. The 'campaign' by Mr Johnson led to supportive correspondence by the Sydney Lord Mayor, Clover Moore, and the member of Manly, Michael Baird. Mr Johnson is quotes as saying 'These men died essentially in the dark ages of homophobia in Sydney and they were neglected because of that.'

2703. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2704. Media Sydney Morning Herald 12 February 2013 'We believe in our hearts that Scott was murdered. Reward offered over the death of gay maths genius'. \$100,000 government reward publicised by the NSWPF. Prior suicide findings had been 'overturned' in favour of an open finding. No new suspicions are expressed by the Johnson family.

2705. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2706. Media Gay News Network 12 February 2013 '\$100K Reward for Info on Gay Man's Manly Cliff Top Death'. This media publicises the \$100,000 government reward. The Police Minister 'encouraged anyone with information, no matter how

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

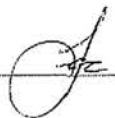
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

small, to come forward'. Mr Johnson said "We are pleading for people to come forward with any information that have about Scott's death". Records the Johnson family suspicion that Scott was a 'victim of foul play after having been targeted for being gay', a victim of 'a cliff-top killer or gay-hate gang marauding known gay beats at night'. It refers to North Head as being 'one of five well known gay beats in Sydney's north'. Refers to the 2003 Milledge inquest. Refers falsely to Scott having 'successfully completed' his PhD. Provides the Johnson family's direct email link. A photo of Scott accompanies the article.


2707. Media 12 February 2013 The Sydney Morning Herald 'Attacking gays was a sport, says family seeking answers in 24 years old case'. 'Hunting down and attacking gay men in Sydney was a 'sport' being carried out in epidemic proportions in the late 1980's according to the family of a man whose body was found at the bottom of a cliff in Manly's North Head.' \$100,000 government reward published. Mr Johnson is quoted as saying '*While this is a significant milestone on our quest for justice for Scott, I think it's just the beginning in many ways. I feel we're finally back to where we should have been on December 10, 1988*', and '*From the conversations we've had during the family's investigation, we know there were hundreds of victims of gay hate violence in and around Sydney. So this is not just about giving Scott the investigation he deserves but also about bringing justice for Scott and to many others*' and '*The perpetrators who operated for so long with impunity are still living among us. This is an opportunity to bring not closure but justice to a community that has lived in fear and distrust for so many years*' and '*Today we are pleading for people to come forward with any information they have about Scott's death*'.

2708. Mr Glick is quoted as saying '*In the information that we've supplied to the police, there were many similar gangs operating in the northern beaches, going from beat to beat to beat, it was like a sport and there is evidence and evidence and evidence that this was happening*' and, '*I have personally spoken to dozens and dozens of men who were assaulted who were afraid to come forward at the time, and their stories dovetail with each other*' and, '*There is so much evidence*

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____  P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

that there was a pattern that was not just Bondi, not just northern beaches, but Australia-wide. It's on the public record'.

2709. Mr Johnson is quoted as saying that 'his brother fell in love with a man he met at Cambridge University, and came to Australia in part because of the country's liberal laws surrounding gay partnerships' and, '*Back in the 1980s Australia was actually taking some significant steps in the right direction for gay partners' and 'It had just passed one of the most liberal laws in the world for gay partners and that's part of the reason Scott moved here instead of the two of them moving to another country' and, "We understand that police need to look at all the different scenarios, and support them in that effort" and "But we believe in our hearts that Scott was murdered in a hate crime because he was gay. Today we are pleading for people to come forward with any information they have about Scott's death" and "There was a pattern of violence and it was ignored then. The police are readier now to investigate these types of crimes and now I think there's a big opportunity to really explore what was going on in the 1980s in the northern beaches and around Bondi, to talk to victims and victims' families and see if we can bring justice to some of those families, including ours."*

2710. It incorrectly reports that '*Mr Johnson was studying at the Australian National University, and was just weeks away from finishing his PhD'.* Ms Johnson is quoted as saying, '*He came to Australia to live with his partner and study mathematics, and died on the day he should have been celebrating completion of his doctoral work. We lost a brilliant intellect and a beautiful person at much too young an age'.*

2711. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2712. Media The Border Mail 12 February 2013 '*Attacking gays was a sport says family seeking answers in 24 year old case'.* \$100,000 government reward published. '*Hunting down and attacking gay men in Sydney was a 'sport' being carried out in epidemic proportions in the late 1980's according to the family of a man whose body was found at the bottom of a cliff in Manly's North Head.*' Mr Johnson is quoted as saying "*...we know there were hundreds of victims of gay*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

hate violence in and around Sydney. So this is not just about giving Scott the investigation he deserves but also about bringing justice for Scott and to many others...The perpetrators who operated for so long with impunity are still living among us. This is an opportunity to bring not closure but justice to a community that has lived in fear and distrust for so many years' and 'Today we are pleading for people to come forward with any information they have about Scott's death'.

2713. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2714. Media Star Observer 12 February 12013 'Gay Men Bashed for Sport'. The media includes two photographs of Scott, publicises the \$100,000 government reward. Mr Glick is quoted as saying "*Hundreds and hundreds of men were viciously assaulted all over Sydney. There are arrest records and court documents to support this*" and that he has received 'testimony' from, "*dozens and dozens*" of gay men who were assaulted at beats around the time of Scott's death. And, "*Mostly, we've received nothing but silence (from the police). We submitted a lengthy report in 2007 and the family never received a response, official or otherwise*" and, "*as soon as we tried to say that this was a Sydney-wide phenomenon, we got shut down.*"

2715. It includes 'At the original inquest in Johnson's death in 1989, Manly police stated that (the) North Head area was not a known gay beat and was a known spot for suicidal 'jumpers'. According to extensive evidence gathered by Glick and Johnson's family however, the area was a major gay beat at the time, and Scott's body was the only one ever found at the base of those cliffs.'

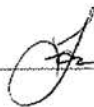
2716. Mr Page is credited with saying that gay bashing was "*the team sport of the 80's*"

2717. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA.

2718. Media Same Same.com 12 February 2013 . '100K reward for Scott Johnson info'. The media publicises the \$100,000 government reward along with a photograph of Scott.

2719. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2720. Correspondence 12 February 2013 is an email from Mr Glick to Sergeant Brown of the Unsolved Homicide Team which includes *'As you might imagine, we are already receiving a flood of leads after that after the show ('Australian Story').*

2721. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2722. Media Fuzemagazine.com 12 February 2013 'Attacking Gays was Sport'.

This media publicises the \$100,000 government reward. Mr Johnson is quoted as saying, *"From the conversations we've had during the family's investigation, we know there were hundreds of victims of gay hate violence in and around Sydney. So this is not just about giving Scott the investigation he deserves but also about bringing justice for Scott and to many others'.*

2723. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2724. Media News.com 12 February 2013 'Gay American Student Scott Johnson's family's \$100,000 appeal after Sydney death'. This media publicised the \$100,000 government reward and includes two photographs of Scott.

2725. Meeting 12 February 2013 office of the Minister for Police and Emergency Services. A meeting was held from 5pm to 7pm between Mr Johnson, Ms Johnson and former Police Minister, Mr Gallacher, and his staff. A/Commander Chris Olen and I were also present. No new information or evidence was provided.

2726. Correspondence 14 February 2013 is an email from Mr Johnson to me offering the consultancy of Mr Page.

2727. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2728. Correspondence 21/22/28 February 2013 is emails from/to Mr Johnson/Sergeant Brown/me, in which Mr Johnson agrees to be interviewed and asks if Mr Glick and Mr Jonson's son may also be present. The statement and meeting are set for 6 March 2013.

2729. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2730. Media 'Alternative Media Group of Australia' website 28 February 2013

'Lifting the Lid on a culture of hate'. This media opens with a photograph of Scott. It draws upon Mr Glick making a 'parallel' between Scott's death and that of Mr Shepard in America who was 'lured away from a club by two homophobes', who then assaulted him unconscious, 'tied him to a fence and left him to die'. Mr Glick says "I've interviewed and received information from dozens and dozens of people, and we feel the most likely scenario is that Scott was thrown from that cliff" and, "In the 80's and 90's bashing gays for sport was culturally ingrained in Sydney" and, "The publicity has led to an opening up. The girlfriends, the mates, and relatives of men who use to boast about going out to bash gay men are contacting me" (this appears to be another strategy but is not borne out by facts), and "I and Scott's family hope Scott's legacy will be that the lid is lifted off this period, so that wider community can deal with what was happening in Sydney, and bring closure and justice.". [REDACTED] is quoted calling for a Royal Commission.

2731. Sydney Lord Mayor Clover Moore is quoted as finding it "encouraging" that there is a re-investigation and planned to March with the Johnson family at the 2013 Mardi Gras. Member for Sydney Alex Greenwich apparently is "honoured that Scott's family will be marching" at the Mardi Gras with him.

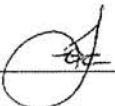
2732. The \$100,000 government reward is publicised. The email link to the Johnson family is provided.

2733. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

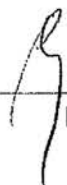
2734. Media Queerty website 28 February 2013 'Investigation into 25-Year-Old Sydney Death Shines Light on Series of Gay Hate Murders From 1980's'. This media includes the \$100,000 government reward and refers to the 2003 Milledge findings. It provides the Johnson family email and a photograph of Scott.

2735. Media Sydney Morning Herald 4 March 2013 'Gay Hate: the shameful crime wave'. Claims that 'thousands' of gay men were 'stalked, savagely assaulted and, in at least 50 cases, murdered' and that 'police were oblivious' and 'remain

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

oblivious to the scale of what they missed'. Ms Thompson and Mr Tomsen are quoted but even their 'estimates now appear to understate the problem. They were based on reported homicides, not cases of suicide or misadventure, some of which were almost certainly wrong.' Mr Glick is quoted as saying, "There's no way of knowing yet, just how many people were murdered, or seriously assaulted, but I have no problem but I have no problem with using the word 'thousands' to describe the scale of the violent incidents during that time". Taradale is referred to. The \$100,000 reward is publicised. The article is accompanied by an impressionist 'painting' of Scott's clothes on a cliff surrounded by the shadows of offenders.

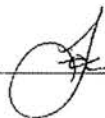
2736. I PRODUCE THAT ARTICLE

2737. Media Brisbane Times 4 March 2013 'Gay hate: a shameful crime wave'. The media included; the opinion of Ms Sue Thompson and Mr Tomsen; weapons being used frequently in gay-hate violence; that between 1985 and 1999 Mr Glick says *"There's no way of knowing, yet, just how many people were murdered, or seriously assaulted, but I have no problem with using the word 'thousands' to describe the scale of the violent crimes during that time"* The media states 'There were, in fact, multiple suspicious circumstances (about Scott's death). Johnson's body was found naked. The area was a well known and popular beat, or pick-up area. The victim had shown no signs of distress or isolation. Other gay men had been bashed in the area'. The 2003 Milledge inquest and investigations are referred to. The \$100,000 government reward is publicised.

2738. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2739. Meeting 6 March 2013. Investigators met with Mr Johnson and Mr Glick at the Manly Police Station from 3.30pm to 5pm. The Johnson family provided information verbally at that time about Scott's friends, beat users, and various people they called 'Sources', not all named by them on the day, but who turned out to be [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and those matters appear in this statement.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

in the wall at North Head. The \$100,000 reward is publicised with the police and 'Justice For Scott Johnson' email contacts.

2747. I PRODUCE THAT ARTICLE

2748. Correspondence 18 March 2013 is an email from Mr Johnson to me and includes: *'I feel there is some significant trust building that needs to be done between NSW police and my family and I'm concerned that we're off to a rough start with you and your team...It is important for me to put on the record my concerns about our (6) March 2013 meeting. I left that meeting with the feeling that instead of pursuing an open minded investigation, police remain selectively interested in receiving information from me that relates to the possibility of suicide...From the time Scott died, we have felt misinformed, ignored, and dismissed by various officials...'*; criticism of the 1989 investigation and inquest; stabbing of [REDACTED]; Bondi crimes; criticism of the 2007 Unsolved Homicide Team review document and his meeting with Inspector Lehmann in December 2012; that they have heard from *'many, many other families that they have experienced similar events, including being told falsely by police that their loved one died with no suspicious circumstances'*; *We continue to hear from multiple sources that, particularly in the 1980's police in the Northern Beaches, and notably Manly, were notoriously corrupt...We have heard from numerous sources that police many have been both indirectly and directly complicit in gay-hate crimes...'*

2749. He is not satisfied with how he was interviewed by Sergeant Brown on 6 March 2012 writing, *'Unfortunately, our (6) March 2013 meeting at Manly...left me worrying that current efforts are once again skewed towards supporting the initial suicide ruling...My concerns began during the five-hour victimology interview...'* and is critical of questions he was asked and questions he was not asked.

2750. Of me, Mr Johnson writes *'I'd like at this point to share some of my personal reactions to our meeting...I was surprised at the tenor of the discussion after you joined our meeting...Given the disturbing history with the NSW Police Force recounted above, I'd hoped to see a marked improvement in collegiality and*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

openness from you and your team. I was left instead feeling confused and deflated.'

2751. He refers to having an 'investigation team' of 'several former NSW police officers, a former NSW police gay and lesbian liaison coordinator, a senior investigative journalist, and literally dozens of sources...'

2752. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2753. Correspondence 19 March 2013 from me to Mr Johnson assuring him of a thorough investigation.

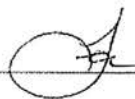
2754. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2755. Correspondence 27/28 March 2013 are emails which include a brief update and arrangements for telephone contact between Mr Johnson and Detective Superintendent Michael Willing based on Mr Johnson's concerns expressed in his email of 18 March 2013.

2756. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2757. Telephone Call 5 April 2013 proceeded from 8am to 8.50am between Mr Johnson, Mr Glick, Commander Willing and me. The conversation included an update of investigations and: queries by the Johnson family about sufficiency of resources and timeframes for Strike Force Macnamir; that Deputy State Coroner Forbes has been approached by the Homicide Squad with regards to reviewing the current investigation at its conclusion; that only 7 calls had been received from the public following recent publicity and the government reward announcement and that none were conclusive; advice was given to the Johnson family cautioning against more media exposure of intimate details of the case and that too much had already been made public record; Mr Johnson alleges that police assaulted gay men at North Head and named 'Bumper' Farrell as an offender. Commander Willing explained that he died in the 1970's; they said that they have received information on gay-hate crimes in Sydney generally and also related to cliffs, citing that a person told them *'my brother was found at the bottom*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

of a cliff with his pants down'. Commander Willing asked them to send us any such information but none has been received.

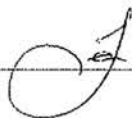
2758. Correspondence 26 April to 1 May 2013 are emails regarding [REDACTED] provided to the police on 1 May 2013. The email stream commences on 26 April 2013 with [REDACTED] emailing Mr Glick with 'Hey mate, anything happening?' and include Mr Johnson's words appreciation for [REDACTED] 'reaching out to them' and their efforts to get [REDACTED]'s permission to tell the police his identity. On An email from [REDACTED] to Mr Johnson on 29 April 2013 includes [REDACTED]'s concerns about cooperating with police in terms of 'My concerns re this matter was more [REDACTED], the brother (of [REDACTED]). Known to have been associated to the police, and can access police files/cases'. In an email on 1 May 2013 the mobile phone number and email address of [REDACTED] was provided to police.

2759. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2760. Correspondence 27 April 2013 is a 41 page document entitled, 'Scott Johnson Case-Locale, Persons of Interest, and Witnesses Prepared for the NSW Unsolved Homicide Unit by the Johnson Family 25 April 2013' is a hardcopy of a power point presentation. It includes photographs of the North Head and environs, facts as understood by the family, and references to 'sources' by pseudonym. 'Beat user A' (who they named in the letter dated 18 May 2011 to Detective Wilson as Mr [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] was a user of the beat in the 1970's/early 1980's). 'Beat user B' (who they named in the letter dated 18 May 2011 to Detective Wilson as [REDACTED]. Ref.), 'Beat user C' (not identified. The single quote contains references used by [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and Mr ??), and 'Beat user D' (Ref. [REDACTED] who declined to meet with police. [REDACTED] is quoted by the Johnson family as calling the North Head gay beat 'The Church'. No other person refers to that tag. He has a friend (since deceased) who used the North Head beat during the day and asserts 'The police definitely knew it was a beat').

2761. [REDACTED]'s name and information was first disclosed by the Johnson family to police in their letter to Detective Wilson on 18 May 2011. In the 2011 letter [REDACTED]

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

**Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson**

██████ is quoted as describing the North Head beat as 'notorious' and 'legendary' and Mr Glick then summarises and I quote, "To get there he (██████) and others would walk through a 'hole in the wall' and proceed to the end of the wall. From there they would walk along social trails to a series of rock ledges like the one at the top of where Scott's body was found"

2762. In the 2013 power point the quote attributed to ██████ is, "To get there we would walk through a 'hole in the wall' and proceed to the end of the wall. From there we would walk along social trails to a series of rock ledges like the one at the top of where Scott's body was found." There are other examples of this method. The document also includes;

2763. Personal and general statements that: 'At the time of Scott's death Manly was an area known for...a deeply corrupt police force...and maintained a veneer of its beach loving culture.'; information from ██████; a map of unsourced purported gay-hate violence in Sydney; a map of unsourced purported gay-hate violence at beats in the Northern Beaches; a timeline including some non-factual/unverified statements.


2764. A list of the following 26 names which they label as 'known and suspected gay bashers, Northern Beaches, NSW, 1986-92' – ██████, ██████

2765. A list of the following 'family members' and 'witnesses to (gay-hate) bragging and/or bashing'; ██████, ██████, ██████, ██████, ██████'s ex-wife', ██████'s parents and siblings', ██████ siblings especially ██████', ██████ (who) posted surety', 'girlfriends/wives'

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____  P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2766. Northern Beaches assault and robbery victims named as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], Monforte, 'John Doe'.
2767. Court references offences for [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and [REDACTED] and their victims.
2768. A list of 19 names headed 'Police involved in Arrests and Convictions' of [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED].
2769. Information from 'New Source [REDACTED] – April 25, 2013' ([REDACTED]) that; attributes 'many more' assaults to [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] than their charges reflect; his house was 'routinely used' by [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] to 'wash the blood from their hand and shoes after they assaulted and robbed gay men and before they went out to manly clubs'; [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], in the occasional company of others, routinely went to various places in North Head above Manly to bash and rob gay men, then returned to Manly'; their associated included [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]; [REDACTED] 'is currently in possession of a one-way ticket to Serbia...'; [REDACTED] 'was a student of gay beat life...He would keep "booty" (from robberies) in a secret compartment in his basement'; [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] 'entered a club in Manly and were extremely agitated, saying that the victim did not have money. [REDACTED] believed that 'something "totally different" had happened that night' but did not recall when. 'he recalled this incident when he learned about Scott's death'.
2770. Under the heading 'New Source [REDACTED]' the information continues and includes: 'Several former police officers from the Manly LAC, notably Raymond Peattie and David Patison were "100 percent" aware of gay bashers' activities and unofficially sanctioned them'; 'The aforementioned officers were involved in receiving a \$50,000 bribe from [REDACTED]'s family to assist [REDACTED] in receiving a minimal sentence...'; [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] 'suspected that [REDACTED] "dogged them out" and [REDACTED] believes that [REDACTED]'s death was not clear-cut suicide as "That's what his mother would say"; [REDACTED] 'displays multiple attributes of a vicious sociopath...'; organised crime link between [REDACTED]'s brother [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]; [REDACTED]; [REDACTED] 'is suspected of conducting surveillance of an

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

Australia journalist peripherally involved in this case...'; [REDACTED]
'witnessed [REDACTED] washing blood from his body after bashings'; [REDACTED]
'accompanied the crew on occasion'; 'Although [REDACTED] does not want to be
identified, he raised the possibility of trying to speak with [REDACTED]'.

2771. Regarding offences by [REDACTED] and [REDACTED], the following is provided;

2772. Associates are listed as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED],
[REDACTED]

2773. Victims are listed as [REDACTED], [REDACTED],
[REDACTED].

2774. Witnesses are listed as [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED].

2775. Girlfriends are listed as [REDACTED]
[REDACTED], [REDACTED].

2776. A list of 29 names of police 'Involved in the [REDACTED] Arrests and Prosecutions'.

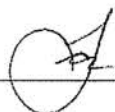
2777. The names of 'Other potential Narrabeen gay bashers sources' being [REDACTED]
[REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED],
[REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED],
[REDACTED].

2778. Further information provided includes –


2779. 1987 public transport movements of the [REDACTED] brothers and [REDACTED]
from Narrabeen and Collaroy to Moore Park. 1986 public transport movements of
[REDACTED], Stein, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] from Narrabeen to Balgowlah.

2780. Information from a 'confidential source' who 'overheard her ex-boyfriend,
former NSW Police Constable [REDACTED], talking to former Mona Vale
policeman Bumper Farrell (retired 1976 and died in 1985) about going to North
Head to "bash up a few poofers"

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

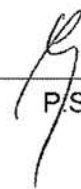
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2781. ██████████ told them 'a co-worker in early 80s at the fitness centre at the Intercontinental Hotel...bragged about bashing gays "at Hyde Park and in Manly'.
2782. A 1990 'Relevant Headlines' from the Sydney Morning Herald refers to a large number of gay-hate violence crimes prevalent in Oxford Street, Darlinghurst, and King Street, Newtown "where there are prominent gay bars".
2783. 'Other Manly Sources' for our general reference are listed as: former council members; former Manly Chamber of Commerce president Bill Walker; former Manly mayor Greg Smith; former Manly police Inspector in Charge Brian Ballard, former St. John's principal and teachers; former St. Partick's seminary students and priests; former army base commanders and recruits.
2784. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE
2785. Correspondence 8 May 2013 is an email to me from Mr Glick which includes: mention of an allegation purportedly by ██████████ that police were paid to 'reduce ██████████ sentence' and 'to destroy evidence (wallets, rings etc) hidden in the floorboards of the ██████████'s residence'; information from ██████████ ██████████ in the form of an email by him dated 7 May 2013 to Mr Glick.
2786. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE
2787. Correspondence 15 May 2013 is an email from me to Mr Johnson which includes: informing him that we are unable to lawfully prevent ██████████ from leaving the country for a holiday; to date we have insufficient evidence to proceed with any charge based on ██████████'s information; we have been asked to respond to the Police Minister on the Johnson family document '*Timeline and Evidence*'.
2788. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE
2789. Correspondence 17 May 2013 is an email from Mr Johnson to me that includes: his feeling that ██████████ 'may be fleeing the country in response to

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

media coverage of Scott's case...' and asks if we have surveillance on him; suggest that they can help with 'publicising the reward in a new way'.

2790. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2791. Correspondence 21 May 2013 is an email from me to Mr Johnson which includes that details of investigation methods will not be disclosed.

2792. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2793. Correspondence 24 May 2013 is an email from Mr Johnson to me that includes: *'We continue to hear from men who survived brutal assaults at beats in the 1980's and 1990's and from families and friends of probable homicide victims and realise that publicity around Scott's case created a space for people to talk about their experiences. It does seem clear that Scott's death is a part of a much larger pattern of anti-gay violence and we are grateful that we have provided the impetus to take a look at this era'*.

2794. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2795. Correspondence 5 June 2013 is an email from me to Mr Johnson which includes: notice of what they have in mind for new reward publicity (email 17 May 2013); a summary of evidence given to police by from [REDACTED] on 1 June 2013.


2796. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2797. Correspondence 6 June 2013 is an email from Mr Johnson to me that includes: confirmation that they last spoke to [REDACTED] in April 2013; offering their Australian media contacts to readvertise the reward in the form of a 'separate or additional reward' that may also touch on the murder of gay men 'during the period surrounding Scott's death'.

2798. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2799. Meeting 19 June 2013 with Ms Johnson, Mr Glick, Detective Sergeant Brown, Detective Senior Constable Jones, Commander Willing and me included an

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

update of the investigation progress. No new information was provided by the Johnson family.

2800. Correspondence 13 July 2013 is an email from Ms Johnson to me that includes: that the following people contacted them on their recent visit to Sydney and they provide the new information they have in the email. The email includes: [REDACTED]; [REDACTED] nominated [REDACTED] as taking part in gay-hate assaults/that [REDACTED] did not tell [REDACTED] about his Reef Beach or North Sydney offences; they are attempting to locate (former police officer) Ray Peattie; they have spoken to 'at least half a dozen former Northern Beaches policemen (unnamed) about 'gay bashing of that era'; a request for police records and P79A reports; information from [REDACTED].

2801. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2802. Correspondence 14/16 July 2013 about unsuccessful police and Johnson family efforts to have [REDACTED] provide a statement (see also email 13 August 2013)

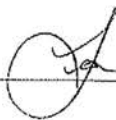
2803. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2804. Media 26 July 2013 The Sydney Morning Herald 'Up to 80 Men Murdered. 30 Cases Unsolved'. This are the articles referred to with reference to Ms Susan Thompson. The article consults Ms Thompson, Mr Stephen Page, Mr Glick and Ms Johnson. Photographs of them appear with cliff-side ocean backdrops.

2805. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2806. Media 27 July 2013 The Sydney Morning Herald 'Murderous rampage of gay-hate gangs' includes: the allegation by [REDACTED] which includes 'about 18 teenagers' as offenders; reference to Ms Thompson about an 'epidemic' of gay-hate crime in the later 1980's and early 1990's; reference to Mr Tomsen; reference to Mr Page; the email of the SMH journalist is also provided with the prompt 'Do you know more?' and photographs of Scott, Mr Mattaini, [REDACTED], [REDACTED]; Mr Ross Warren, Mr John Russell, and [REDACTED]; police media release seeking information from the public about the death of Scott.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2807. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2808. Media The Border Mail 27 July 2013 'Murderous rampage of gay-hate gangs'.

██████████ (the 1989 Marks Park victim of assault) is included as having been assaulted by 'about 18' teenagers including 'four girls cheering on the boys'. Ms Thompson is quoted as describing the gay-hate crimes in the later 1980's and 1990's as "an epidemic" and Mr Tomsen is referred to along with 'close to 80 cases' of gay-hate murder. The Johnson family are described as having 'finally convinced authorities that he may well have been murdered'. Police ask for information from the public.

2809. Media Western Advocate 27 July 2013 'Murderous rampage of gay-hate gangs' is the same article as above.

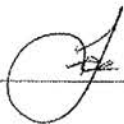
2810. Media 28 July 2013 The Sydney Morning Herald 'Breaking the silence over gay killings' includes: 'As reported by Fairfax media on Saturday, analysis of police data suggests that up to 80 deaths and disappearances, from the late 1970's to late 1990's, could fit into the gay-hate category. While about 40 cases have been solved, there are almost 30 unsolved. They include cases that police or coroners originally dismissed as suicides or accidents'; a reference to the Bondi crimes.

2811. Mr Peter Russell, the brother of the deceased Mr John Russell, is quoted as saying, "*He had all the skin missing off his hands...He had a piece of hair jammed between his fingers*". This is completely inaccurate and misleading on both counts.

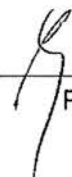
2812. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2813. Media 29 July 2013 The Sydney Morning Herald 'Easy game, not only for vicious gang but for police intimidation'. The articles refers to up to '80 men were murdered' as suggested by Ms Thompson. The article also provides quotes via pseudonym 'Patrick' a gay man who in the 1980's used gay beats at public toilets at the Narrabeen Bus Terminus and Collaroy Beach. He gives an account of being hit with a baseball bat and kicked by a group of males about his own age –

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

late teens, early 20's - about 1.30am when he was leaving a cubicle at the gay beat at the Collaroy Beach public toilets. About six other gay men ran from the toilet block just before the assault. The offenders screamed at him 'faggot', 'filthy bastard', and 'kill the cunt' at Patrick before leaving him on the floor. As he went to his nearby parked car the group were stopped attacking him again by their girlfriends. 'Patrick' received fractures and bruising but he did not go to hospital or report the assault to the police. His parents and brother did not know that he was gay and so he made up another story to tell them.

2814. 'Patrick' complains that police were *'endlessly roaming around the toilets to bust gay men having consensual sex. I was busted several times. I was never charged...'* He complains of rough handling and being called a *'filthy faggot'* by police saying, *'It wasn't policing. It was harassment'*.

2815. 'Patrick' also claims to have gone to the gay beat at Marks Park with a friend between 1989 and 1991. He saw 'youths assaulting and abusing other gay men'. The articles say 'They had a car phone so called police for help. They never arrived'.

2816. The article also quotes from a 'former detective' (unnamed) who said *'Sport for some coppers was chasing blokes around toilets and either arresting gays, beating them or both. The only reason we got involved with the other guy at Collaroy at this point (referring to an assault unrelated to 'Patrick') is that our dear leaders feared he may die...'*

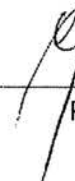
2817. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2818. Media 29 July 2013 The Sydney Morning Herald Bashing victim's lengthy wait for justice and change The article refers to the murder of [REDACTED], the Bondi crimes and 'up to 80 killings'. It quotes from Mr Ron Harmer who was assaulted and called 'poofter' and 'faggot' in and around Alison Park, Randwick, in the mid 1980's. He was punched and kicked unconscious by youths. The police response is criticised and Mr Harmer implies that police may have been behind the assault and/or assisted to cover up who the youths were.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2819. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2820. Correspondence 8 August 2013 is an email from Ms Johnson to me which includes their suggestions for reconciling the evidence of [REDACTED] with the circumstances of Scott's death.

2821. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2822. Correspondence 13 August 2013 is an email from me to Ms Johnson which includes a query about their payment/gift to potential witnesses.

2823. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2824. Correspondence 20 August 2013 is an email from Ms Johnson to me which includes: a request for information about the investigations by Strike Force Macnamir in terms of 'it would be helpful to have a briefing of any information you can share about sources beyond those in our reports...', and offering assurance that they will 'be sensitive about maintaining the integrity of the investigation'; that they have a 'very reliable source' (unnamed) that a former police officer by the name of 'Al Lukes' was known to frequent gay beats in Manly and that may be worth talking to; that we should speak to 'ex-policemen' Trevor Otten and Ray Peattie; that 'an ex-girlfriend (unnamed) of [REDACTED] (and 'ex-policeman' [REDACTED] [REDACTED]) wrote us to say that [REDACTED] routinely would go gay bashing'. (The [REDACTED] information is explained to later.)

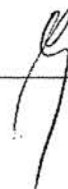
2825. In relation to information police had received that cash and meals were supplied by the Johnson family to potential witness, Ms Johnson writes 'Dan was horrified to hear that people had said that and has assured us that it has never happened. We did pay one person...a nominal amount for travel and time to do library research in Narrabeen. And we often meet people over coffee or lunch (very occasionally dinner) so we've picked up the tab as a courtesy for folks who've taken time out of their busy schedules to talk with us'.

2826. On 23 August 2013 I responded via email to the Johnson family that includes that source information will not be disclosed to them for reasons of confidentiality and I request more the information on the 'Flakas' allegation. I acknowledge their

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

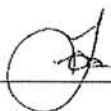
effective 'mission' regarding Scott's death but include that money and influence does not create evidence if it does not exist.

2827. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

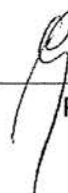
2828. Telephone Conversation 23 August 2013 proceeded from 2pm to 3.10pm between Mr Johnson, Ms Johnson, Commander Willing and myself. It included: that Mr Johnson did not want me to be present during the call which was declined; Mr Johnson expressed dissatisfaction with the 'attitude' of myself overall and particularly my reference to them having a 'mission' in an email I sent to him this date; Mr Johnson expressed a lack of confidence in NSW police generally and he suggested that a conspiracy to cover up Scott's murder may involve the original investigating police from Manly and Inspector Lehmann and/or that police may have in fact murdered Scott. His evidence was Superintendent Cruickshank's "refusal" to investigate and Inspector Lehmann's "refusal" to commence a reinvestigation in 2012; Commander Willing stated his disbelief of the allegation and advised that they could make the complain in writing to the PIC; they were informed of the role of the New South Wales Crime Commission to review the reinvestigation; Mr Johnson complained that Commander Willing had used the phrase "put up or shut up" in a media release subsequent to the claim of 'up to 80 gay-hate murders'. Commander Willing explained that he used plain language to convey the importance of coming forward to the police or to stop putting unjustified fear into the community.

2829. Correspondence 4 September 2013 is an email to me from Ms Johnson which includes the requested information alleging that former police officer, [REDACTED], 'who allegedly bashed gay men'. The allegation is in an email dated 16 March 2013 to Mr Johnson and the unnamed writer says they saw 'the TV programme' (Australian Story) and related article in 'Who' magazine. The email includes: *'The entire Northern Beaches Command, going back to the time of your brother's death had MAJOR issues with corruption'*; a friend of the writer was a junior police officer around 1967 to the 1980's in Manly and the Northern Beaches and that *'He told me that Bumper Farrell would get full as a boot, and*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

say to my friend (when they were on duty at Manly) GET IN THE CAR (a high powered Mini Cooper S which Mr Farrell only used in top gear) and we will go up to North Head and bash up a few poofers. Whether Mr Farrell actually did that I don't know, but one thing that my friend told me was that Mr Farrell would get out of the car once they were at North Head and shine torches into the cars of young lovers making out on the back seat of cars, FOR SPORT...I BELIEVE THAT THE DISGRACE OF THE COVER UP OF WHATS HAPPENED TO YOUR BROTHER HAS AN ANSWER LAYING AT THE FEET OF MANLY POLICE PURE AND SIMPLE...!

2830. Mr Glick responded to the email on 18 March 2013 including that whilst they have received a lot of information about police corruption and police assaulting gay men during the 1980's and 1990's, this is only time they have been given a name (that being Bumper Farrell). The writer also tells Mr Glick that they have not seen [REDACTED] for 20 years.

2831. The email from Ms Johnson also explains that \$200 was paid to [REDACTED] by Mr Glick for library research in response to my earlier query.

2832. I sent a return email on 5 September 2013 which includes: my decision regarding the Flakas/Farrell information is not to follow it up; the contact details for the Police Integrity Commission and the NSWPF Professional Standards Command in case they wish to write a complaint about the police conspiracy as discussed in the telephone call of 23 August 2013.

2833. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2834. Correspondence 4/5 October 2013 are emails between Mr Johnson and me in which I provide an update of inquiries regarding [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. I also include interim assessments that - the claim in the media that up to 80 gay-hate murders are unidentified/unsolved, is not supported by known facts. I also write, *'The investigation is in its closing stages...All of our more significant inquiries are at an end and in the absence of anything new or recommended by the NSW Crime Commission, my report will conclude that the cause of Scott*

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

being found deceased at the base of North Head is unable to be determined. An offer to meet with them at the final stage of reporting is included.

2835. Mr Johnson responded on 5 October 2013 with his dissatisfaction of my email of 23 August in which I use the word 'mission' to describe their efforts relative to Scott's death. He has concluded that I cannot be *'trusted to honestly and fairly conduct'* the investigation. Mr Johnson concurrently sent these emails to others including the Police Minister.

2836. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2837. Correspondence 4 December 2013 in an email from Commander Willing to Mr Johnson informing them that the final report is underway, that the NSW Crime Commission review continues, and seeking their advice on how they may like to be informed of the final stages of the investigation.

2838. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2839. Media Sunday Telegraph 9 December 2013 'I won't stop until he gets justice'. This article features Ms Johnson. Apparently she cut her honeymoon short to come to Australia and appear in the article. She says, "There were likely people who didn't speak up then, who knew it was wrong. Now is the opportunity for them to speak". She says of being told that Scott had suicided, "We felt guilt and sadness that we let someone we loved down by not recognising that Scott was in pain." Mr Glick is quoted as saying, "There are so many people who have come forward and shared their own experiences of being bashed at this beach". The article includes three photographs of Scott. The contact details for the police and Mr Glick appear.

2840. I PRODUCE THAT ARTICLE.

2841. Media Diversity Act.org 27 December 2013. The media includes the \$100,000 government reward.

2842. 2014

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2843. Media Star Observer 20 January 2014 states '*...Last week Sydney state independent MP Alex Greenwich joined the family of Scott Johnson – an American believed to have been murdered at cliff tops near Manly Beach in December 1988-to urge the NSW Government to allow the Ombudsman to commence an investigation into links between scores of attacks on gay men across Sydney from the late 1970's onwards.*' There are references to Taradale, Mr Tomsen, and MsThompson. It does not contain new information or evidence.

2844. I PRODUCE THAT MEDIA

2845. Correspondence 23 February 2014 is an email from Mr Johnson to Commander Willing and is the on correspondence since Commander Willing's email on 4 December 2013 . It does not seek or offer a means of informing them of the investigation as invited by Commander Willing. It includes: that Mr Johnson is reading the 'nearly 3000 page Taradale brief '. He attached the victim statement of [REDACTED] and the police suspect interview of [REDACTED]. He comments that these documents read '*like a grim, horrible movie of Scott's final moments...Any investigator reading these pages would be embarrassed to insist that Scott's death was accidental or suicide...*'

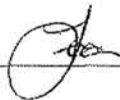
2846. The Johnson family did not gain authorised access to the coronial and police holdings that comprise the Taradale investigation from the NSWPF, the State Coroner's Court, or Freedom of Information. The attachments provided by Mr Johnson are not redacted and disclose the full identity of the victim of sexual assault, and convicted offender.

2847. At this stage a decision is made by the State Crime Command that the investigations and outcomes would more properly be communicated to the State Coroner in the first instance, and if agreeable, by that means to the Johnson family and community.

2848. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2849. Correspondence 28 March 2014 is an email from Commander Willing to Mr Johnson. It includes that the NSW Crime Commission have not identified new lines of inquiry. It notifies the family that the police have made a request of the

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

State Coroner to re-examine the case and that he indicated that a submission may be sought from them to assist his deliberations at the appropriate time. They are asked to say how the Taradale brief material came to be with them and were cautioned as to confidentiality of the material.

2850. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2851. Correspondence 4 April 2014 is an email from Mr Johnson to Commander Willing which includes: that they have '*a long standing disagreement as to the manner in which this investigation has been conducted*'; they request to know the material provided to the NSW Crime Commission; '*We are equally unclear about why you chose to ask State Coroner Michael Barnes to review the case, and what exactly he is reviewing.*'; they do not disclose how they obtained the Taradale material and offer an assurance in these terms, we '*fully understand the sensitivity of discussing confidential details, and would not do that in a cavalier manner*'; '*Our family has clearly been given the impression from Det. Chief Inspector Pamela Young that her report will not conclude that Scott was most likely murdered.*'; '*There was also information that we passed on to you that it was alleged that some police officers might have been participants in or complicit in the violence against gay men in that era*'; '*In summary, we believe firmly that Scott's death fits a pattern of murders and violent assaults committed against gay men all over Sydney...*'

2852. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

2853. Correspondence 8 April 2014 is an email from Mr Johnson to Commander Willing and includes: '*...we believe we are entitled to...certain information at this juncture as to how you conducted the investigation and what the Unsolved Homicide Unit concluded before any Coronial action is taken...We are entitled to have disclosed to us the nature and extent of the investigation your office conducted at its conclusion, as you promised it would be.*'

2854. I PRODUCE THAT CORRESPONDENCE

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2855. Whilst the preceding list records the significant media coverage, it is unlikely to represent the entirety of the media, particularly media relayed and generated via the internet. I am also aware that the Johnson family have commenced a media campaign in the United States this year that, inter alia, may be interpreted as seeking a Royal Commission type of inquiry in this State. Many images of Scott have been shown via those efforts.

2856. **New South Wales Crime Commission**

2857. In an unusual step designed to address any community or Johnson family concerns about police neglect of gay hate crime, in 2013 the Commander of the Homicide Squad, Superintendent Michael Willing, sought the assistance of the NSW Crime Commission. The NSW Crime Commission was given ongoing access to the investigation holdings of Strike Force Macnamir together with correspondence provided by the Johnson family to the Minister for Police and Emergency Services. Commander Willing sought an independent review of the material by the NSW Crime Commission with regards to the following two matters;


2858. *"1. In the opinion of the NSW Crime Commission, Strike Force Macnamir investigators could reasonably pursue any line of inquiry or information not already identified or undertaken"; and,*

2859. *"2. Whether, given its legislative powers and functions, the NSW Crime Commission could assist the investigation in any way."*


2860. A response was received from the NSW Crime Commission on 18 February 2014 which includes;

2861. "After a full examination of the investigations to date, for the reasons set out more fully in the attached report, the Commission considers that the investigations have been comprehensive and thorough and has not identified any line of inquiry not already undertaken."

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2862. **Summary of Investigation Categories**
2863. Review of original statements of police
2864. Review of original statement of witnesses
2865. Re-interview of witnesses and identification of new witnesses
2866. Identification of persons of interest and related interviews
2867. Seek and assess information received from the public
2868. Search and assess crime and intelligence databases
2869. Seek and publicise a government reward for information
2870. Broad media campaign, inclusive of multiple images of Scott and publicity of the government reward
2871. Telephone analysis
2872. Interview and media strategies supported by covert recording operations
2873. Site assessment
2874. Expert consultation
2875. **Opinion**
2876. I have been a police officer for 29 years. In forming this opinion I draw upon 16 years experience at the New South Wales Police Force Homicide Squad in reactive and proactive investigations; the physical and forensic observation of hundreds of scenes of death inclusive of murder, misadventure and suicide; the direct experience of the gay-related murders of Mr David O'Hearn, Mr Frank Arkell, Mr Trevor Parkin, Mr Bernd Lehmann, and Mr Brendan McGovern.
2877. Investigations have not identified a person or persons as being responsible for the murder of Scott.

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2878. The Suicide Hypothesis

2879. It is my opinion that these investigations have identified the following matters relative to the hypothesis that Scott's death resulted from suicide;

2880. The information provided by [REDACTED] that Scott told him of an attempt to suicide is corroborated by the witnesses [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. Records of Scott's US and UK movements in 1984 and 1985 are also supportive. The corroboration includes that it was an attempt from the Golden Gate Bridge in California, that [REDACTED] learned from Scott about his attempt when they were in separate countries, that the attempt by Scott was around the mid-1980's, most likely in late 1984 or late 1985, and that [REDACTED] told his two friends at that time.


2881. There is no evidence, or anything that implies, that Scott had been medically diagnosed with a mental illness, including a depressive disorder.

2882. There is evidence that Scott's childhood and formative years were characterised by poverty, a separation and estrangement imposed upon him by his natural father from when he was 9 years of age, the non-acceptance of his natural self by his alcoholic step-father combined with direct attempts by the step-father to 'improve' and arguably 'masculinise' Scott's natural self, a total absence of physical and emotional affection from his mother, natural father, and step-father, numerous house and school changes, occasional abusive words directed at him by his mother, having to find and make his own meals,

2883. Born of the difficulties in the parental home, the relationship of Mr Johnson towards Scott from childhood and into adulthood was characterised by a significantly protective closeness, influence and control of Scott. Mr Johnson's interests became Scott's interests. Scott's early work and academic enrolment was launched by Mr Johnson.

2884. The attempts to 'masculinise' Scott in his formative years made him more introverted than he already was, whilst his mathematical ability produced in others' both awe and expectation.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2885. Ongoing friendships that Scott formed in his school and university years are unknown to his family and none have been identified in this inquiry. Friendship offered to Scott was through ██████████'s circle of friends and, with the exception of independent visits to ██████████, appear be when ██████████ catches up with his friends and Scott is with him. Mr Johnson suggests that ██████████ was like a father to Scott but this is not substantiated. Any form of routine social life or habits of his own outside of this circle have not been identified, with the exception of training by walking or running.

2886. It is from Mr Johnson, ██████████, ██████████'s circle of friends, ██████████'s family, ██████████, and Scott's university colleagues that we learn consistently that Scott was academically gifted, very reserved in company, introverted, at his most comfortable talking about math to other mathematicians, and reluctant to talk of emotional matters.


2887. As to Scott's homosexuality, which appears to have been first disclosed by him to his family via his brother in 1984 at the age of 23 years, I do not accept either the proposition that Scott found it easy to tell his brother, or that Mr Johnson readily accepted the news. There is sufficient inconsistency, and arguably disagreement, between the accounts on this theme that in itself supports that the reality of Scott's homosexuality and his relationship with ██████████ was a cause of discomfort, if not disconnection.

2888. Scott may have occasionally visited gay bars or beats and/or had a casual intimate gay relationship when still in the USA, an occasional behaviour which may have continued outside of his relationship with ██████████. Over a 4 year period, we have one visit to a gay bar strip in the USA and two references by Scott to issues arising from casual gay contact, being concerns about contracting HIV/AIDS around the time of the Golden Gate Bridge event, and contracting pubic lice in Australia. If a casual or high risk gay lifestyle was Scott's routine or habit for him then it was a well kept secret for all who knew him. On all accounts when in Australia he applied himself to intensive studies and there is an absence of him being known to do, or to talk of doing, much else.

Witness:

_____ 

Signature:

_____ 
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2889. We should also remember that this was a man who was deeply affected by the threat of HIV/AIDS and conscientious of the affect of unfaithfulness on his relationship. Would such a man be a habitual gay beat user and if he was, how would he cope with this emotionally?

2890. Suicides are committed at North Head. Like the widely known The Gap in eastern harbour-side Sydney, it offers a fatal height in a natural environment. North Head is not as easily accessed from the city as is The Gap which may account for the lower number of suicides committed there. We have learned that North Head had an operating gay beat in the year that Scott died and surrounding years. The fact that Scott may have known about the beat or may have used it as a gay beat does not preclude that he chose that location to suicide. Indeed, his use of the gay beat on the 8 December 1988 may have been the catalyst for his suicide with similar emotional regret and health fears as was evoked in him a few years earlier when he contemplated suicide at the Golden Gate Bridge.

2891. The similarity in fatal height between the Golden Gate Bridge and the location of North Head is significant. There are many other methods of suicide inclusive of drugs (or poison in the case of Turing), stepping or driving in front of a moving object, hanging, and the use of a weapon.

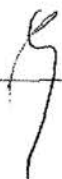
2892. Physical features of the site where Scott's clothes were found are more suggestive of seeking isolation rather than gay activity. It is outside the active gay beat area, and a person sitting or sunbaking there is difficult to see from the active gay beat area. For Scott to have found a partner he would have needed to walk, presumably naked, through coastal scrub from his location near the cliff to the active gay beat area a distance as-the-crow-flies of approximately fifty (50) metres. Even if that is the case, we know by the location of his body that Scott returned to the site where his clothes where prior to his death.

2893. [REDACTED]'s 2013 revisit to the prior gay beat area noted that there were previously smaller tracks off the main track in the active gay beat area. Detective Ludlow's evidence at the 1989 inquest is that there were no discernible tracks in the area were Scott's clothes were found.

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2894. The site where Scott's clothes were found consists of an exposed ledge which projects towards the sea and is among similar exposed rocks on that cliff edge, though it is noted that the rocks on either side do not project as far towards the sea. The exposed rock ledge is approximately 3.5 metres by 3.5 metres in a rough triangular shape with a noticeable slope to the north. The elevation in that area is just over sixty (60) metres.

2895. The fact that all of his clothes and common items of personal property, including his watch and \$10 in cash, were folded and neatly piled proximate to where his body was found at sea level below is also significant factor in considering if Scott suicided. To propose that a gay-hate offender did not see the pile of clothes or searched them and place them in order is rejected.

2896. Mr Butson saw a pen on top of the piled clothes and thought that a note placed with or under the pen may have blown away. Scott was known to regularly carry paper to write down his mathematical ruminations. The presence of a pen may indicate that he had also carried paper with him that was no longer present, perhaps blown away, by the time his property was discovered. This is relevant if considering that perhaps a suicide note had been written by him but that it had dislodged from his belongings in the storm conditions of the weekend. Research tells us however, that the majority of those who suicide do not leave suicide notes, even when they have close relationship ties.

2897. The absence of a suicide note at the scene of Scott's death does not allow a hypothesis of suicide to be rejected.

2898. Much has been made by the Johnson family in formal correspondence and the media about Scott's successful PhD studies and their incredulity that Scott would have suicided with this knowledge. For the record, at the time of his death Scott had not been told that he had achieved his doctorate, but rather, that he had successfully completed another challenging component of it. At its highest, Scott may have felt that he was over the worst of the PhD. I note that Scott, at 27 years old, had no clear idea as to how or what he was going to apply his academic achievement. Scott was not inclined towards the usual routes of

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

military or finance industries according to Mr Johnson. In concluding this area it is necessary to say that people with the appearance of 'success' also suicide.

2899. The Homicide Hypothesis

2900. It is my opinion that these investigations have identified the following matters relative to the hypothesis that Scott's death resulted from homicide;

2901. Doctor Cala's view when considering the position of the deceased's body is, "*I am of the opinion no conclusions can be drawn in relation to the circumstances of his death, based on his position in the photos...It would be unsafe to draw any conclusions he met with foul play based on his resting position at the bottom of the cliff...*".

2902. Witness statements together with police records of reported crimes support the existence of gay beat activity in Manly and environs. Searches of police records of that era have identified gay-hate or potentially gay-hate crimes at the public toilets in the Manly CBD namely the Tourist Information Centre at Manly Beach in the east, and the Manly Wharf in the west. There are two reports of stranger assaults that occurred at Fairy Bower apparently on the concrete pedestrian walkway from Manly Beach to Shelly Beach.

2903. One cannot enter the area where Scott's clothes were found from that area of Fairy Bower, however a pedestrian must pass through Fairy Bower to get to Shelly Beach which is at the southern foot of North Head and leads up to 'the hole in the wall'.

2904. The approximate distance from the Shelly Beach car park to 'the hole in the wall' is 230 metres uphill and as-the-crow-flies.

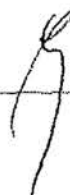
2905. The approximate distance from 'the hole in the wall' to the location of Scott's clothes is approximately 100 metres as-the-crow-flies.

2906. Moving away from Manly CBD, there are police records gay beat activity and gay-hate crime at public toilets in the vicinity of the Balgowlah Shopping Centre,

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

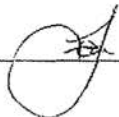
Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

which is also known as the Totem Shopping Centre¹⁰⁶ and the area of Reef Beach at neighbouring Balgowlah Heights.


2907. There are also incidents of gay-beat/gay-hate activity in other northern beaches suburbs with a concentration in the north around the Narrabeen Bus Terminus which includes a public toilet block.
2908. At the time of Scott's death, North Head was not known to police as being a gay beat. As is in the evidence of Detective Cruickshank at the 1989 Inquest, police identify the existence of a gay beat when they receive reports of a gay-linked crime. This is evidenced in other areas of Manly and Sydney in that era.
2909. With the exception of the offence by ██████ in 1986, no reports of gay-linked crime at North Head have been located. As recorded in detail earlier in this statement, the stabbing of ██████ by ██████ took place in February 1986. It was not a crime of gay-hate, even by Ms Thompson's definitions. There is nothing about that crime which would have assisted or influenced the police investigation into Scott's death in 1988 and nor does it today.
2910. Mr Glick's misrepresented to the police and media that the ██████ crime had occurred in the "exact same place" and "exact spot" respectively where Scott's clothes had been found. The closest disused bunkers to the site where Scott's clothes were found are approximately 350 metres to the south and inland as-the-crow-flies.
2911. No gay beat user or other victim has reported being verbally abused, harassed or intimidated at North Head in any regard, including the use of the words 'poofter', 'faggot', or similar.
2912. Police have not had cause to record intelligence relating to individuals or groups frequenting the North Head area with the intention of causing personal harm to any person in that area. There is evidence of frequent property crime, namely stealing from cars, in the area.

¹⁰⁶ Cruickshank

Witness:



Signature:


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2913. A female was murdered elsewhere in a drug related crime and buried at North Head in 2009 as referred to earlier in the person of interest [REDACTED] information.
2914. The deaths identified at North Head in the Bias Crime Unit report are not suspected of being the result of foul play.
2915. It has been suggested by the Johnson family and Ms Thompson that the reason for there being no reports is a direct result of (i) the homophobic culture of the community in that era (ii) the entrenched homophobic culture of the police in that era (iii) a conspiracy by police in that era and today to cover up any reports that were made (iv) the death of all victims from HIV/AIDS, and presumably all witnesses from age.
2916. In that era both predating and subsequent to the death of Scott, reports of crimes of personal violence were made by gay men and others who had been confronted at gay beats and public places in the Manly CBD public toilets, Balgowlah public toilets, Balgowlah Heights, Narrabeen public toilets, North Sydney, Marks Park Bondi, Moore Park, Centennial Park, Randwick, Alexandria, and the Oxford Street/Kings Cross areas. Reports by police of gay-hate or suspected gay-hate crimes were also picked up when victims sought medical treatment in hospital.
2917. There is nothing about North Head or the gay beat operating there that explains why a victim or witness who had been confronted at that location would not report the matter to police as opposed to another location. It is accepted that many, perhaps the majority, of gay victims or men engaging in gay activity chose not to report crimes of personal violence to the police, but this does not explain a total absence of reports. North Head even had a public hospital that was readily accessible to victims from the nearby gay beat. The attendance at Manly Hospital by [REDACTED] still with the knife in his back from being stabbed by [REDACTED] is a demonstration of this.
2918. Add to this the intensive and broad media campaign that has been ongoing from 2013 but that has resulted in no reports to police of any gay-hate or gay-

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

linked crime or incident at North Head or environs by victims, witnesses, or their families, friends or associates. Not one person, identified or anonymous, has come forward to a police officer, Gay and Lesbian Liaison police officer, Crime Stoppers, mainstream media, gay media, or gay representatives, such as [REDACTED]

2919. The Johnson family group have repeatedly told police and the media that they have received a very large number of contacts from victims and/or their families who report crimes of gay violence to them. The Johnson family have not provided to police a name or partial name of anyone who has reported a gay crime to them. The Johnson family have not provided to police the content, or part thereof, of any information received by them of any gay crime. Police have collected media initiated by the Johnson family in case their preference was to disclose any such information in the media in the first instance and none has been identified.

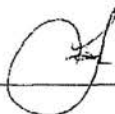
2920. Ms Thompson claims to have been "inundated" with contacts from gay men complaining of having been assaulted at gay beats over Sydney and presumably including North Head. She claims that gay men were comfortable to report matters to her rather than to the police. Ms Thompson has not provided the name of any person who contacted her, or the particulars of any complaint, to police either at the time she was employed by the NSWPF or since, including the actual time that she started making such a claim, being during the Johnson family media campaign in 2013, or when this investigation specifically invited her to provide information.

2921. Based on these realities, it is not unreasonable to draw an inference that no crimes of personal violence occurred at the North Head gay beat, and certainly none that required medical treatment.

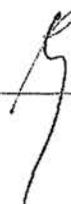
2922. Having stated that as a reasonable inference, we will now consider the information provided by [REDACTED].

2923. [REDACTED] says that his wife was moved by the sorry of Scott's death in the media last year and that this is his reason for contacting the Johnson family and

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

subsequently cooperating with the police. He has nominated [REDACTED], [REDACTED], and a school era friend, [REDACTED], as being co-offenders with him in committing assault and robbery offences at North Head in the 1980's. On its face this information may be a breakthrough for the investigation. This is the first and only direct evidence available to the investigation of actual violence being done to gay men at North Head. [REDACTED] is not merely naming others' for the crimes he thinks they have committed, rather he has told police formally that he was part of gay-hate crimes in the 1980's at North Head himself. In addition, we know from their criminal records that [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are responsible for gay-hate crimes in the Northern Beaches and North Sydney.

2924. Based on the information from [REDACTED] when considered at its highest, I consider the following matters should be considered as supporting the hypothesis that a member or members of the [REDACTED]-[REDACTED] group murdered Scott or committed a crime of violence against him that resulted in his death by falling.

2925. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] are convicted of prior gay-hate assault and robberies, two being at Reef Beach at Balgowlah Heights a neighbouring suburb of Manly.

2926. The [REDACTED]-[REDACTED] group had access to vehicles and were not reliant upon readily available public transport to commit offences.

2927. [REDACTED] says that he, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] assaulted and robbed men at North Head in the 1980's.

2928. They knew there was a gay beat at North Head and purposefully targeted gay men at North Head as was the characteristic of [REDACTED]'s and [REDACTED]'s North Sydney and Reef Beach crimes.

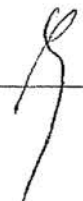
2929. That the gay victim was rendered unconscious or semi-conscious, which may limit the presence of defensive or other injuries on the victim.

2930. Based on the information from [REDACTED] when considered at its highest, I consider the following matters should be considered as not supporting the

Witness:



Signature:


P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

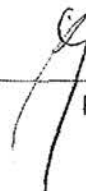
hypothesis that the [REDACTED] [REDACTED] group murdered Scott or committed a crime of violence against him that resulted in his death by falling.

2931. [REDACTED] provides equally strong recollections that the gay-hate offences at North Head were committed by his group in the years up to 1989, but also that the offences stopped when [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were charged with the Reef Beach and North Sydney offences, that being in January 1987.
2932. The [REDACTED] group operated at North Head at night, after 8pm and up until midnight. The presence of Scott's folded clothes and his nakedness suggests that Scott's attendance and activity at North Head was during the day.
2933. None of the victims were naked when assaulted or rendered naked during the assault. Scott was found naked.
2934. The [REDACTED] group always searched the victim and his clothing, and money and watches were taken. Scott's clothes were found neatly folded and piled with property, including \$10 cash and a watch, placed within the pile.
2935. An assault of Scott in the position where his clothes and body were found would have placed the lives of the offender or offenders at real risk due to the proximity to the cliff edge.
2936. Based on the information from [REDACTED], the following matters are relevant to the veracity of the [REDACTED]'s information as a whole.
2937. The number of victims assaulted by the [REDACTED] group at North Head varies significantly across interviews, from approximately twenty (20) to four (4).
2938. Every victim required only one hit to the head to render them unconscious.
2939. [REDACTED] is unable to provide any general or intimate detail of any aspect of a victim's description, other than being male and clothed. [REDACTED] is unable to provide any detail of actions, affects, reactions or feelings that he did or felt at the time of committing any assault. [REDACTED] is unable to provide any detail of actions, affects, reactions or feelings that he observed in any victim, other than that they were rendered unconscious by a punch from [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] and laid by

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

them onto the ground. In contrast [REDACTED] was able to remember a level of intimate detail of the non-gay hate assault he took part in on 12 February 1987.

2940. No words of abuse or insult were directed by [REDACTED], [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] to the gay victims at North Head. [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] were both charged in 1987 with gay-hate offences where the use of words designed to insult and humiliate their gay victims were used. The Bondi gay-hate offences, and any occurring in the various public places and toilets across Sydney, all indicate a strong and recurring presence of words by offenders such as 'poofter' and 'faggot'.

2941. Additional observations

2942. When asked of his motive for coming forward to the police, he uses words describing a level of remorse, but there is an absence of natural or spontaneous remorse or shame when he describes the crimes.

2943. I am not convinced that [REDACTED] comprehends that his own role in the assaults, which he described as the lure, make him both morally and legally as responsible for the commission of the crimes as that of [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. His distorted belief is first addressed by Detective Sergeant Brown during the North Head interview. I am convinced that he expected any investigation would only be directed at [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] because he had named them, more particularly [REDACTED], as the ones who had punched the victims.

2944. This may explain why [REDACTED] delivers the information to the police about his friends and their crimes with a laidback and intermittently boastful style.

2945. [REDACTED] has named [REDACTED], [REDACTED], as being the main aggressor and main organiser of the gay-hate assaults at North Head. This is at the same time as being able to maintain the appearance of a friendship with [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] has named [REDACTED], not because he knows that [REDACTED] murdered Scott or has a basis to suspect that [REDACTED] murdered someone who may have been Scott, but rather, [REDACTED] is named by [REDACTED] 'in case' he is responsible. A genuine friend perhaps would have encouraged [REDACTED] in good conscience to come forward to the

Witness:



Signature:



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

police. At the same time, [REDACTED], does not name himself 'in case' he himself is responsible, but rather sees himself, as stated, as helping the Johnson family by telling the police about what others' have done.

2946. In all the circumstances, [REDACTED]'s willingness to name [REDACTED] is perplexing and I am not convinced that he has fully disclosed his motive for doing this.

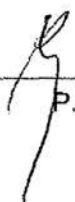
2947. [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]

2948. [REDACTED]'s inability to relate any intimate detail of a North Head crime, and the high improbability that violent crimes can be committed quickly during the day or at night, by running, and without incident to the offender on the uneven and treacherous surface of North Head, infer to me that [REDACTED] did not commit crimes of this type at North Head.

2949. If we believe that the [REDACTED] group did commit gay-hate offences at North Head, should that naturally infer that other groups also committed gay-hate offences at North Head and may be themselves be responsible for the death of Scott? There is no direct or indirect evidence that other individuals or groups frequented North Head to commit violent crimes, including gay-crimes.

2950. Despite how easily [REDACTED] suggests that assault and robberies were able to be committed by him and his group at North Head, the elevation, irregular and rutted terrain, and robust flora takes commitment from an offender. The cliff side is

Witness: 


Signature: 
P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

dangerous and potentially vertigo inducing. As a rule, offenders do not create physical discomfort or physical risk to themselves.

2951. Returning to the primary local events:
2952. In February 1986, [REDACTED] stabbed [REDACTED] after consensual gay sex in a disused military bunker at North Head. [REDACTED] was imprisoned until March 1989.
2953. In August 1986, [REDACTED] and his group committed a gay hate crime at the Totem Shopping Centre, Balgowlah;
2954. In September 1986, three unknown offenders are suspected of a gay-hate assault and robbery at the Totem Shopping Centre, Balgowlah and the offenders are not described;
2955. In November 1986, a single unknown offender assaulted a gay man on the footpath at Fairy Bower;
2956. In November 1986, the youth, [REDACTED], assaulted a man in Manly CBD toilets;
2957. In December 1986, two unknown men assaulted a man in Manly CBD toilets in December 1986;
2958. In December 1986, [REDACTED] and another youth assaulted a man in Manly CBD toilets;
2959. In December 1986, the two Reef Beach gay-hate offences were committed by [REDACTED], [REDACTED], [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and they were charged with these, North Sydney and Narrabeen offences on 1 January 1987.
2960. In January 1987, a intoxicated man was robbed of his wallet by five unknown youths in The Corso;
2961. In January 1987, a man was robbed of his backpack by two unknown offenders at the Manly Wharf;

Witness:



Signature:



P.S.Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

2962. In May 1987, a man was assaulted at Manly Wharf after leaving by three unknown men;
2963. Two unknown youths dressed as 'punks' called a man a "poofter" and assaulted him at the Totem Shopping Centre in January 1988;
2964. [REDACTED] (deceased on 12 August 1988) called a man a "poofter" and assaulted him in public toilets in Manly CBD in January 1988;
2965. Three or four unknown youths assaulted a man in Bower Lane, west Fairy Bower, in May 1988;
2966. A body was found floating at the southern end of Manly Beach in June 1989;
2967. An unknown man and a woman purporting to be police assaulted a man in Manly CBD toilets in June 1989;
2968. [REDACTED] called a man a "poofter" and assaulted him with three adult co-offenders at the Totem Shopping Centre in August 1989.
2969. All these reports of crimes of violence are of course distressing, but I note that unlike the concentration of gay-hate violence in Marks Park and immediate environs at Bondi, this list does not represent a concentration of crimes of violence, including gay-hate or gay-linked violence at North Head or its immediate environs.
2970. The characteristics of Scott's death cannot be matched to these offences or offenders.
2971. Hypothesis of Misadventure
2972. It is my opinion that these investigations have identified the following matters relative to the hypothesis that Scott's death resulted from misadventure.
2973. If Scott attended North Head for the purpose of naked sunbaking and, or, a spontaneous gay liaison, he chose a position for this purpose which was close to the cliff edge. There were other flat rocky outcrops in that area of North Head that would have served both practical purposes. If we rely upon the resting place of

Witness: _____



Signature: _____



P.S. Young

Statement of DCI Pamela Young
In the matter of Death of Scott Johnson

his clothing or the exposed surface of the rock that projects towards the sea, then that position is a few metres from a 60 metre drop onto rocks.

2974. Scott had taken off the runners and moved around in bare feet.


2975. There are no witnesses or evidence at the scene, or from the post mortem that assist us directly here. Misadventure has been recorded against a number of deaths at North Head according to the Bias Crime Unit assessment. We know from Mr Johnson that Scott was a confident mountain climber and I will presume on his behalf that Scott had superior skills than most recorded as dying as a result of an accidental fall.

2976. As recorded earlier, the particular exposed cliff ledge chosen by Scott is approximately 3.5 metres by 3.5 metres and of a rough triangular shape. The ledge slopes noticeably down to the north. It is not impossible that Scott's death was from an accidental fall from this location. There was no natural or man-made barrier that would have prevented him rolling accidentally from the northern side of the rock ledge.

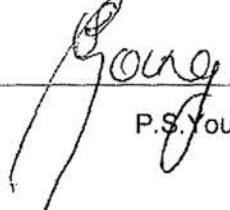
2977. Scott may have awoken from sleep near the edge, drowsy and/or at twilight, and in this disoriented state, he fell 60 metres to the rock below. The fact that Scott's body appears to be faintly south of the rock ledge may be explained by Dr Cala's explanation that Scott's body appears to have hit surface, "strike points", and altered direction, speed and position, as it descended to its final resting place.

2978. This concludes the information and evidence that is available to date.

Witness:


P.M. BROWN
13/7/14

Signature:


P.S. Young 13/7/14.

Witness: _____

Signature: _____

P.S. Young